

GRAMMAR
OF THE
FRENCH TONGUE,

GROUNDLED UPON THE
DECISIONS of the FRENCH ACADEMY,
WHEREIN ALL THE
Necessary RULES, OBSERVATIONS, and EXAMPLES

ARE
EXHIBITED in a MANNER intirely NEW.

By *Jean (Baptiste)*
~~JOHN~~ PERRIN.

Necessaria pueris, jucunda senibus. QUINTIL.

The SECOND EDITION.



✓ L O N D O N,

Printed for B. LAW, No. 13, in AVE-MARY-LANE,
LUDGATE-STREET.

M. DCC. LXIX.

E due T 21517. 69. 12

~~6253.29~~

~~Schmitt~~

~~1167.69.5~~

1858, Mar. 22.

Gift of

Mrs. Y. Welles
of Boston.

MILORD LYTTELTON.

MONSEIGNEUR,

EN dédiant cet ouvrage à VOTRE GRANDEUR, je ne débiterai pas par le panégyrique de la noblesse de votre naissance & de votre rang : la flatterie ayant épuisé toutes les nouvelles manières de louer les Grands, la seule qui me reste pour célébrer vos qualités personnelles c'est d'oser les passer sous silence.

Je laisse à votre Patrie la gloire d'applaudir l'homme d'Etat, le Conseiller privé de sa Majesté, l'ornement de la Société Royale, le Lord qui s'occupe à l'enrichir de monumens plus durables que le marbre. Qu'il me soit permis d'admirer l'Historien, l'Auteur, l'Homme de Lettres. Oui, MONSEIGNEUR, l'Angleterre vous doit les recherches historiques les plus curieuses & les plus exactes. La force & la richesse de la langue Angloise paroissent dans tous vos écrits : Vous faites plus, MONSEIGNEUR, vous l'embellissez.

Exdust 21517. 69. 12
6252. 29
Exdust
1167. 69. 3

1858, Mar. 22.
Gift of
Mrs. J. Welles
of Boston.

MILORD LYTTTELTON.

MONSEIGNEUR,

EN dédiant cet ouvrage à VOTRE GRANDEUR, je ne débiterai pas par le panégyrique de la noblesse de votre naissance & de votre rang : la flatterie ayant épuisé toutes les nouvelles manières de louer les Grands, la seule qui me reste pour célébrer vos qualités personnelles c'est d'oser les passer sous silence.

Je laisse à votre Patrie la gloire d'applaudir l'homme d'Etat, le Conseiller privé de sa Majesté, l'ornement de la Société Royale, le Lord qui s'occupe à l'enrichir de monumens plus durables que le marbre. Qu'il me soit permis d'admirer l'Historien, l'Auteur, l'Homme de Lettres. Oui, MONSEIGNEUR, l'Angleterre vous doit les recherches historiques les plus curieuses & les plus exactes. La force & la richesse de la langue Angloise paroissent dans tous vos écrits : Vous faites plus, MONSEIGNEUR, vous l'embellissez.

iv D E D I C A T I O N.

Tous les talens littéraires sont rehaussés en VOTRE GRANDEUR par la protection qu'elle accorde aux sciences & aux arts. Le plus grand plaisir pour l'homme de Lettres, c'est d'encourager tout ce qui peut contribuer à la littérature ; c'est le caractère distinctif du grand-homme, c'est le vôtre, MONSEIGNEUR, qui ne recherchez pas les louanges, & qui faites tout ce qu'il faut pour les mériter.

IL ne m'auroit donc pas été facile de trouver un autre Mécène aussi célèbre par la supériorité reconnue de son esprit, pour lui présenter cet ouvrage, comme à un juge éclairé & judicieux qui connoît toutes les beautés réelles de la langue Françoisé, & dont l'approbation entraîne naturellement celle du Public : mon ambition sera toujours de mériter la vôtre, & d'être avec le plus profond respect,

MONSEIGNEUR,

DE VOTRE GRANDEUR,

Le très-humble & très-obéissant serviteur,

P E R R I N.

PREFACE.

P R E F A C E.

AS Grammar, in general, the foundation of the arts and sciences, and a key to the learned and other languages, is universally allowed to be an object of extensive utility ; so French Grammars, in particular, are justly esteemed as useful productions : some of which were written by very learned men ; and one of them, an excellent performance, was the first work of the FRENCH ACADEMY, who have spared no pains to polish and improve their native language, and advance it, as far as possible, to a state of purity and perfection.

I am not insensible that several authors consider it, as an essential part of the prefaces to their respective works, partially to represent their own performances in the brightest colours, and treat those of others with the greatest severity ; but I rather chuse to give, on this occasion, a short analytical account of the present undertaking, and then humbly submit the whole to the candid and impartial opinion of the public.

Having divided my Grammar into four parts, after a few preliminary observations, I begin the first with the French simple sounds in nine figures, to which are subjoined all the sounds of the consonants ; and I am fully convinced, that any pupil will, with more ease and expedition, acquire the genuine French accent by repeating those invariable sounds, with a good master's assistance, than by the tiresome rules of pronunciation, which, being grounded on nothing but arbitrary custom, are liable to all its changes and alterations.

The sounds of the French language are followed by an alphabetical list of many French adjectives, each agreeing in gender and number with a different substantive to make them understood. Another collection of

vi P R E F A C E.

adjectives, with the manner of their being placed before or after their substantives, and their signification in either case, is likewise exhibited, which cannot fail of contributing to the scholar's improvement.

After a brief explanation of the notes, points, and accents made use of in writing French, I add several useful observations on conversing and writing letters in that language; and then, after a concise and yet comprehensive vocabulary, with familiar and easy dialogues, I conclude the first part of the present undertaking.

I begin the second part of my Grammar with a short analysis of the parts of speech, which will enable the pupil to form an idea of the nature and constitution of the Grammars of other languages, as well as that of the French tongue; and the two tables, shewing the formation of the feminine gender of adjectives according to their termination, and that of the plural number of nouns, are set in a new light, and adapted to the meanest capacities.

As the verb is a principal part of speech, it should always be considered as a primary object in all grammatical productions; and yet all Grammars are defective on this subject, though, confessedly, very delicate and curious, as well as of the utmost importance. In order to do it all the justice in my power, I have, both in French and English, fully conjugated six regular verbs, and all those that are irregular, in an alphabetical manner; followed by particular observations upon some verbs chiefly defective, and their manner of being conjugated and used.

The third part of my Grammar contains the theory and practice of the French language; the former of which comprehends the rules of syntax, with many entirely new observations, illustrated by proper examples; and the latter is a separate and distinct exemplification of the rules and observations after each part of speech for the scholar's improvement.

Precepts

P R E F A C E. vii

Precepts and practice, rules and examples, must go hand in hand together, being both equally necessary to attain a thorough knowledge of any tongue whatsoever; and, as to French in particular, the only way to learn it to any valuable purpose is, first of all, to lay a good foundation by becoming well acquainted with it's rules, and then to read proper books, or converse with those who speak it in it's purity; but neither reading nor conversation will ever enable him to speak or write it with propriety and elegance, if he be wholly unacquainted with it's fundamental principles. However, if any of my readers should be of opinion, that practice alone will serve their turn, they may have recourse to my observations exemplified, which are nothing else but the practice of the French language.

In the fourth part are exhibited the practical irregularities of the French tongue, alphabetically disposed, with the choice of words and phrases, warranted by the most approved authors, and especially by the decisions of the FRENCH ACADEMY. It is intirely needless to point out the great usefulness of these important articles to those who have made a considerable progress in the language, since they manifestly contain the most elegant and curious of all the French idioms, and some of the rest are interspersed among the rules and observations exemplified in the third part of this work; and, to render the whole of the present undertaking the more beneficial, I have, in every part thereof, and particularly in the conjugation of the verbs, not only in the orthography, but in other respects, had a due regard to the said ACADEMY's regulations.

Thus have I given a short analytical account of my grammatical performance, from whence it evidently appears, that it is far from being an easy task. A Grammar, for the use of schools, consists of such a variety of parts, and some of them so minute and intricate, that it is a very difficult matter to render it,

viii P R E F A C E.

at once, concise and comprehensive, and adapt it to the meanest capacities. The subject thereof is, indeed, low and vulgar ; but *Virgil* observes, that there is *in tenui labor* ; that such subjects require pains and application. *Quintilian* also assures us, that such works *plus habent operis quam ostentationis* ; that they are not so much shining, as they are laborious productions.

General utility was the object I principally regarded, in the execution of my design. I have omitted no necessary rules and observations, and those that I have inserted are just, and illustrated by proper examples ; whilst, at the same time, I have, all along, had brevity in my view, as far as it could be pursued, without obscurity and confusion. But, though I have taken all the care in my power to render the following sheets correct as well as useful, I make no doubt, that unavoidable errors have escaped my utmost attention ; for my own experience confirms the truth of what *Mr. Pope* asserts in the following words :

“ Whoever thinks a faultless piece to see,
“ Thinks what ne’er was, nor is, nor e’er shall be.”

However, if, upon a candid and impartial examination, the present should be found to be, in the main, a well-conducted undertaking, I am not without hopes, that my involuntary errors will be favoured with the reader’s indulgence ; which *Horace* represents as a reasonable practice in these lines :

*Verum ubi plura nitent —, non ego paucis
Offendar maculis, quas aut incuria fudit,
Aut humana parum cavit natura.*

T H E C O N T E N T S.

	Page
P RELIMINARY Observations.	1
P A R T I.	
C H A P. I.	
<i>O</i> F Pronunciation.	3
C H A P. II.	
<i>The Sounds of the Consonants</i>	4
C H A P. III.	
<i>An alphabetical List of many of the French Adjectives, each agreeing in Gender and Number with a different Substantive, to make them understood.</i>	6
C H A P. IV.	
<i>A List of Adjectives, with the Manner of their being placed before or after their Substantives, and their Signification in either Case.</i>	25
C H A P. V.	
<i>Of the Notes and Points made Use of in writing French.</i>	28
C H A P. VI.	
<i>Of Accents made Use of in writing French.</i>	30
C H A P. VII.	
<i>Observations on Conversing in French.</i>	32
C H A P. VIII.	
<i>Observations on writing French Letters.</i>	ibid.
SECT. I. <i>For the Beginning.</i>	33
SECT. II. <i>For the Middle.</i>	ibid.
SECT. III. <i>For the End.</i>	34
<i>A Vocabulary, French and English.</i>	36
<i>Familiar and easy Dialogues for young Beginners.</i>	45
P A R T	

THE CONTENTS.

P A R T II.

	Page
C H A P. I.	
<i>A SHORT Analysis of the Parts of Speech,</i> —	39
C H A P. II.	
<i>Of Genders.</i> — —	64
C H A P. III.	
<i>Of the Formation of the Feminine Gender of Adjectives.</i>	67
C H A P. IV.	
<i>Of the Formation of the Plural of Nouns.</i> —	68
C H A P. V.	
<i>The Declension of Nouns.</i> — —	69
C H A P. VI.	
<i>Of Pronouns.</i> — — —	73
SECT. I. <i>Of Personal Pronouns.</i> — —	ibid.
SECT. II. <i>Of Possessive Pronouns.</i> —	76
SECT. III. <i>Of Demonstrative Pronouns.</i> —	ibid.
SECT. IV. <i>Of Relative Pronouns.</i> —	77
SECT. V. <i>Of Interrogative Pronouns.</i> —	78
SECT. VI. <i>Of Indefinite Pronouns.</i> —	ibid.
C H A P. VII.	
<i>Of Verbs.</i> — — —	80
<i>Preliminary Observations.</i> — —	80
<i>Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs.</i> —	81
<i>Conjugation of Regular Verbs.</i> —	84
<i>Conjugation of the Irregular Verbs, alphabetically.</i> —	94
<i>Particular Observations upon some Verbs chiefly defective, and their Manner of being conjugated and used, in an alphabetical Order.</i> — —	158

P A R T III.

<i>THE Theory joined to Practice.</i> — —	163
C H A P. I.	
<i>Rules and Observations upon Articles.</i> —	163
<i>Rules and Observations upon Articles exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i> —	167
	Rules

THE CONTENTS. xi

Page

CHAP. II.

<i>Rules and Observations upon Nouns.</i>	175
<i>Rules and Observations upon Nouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	177

CHAP. III.

<i>Rules and Observations upon Pronouns.</i>	182
SECT. I. <i>Personal Pronouns.</i>	ibid.
<i>Personal Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	188
SECT. II. <i>Possessive Pronouns.</i>	192
<i>Possessive Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	194
SECT. III. <i>Demonstrative Pronouns.</i>	198
<i>Demonstrative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	200
SECT. IV. <i>Relative Pronouns.</i>	203
<i>Relative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	205
SECT. V. <i>Interrogative Pronouns.</i>	208
<i>Interrogative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	ibid.
SECT. VI. <i>Indefinite or Indeterminate Pronouns.</i>	210
<i>Indeterminate Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	216
SECT. VII. <i>The Supplying Pronouns le, en, y.</i>	225
<i>Supplying Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	226

CHAP. IV.

<i>Rules and Observations upon the Degrees of Comparison.</i>	229
<i>The Degrees of Comparison exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	233

CHAP. V.

<i>Rules and Observations upon Verbs.</i>	238
SECT. I. <i>The Use of Tenses.</i>	240
<i>The Tenses of Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	242
SECT. II. <i>The Use of the Subjunctive Mood.</i>	246
<i>The Subjunctive Mood exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	250

SECT.

xii THE CONTENTS.

SECT. III. <i>The Government of Verbs.</i>	Page
<i>Government of Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	256 259

CHAP. VI.

Rules and Observations upon impersonal Verbs.	266
Rules and Observations upon impersonal Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.	268

CHAP. VII.

Rules and Observations upon the Participle.	272
SECT. I. <i>The active or present Participle.</i>	ibid.
SECT. II. <i>The Participle passive or past.</i>	273
<i>Rules and Observations upon Participles exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.</i>	277

CHAP. VIII.

Rules and Observations upon Ad-verbs.	282
Rules and Observations upon Ad-verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.	284

CHAP. IX.

Rules and Observations upon Prepositions.	292
Remarks upon some Prepositions.	294
Further Remarks upon the Prepositions à and de.	298
Rules and Observations upon Prepositions exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.	299

CHAP. X.

Observations upon the Conjunctions si and que.	309
The Conjunction que exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.	311

PART IV.

PRACTICAL Irregularities of the French Tongue alphabetically disposed, with the Choice of Words and Phrases warranted by the most approved Authors, and especially by the Decisions of the FRENCH ACADEMY.	315
--	-----



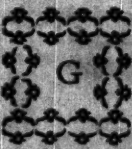
A

GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH TONGUE.

Preliminary Observations.

RAMMAR is a collection of observations to which the manner of speaking or writing, used in a language, may be reduced.

This definition explains the nature of Grammar in general, and agrees both with the dead and living languages. However, to have a clear and exact idea of the FRENCH GRAMMAR, we may define it in the following manner:

The FRENCH GRAMMAR is a collection of observations drawn from approved custom, to which the manner of speaking or writing French may be reduced.

First, *The French Grammar is a collection of observations, established only by accident or fancy, independent of reason, like fashion in dress.* For a language is nothing else than the manner wherein a certain number of men have insensibly agreed to express their thoughts to each other.

Secondly, *Drawn from approved custom, which is the actual manner of speaking or writing used by the greatest part of persons eminent for wit and learning.*

Thirdly, *To these observations the manner of speaking or writing French may be reduced; for, as we convey our ideas not only by speech, but likewise by writing, so the manner of speaking, or writing French, is to be reduced to observations drawn from approved custom.*

PRONUNCIATION is the manner of expressing by speech the several sounds of a language agreeably to the most approved custom.

T H E A L P H A B E T.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, (J,) K, L,
M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U. (V,) X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, (j,) k, l, m, n,
o, p, q, r, s, t, u, (v,) x, y, z.

The V O W E L S.

A, e, i, o, u, y.

The C O N S O N A N T S.

B, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s,
t, v, x, z.

The above characters may be pronounced
according to the English way of spelling.

aw, ba, ca, da, a, f, ga, awsh, e, kaw, l, m, n,
o, pa, qu, r, s, ta, u, ex, egreck, z.

The FRENCH ACADEMY pronounce them
thus :

a, b, c, d, e, fe, g, he, i, je, ke, le, me, ne,
o, pe, q, re, se, te, u, ve, xe, y, ze.

P A R T I.

P A R T I.

CHAPTER I.

Of Pronunciation.

IN order to give a just and exact idea of the pronunciation of a language, it is principally necessary to distinguish, as exactly as possible, all the different sounds used in it's pronunciation, without any regard to the letters made use of to express those sounds; because a language, as FRENCH, ENGLISH, &c. may express different sounds by the same characters, and the same sounds by different characters.

The French simple Sounds in Nine Figures.

	English words wherein the sounds are found.
(1) a, an	what, anguish.
(2) e,	answer, ale.
(3) é	edict.
(4) è or ê, en	ebb, when through the nose as if a g was after it.
(5) i, in	he, when, as above,
(6) o, on	no, tongue.
(7) u	curate, curiosity.
(8) eu, un	this sound is quite wanting in English.
(9) ou	to do.

I am very sensible that the conformity of sounds, in every English word, does not fully answer to the nicety of the French pronunciation, it being impossible to find such English words as have strictly the same sound as in French; it may, however, be sufficient for our purpose to have shewn, as exactly as possible, the affinity of the French and English sounds.

These simple sounds include the true French pronunciation. There is no child but will easily, and in a short time, get it, if the master takes care to make him pronounce these simple sounds properly, and join the consonants to them; wherein consists the whole and the only art of reading French.

The compound sounds will easily be formed by this practice ; as,

From the ninth and first sounds, we have those of *moi*, *I*, or *me*, *foi*, *faith* * ; by adding an *r*, *noir* *black* ; *boire*, *to drink*.

From the ninth and fourth or fifth, those of *foin*, *hay* ; *moins*, *less* ; *point*, *not at all*.

From the sixth and *r*, or, *gold* ; *fort*, *strong* ; *bord*, *brim* ; *port*, *harbour*.

From the ninth and *r*, *court*, *short* ; *cour*, *a yard*.

From the eighth and *r*, *fleur*, *flower* ; *beurre*, *butter*.

From the eighth and liquid *l*, *deuil*, *a mourning* ; *feuille*, *a leaf*.

From the fourth and liquid *l*, *soleil*, *the sun* ; *pareil*, *like*.

From the first and liquid *l*, *mail*, *a mall* ; *éventail*, *a fan*.

The same may be said of all other combinations.

N. B. At all times, when a consonant follows the simple sound, the compound is stronger and more open : as, *fleur*, *beurre*, or, *port*, &c.

* On such-like occasions the ninth and first are sounded so quickly, that it is not easy to distinguish them from the sixth and fourth sounds.

C H A P. II.

The Sounds of the Consonants.

Sounds.

B. has
C.

Ch,

D,

2 **b**, bouquet, *a nosegay*.

p, absolu, *absolute*.

3 **k**, coffre, *a trunk*.

f, cierge, *a wax-candle*.

g, second, *second*.

2 **sh**, (English) chocolat, *chocolate*.

k, écho, *echo*.

2 **d**, donner, *to give*.

t, que vend-il ? *what does he sell?*

F,

Sounds.

this	F,	2 f, <i>vif, quick.</i>
moi,	G,	v, <i>neuf hommes, nine men.</i>
boire,		3 g, <i>gaſon, turf.</i>
bay ;	H, aspirated,	j, <i>géant, a giant.</i>
brim ;	not aspirated,	k, <i>Sarug, a proper name.</i>
		héros, <i>an hero.</i>
		héroïne, <i>an heroical wo-</i>
		man.
	L, liquid,	filie, <i>a girl.</i>
	not liquid,	fil, <i>thread.</i>
	M,	2 m, <i>mon, my.</i>
		n, <i>nom, a name.</i>
	N, nasal,	chien, <i>a dog.</i>
	not nasal,	bien aife, <i>very glad.</i>
	P,	1 précepteur, <i>a preceptor.</i>
	Q, is always followed by	1
	u, in the beginning of	
	words, and ſounded like	k, <i>quatre, four.</i>
	R,	1 miroir, <i>a looking-glaſs.</i>
	S,	2 ſ, <i>ſage, wiſe.</i>
		z, <i>roſe, a roſe.</i>
	T,	2 t, <i>amitié, friendſhip.</i>
		ſ, <i>patience, patience.</i>
	V,	1 vertu, <i>virtue.</i>
	X,	4 ks, <i>ſexe, ſex.</i>
		gz, <i>exemple, an example.</i>
		ſſ, <i>ſoixante, ſixty.</i>
		z, <i>dixième, the tenth, or</i>
		dix, <i>ten, followed by a</i>
		vowel.

All theſe ſounds are exemplified by ſome more words ranged in their reſpective claſſes, in my PRACTICE, OF THE FRENCH PRONUNCIATION ALPHABETICALLY EXHIBITED, where you may find words wherein ſuch letters are either pronounced or not.

C H A P. III.

An Alphabetical List of many of the French Adjectives, each agreeing in Gender and Number with a different Substantive, to make them understood.

Oss. Those Adjectives marked thus + go generally before their Substantives.

A.

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
A BBATIALE,	F	maison, <i>an abbot's house.</i>
abjecte,	F	condition, <i>an abject condition.</i>
abominable,	M	crime, <i>an abominable crime.</i>
absterfis,	M	remède, <i>a cleansing remedy.</i>
abusive,	F	coutume, <i>an abusive custom.</i>
académique,	M	exercice, <i>an academical exercise.</i>
acariâtre,	F	humeur, <i>a humourous temper.</i>
admirable,	F	invention, <i>a wonderful invention.</i>
admiratif,	M	point, <i>a note of admiration.</i>
adorable,	F	beauté, <i>an adorable beauty.</i>
adverse,	F	partie, <i>an adverse party.</i>
affable,	F	demoiselle, <i>an affable lady.</i>
affairé,	M	homme, <i>a busy man.</i>
affétées,	F	manières, <i>affected manners.</i>
affirmatif,	M	ton, <i>an affirmative tune.</i>
âgée,	F	veuve, <i>an elderly widow.</i>
agréable,	F	surprise, <i>an agreeable surprise.</i>
agreste,	M	fruit, <i>wild fruit.</i>
aigrette,	F	sauce, <i>a sourish sauce.</i>
aimable,	F	filie, <i>a lovely girl.</i>
aisé,	M	ouvrage, <i>an easy work.</i>
Alexandrin,	M	vers, <i>a French verse of twelve measures or feet.</i>
alimentaire,	F	pension, <i>an alimony.</i>
alizés,	M	vents, <i>trade winds.</i>
allodiales,	F	terres, <i>free lands.</i>

alphabétique.

A Grammar of the French Tongue.

7

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
alphabétique,	F	liste, <i>an alphabetical list.</i>
altier,	M	homme, <i>a proud man.</i>
alumineuse,	F	eau, <i>alum water.</i>
ambiguë,	F	parole, <i>an ambiguous word.</i>
ambitieux,	M	projet, <i>an ambitious project.</i>
amère,	F	boisson, <i>a bitter drink.</i>
amortissable,	F	rente, <i>a redeemable rent.</i>
amoureuse,	F	filles, <i>an amorous girl.</i>
amphibologique,	F	expression, <i>an ambiguous expression.</i>
anagogique,	M	traité, <i>a mystical treatise.</i>
anarchique,	M	état, <i>an anarchic state.</i>
anatomique,	F	dissection, <i>an anatomical dissection.</i>
+ ancien,	M	ami, <i>an ancient friend.</i>
angleuse,	F	noix, <i>a thick-shelled walnut.</i>
Anglicane,	F	église, <i>the church of England.</i>
animales,	F	facultés, <i>the sensitive faculties.</i>
annuelle,	F	pension, <i>a yearly pension.</i>
anodins,	M	remèdes, <i>anodyne remedies.</i>
anonime,	M	livre, <i>an anonymous book.</i>
anséatique,	F	ville, <i>a hanse-town.</i>
antique,	M	château, <i>an antique castle.</i>
appétissante,	F	viande, <i>relishing meat.</i>
âpre,	M	fruit, <i>harsh fruit.</i>
aquilin,	M	nez, <i>a hawked nose.</i>
arbitraire,	M	pouvoir, <i>an arbitrary power.</i>
argentine,	F	voix, <i>a clear voice.</i>
ardent,	M	charbon, <i>a burning coal.</i>
argilleuse,	F	terre, <i>clayey ground.</i>
aromatique,	F	herbe, <i>an aromatic herb.</i>
arzel,	M	cheval, <i>a horse that has a white spot on the hind foot of the right side.</i>
atrabilaire,	M	tempérament, <i>an atrabilary temper.</i>
artificieux,	M	détour, <i>an artful evasion.</i>
Attique,	M	sel, <i>polite, genteel raillery.</i>
avantageux,	M	poste, <i>an advantageous post.</i>
aveugle,	M	cheval, <i>a blind horse.</i>
auriculaire,	M	témoin, <i>an ear-witness.</i>
austère,	F	mine, <i>an austere mien.</i>
authentique,	F	loi, <i>an authentic law.</i>

3 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
auxiliaire,	M	verbe, <i>an helping verb.</i>
azime,	M	pain, <i>unleavened bread.</i>
B.		
Bachique,	F	chanson, <i>a drinking catch.</i>
badine,	F	humeur, <i>a wanton humour.</i>
bai,	M	cheval, <i>a bay horse.</i>
balsan,	M	cheval, <i>a bay horse with a white spot on one, two, or three of his legs.</i>
barbare,	F	action, <i>a barbarous action.</i>
basse,	F	chambre, <i>a ground room.</i>
+ beau,	M	tapis, <i>a fine carpet.</i>
belliqueuse,	F	nation, <i>a warlike nation.</i>
bienfaisante,	F	parole, <i>a decent word.</i>
bilieux,	M	tempérament, <i>a bilious temper.</i>
bissextile,	F	année, <i>the leap-year.</i>
bitumineuse,	F	matière, <i>bituminous matter.</i>
bizarre,	M	esprit, <i>a whimsical mind.</i>
blanche,	F	chemise, <i>a clean shirt.</i>
bleu,	M	ruban, <i>a blue ribband.</i>
blonds,	M	cheveux, <i>fair hair.</i>
boiteux,	M	cheval, <i>a lame horse.</i>
+ bon,	M	vin, <i>good wine.</i>
borgne,	F	femme, <i>an one-eyed woman.</i>
botanique,	M	jardin, <i>a botanical garden.</i>
bourbeux,	M	passage, <i>a muddy passage.</i>
bourru,	M	air, <i>a cross air.</i>
brave,	M	soldat, <i>a brave soldier.</i>
brute,	F	pierre, <i>an unheaved stone.</i>
bruyante,	F	compagnie, <i>a bustling company.</i>
bucoliques,	M	vers, <i>pastoral verses.</i>
burlesque,	F	poésie, <i>burlesk poetry.</i>

C. Calamiteux,

Adjectives.	C. Gender of	Substantives.
Calamiteux,	M	temps, <i>a calamitous time.</i>
calleuse,	F	peau, <i>a callous skin.</i>
calomnieux,	M	rapport, <i>a slanderous report.</i>
camphré,	M	vin, <i>camphorated wine.</i>
candi,	M	sucre, <i>sugar-candy.</i>
capable,	M	maître, <i>an able master.</i>
capricieuse,	F	femme, <i>a capricious woman.</i>
captieux,	M	discours, <i>a captious discourse.</i>
casuelle,	F	entreprise, <i>a casual undertaking.</i>
catégorique,	F	réponse, <i>a categorical answer.</i>
catholique,	F	église, <i>the catholic church.</i>
cavalières,	F	manières, <i>blunt manners.</i>
caverneuse,	F	montagne, <i>a hollow mountain.</i>
cauteleux,	M	juge, <i>a sly judge.</i>
caustique,	F	emplâtre, <i>a burning plaster.</i>
célèbre,	M	auteur, <i>a famous author.</i>
céleste,	M	bleu, <i>sky colour.</i>
cérémonieuses,	M	façons, <i>ceremonious manners.</i>
charitable,	M	ministre, <i>a charitable minister.</i>
chatouilleux,	M	homme, <i>a ticklish man.</i>
chaude,	F	main, <i>a warm hand.</i>
+ chère,	F	sœur, <i>dear sister.</i>
cher,	M	chapeau, <i>a dear hat.</i>
chimérique,	M	projet, <i>a chimerical project.</i>
chirurgique,	F	opération, <i>a chirurgicall operation.</i>
circonspécte,	F	conduite, <i>a wary behaviour.</i>
circulaire,	F	lettre, <i>a circular letter.</i>
clair,	M	jour, <i>a clear day.</i>
colossale,	F	statue, <i>a colossian statue.</i>
combustible,	F	matière, <i>combustible matter.</i>
comminatoire,	F	lettre, <i>a threatening letter.</i>
commun,	M	prix, <i>a common price.</i>
compacte,	M	corps, <i>a compact body.</i>
complet,	M	traité, <i>a complete treatise.</i>
confuse,	F	idée, <i>a confused idea.</i>
conjecturale,	F	connoissance, <i>a conjectural know- ledge.</i>
conjugale,	F	fidélité, <i>conjugal fidelity.</i>
conscientieux,	M	négociant, <i>a conscientious merchant.</i>
	B 5	considérable,

10 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
confidérable,	M	bien, <i>a considerable estate.</i>
constant,	M	ami, <i>a constant friend.</i>
contagieuse,	F	maladie, <i>a contagious sickness.</i>
content,	M	argent, <i>ready money.</i>
continuel,	M	bruit, <i>a continual noise.</i>
contraire,	F	réfolution, <i>a contrary resolution.</i>
contradictoire,	F	nouvelle, <i>contradictory news.</i>
convenable,	M	logement, <i>a convenient lodging.</i>
cordiale,	F	liqueur, <i>a cordial liquor.</i>
corporelle,	F	punition, <i>a corporal punishment.</i>
correct,	M	ouvrage, <i>a correct work.</i>
courte,	F	juppe, <i>a short petticoat.</i>
cruel,	M	tourment, <i>cruel torment.</i>
curable,	F	maladie, <i>a curable sickness.</i>
curieux,	M	tableau, <i>a curious picture.</i>

D.

Dangereux,	M	passage, <i>a dangerous passage.</i>
décent,	M	habillement, <i>a decent dress.</i>
décifive,	F	sentence, <i>a decisive sentence.</i>
délicate,	F	viande, <i>dainty meat.</i>
délicieuse,	F	poire, <i>a delicious pear.</i>
démonftrative,	F	preuve, <i>a demonstrative proof.</i>
déraifonnable,	F	demande, <i>an unreasonable petition.</i>
+ dernière,	F	place, <i>the last place.</i>
défagréable,	F	converfation, <i>an unpleasant converfation.</i>
défaftreux,	M	jour, <i>an ill-fated day.</i>
défavantageufe,	F	situation, <i>a disadvantageous situation.</i>
deshonête,	F	parole, <i>a dishonest word.</i>
défirable,	M	bien, <i>a defirable blessing.</i>
defpotique,	M	pouvoir, <i>defpotical power.</i>
dévote,	F	femme, <i>a devout woman.</i>
diaphane,	M	corps, <i>a transparent body.</i>
diffamatoire,	M	libelle, <i>a defumatory libel.</i>
difficile,	F	langue, <i>a difficult tongue.</i>
+ digne,	M	magiftrat, <i>a worthy magiftrate.</i>
diligent,	M	écolier, <i>a diligent fcholar.</i>

difcret,

A Grammar of the French Tongue.

11

Adjectives.

Gender

Substantives.

	of	
discret,	M	ami, <i>a discreet friend.</i>
disgracieux,	M	état, <i>a disagreeable situation.</i>
dispendieuse,	F	guerre, <i>an expensive war.</i>
distinctive,	F	marque, <i>a distinctive mark.</i>
docte,	M	professeur, <i>a learned professor.</i>
domatique,	M	stile, <i>a dogmatical style.</i>
dominicale,	F	oraison, <i>the Lord's prayer.</i>
douloureuse,	F	condition, <i>a grievous condition.</i>
doux,	M	thé, <i>sweet tea.</i>
droite,	F	main, <i>the right hand.</i>
dure,	F	pierre, <i>a hard stone.</i>
durable,	F	prosperité, <i>lasting prosperity.</i>

E.

Ecclésiastique,	F	dignité, <i>an ecclesiastical dignity.</i>
économe,	M	mari, <i>a saving husband.</i>
écouteux,	M	cheval, <i>a skittish horse.</i>
effectif,	M	héritage, <i>a real estate.</i>
efficace,	M	moyen, <i>efficacious means.</i>
efficiente,	F	cause, <i>an efficient cause.</i>
effroyable,	M	incendie, <i>a frightful conflagration.</i>
élastique,	M	corps, <i>an elastic body.</i>
élégant,	M	compliment, <i>an elegant compliment.</i>
emblématique,	F	figure, <i>an emblematical figure.</i>
émollient,	M	remède, <i>a softening remedy.</i>
emphytéotique,	F	redevance, <i>a ground-rent.</i>
empirique,	M	médecin, <i>a quack.</i>
énergique,	F	demande, <i>an energic petition.</i>
enfantin,	M	discours, <i>a childish discourse.</i>
énigmatique,	F	proposition, <i>an enigmatical proposition.</i>
entière,	F	semaine, <i>a whole week.</i>
envieux,	M	artisan, <i>an envious tradesman.</i>
épais,	M	nuage, <i>a thick cloud.</i>
épidémique,	F	maladie, <i>an epidemical distemper.</i>
épineux,	M	procès, <i>a crabbed law-suit.</i>
épiscopal,	M	palais, <i>a bishop's palace.</i>
épique,	M	poème, <i>an epic poem.</i>
épistolaire,	M	stile, <i>an epistolary style.</i>

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
érotiques,	M écrits,	<i>romances, love-stories.</i>
erratiques,	M feux,	<i>wild fires.</i>
exclusif,	M droit,	<i>an exclusive right.</i>
expéditif,	M commis,	<i>an expeditious clerk.</i>
expert,	M médecin,	<i>an expert physician.</i>
expressif,	M mot,	<i>an expressive word.</i>
exquis,	M mets,	<i>a dainty mess.</i>
extérieure,	F partie,	<i>the exterior part.</i>
extraordinaire,	M évènement,	<i>an extraordinary event.</i>
extrême,	F différence,	<i>a very great difference.</i>
	F.	
Fabuleuse,	F histoire,	<i>a fabulous story.</i>
facile,	F langue,	<i>an easy tongue.</i>
fantastique,	M projet,	<i>a fantastical project.</i>
farineuse,	F darté,	<i>a white tetter.</i>
fastidieuse,	F société,	<i>a fastidious society.</i>
fatal,	M moment,	<i>an unlucky moment.</i>
favorable,	F occasion,	<i>a favourable occasion.</i>
favori,	M plaisir,	<i>a darling pleasure.</i>
+ fausse,	F nouvelle,	<i>false news.</i>
ferme,	M pilier,	<i>a firm pillar.</i>
féroce,	F bête,	<i>a fierce beast.</i>
fertile,	F province,	<i>a fertile province.</i>
fidèle,	M amant,	<i>a faithful lover.</i>
fiéffé,	M fripon,	<i>a downright knave.</i>
fier,	M homme,	<i>a haughty man.</i>
figuratif,	M sens,	<i>a figurative sense.</i>
fine,	F étoffe,	<i>fine stuff.</i>
fixe,	M prix,	<i>a set price.</i>
flaques,	F joues,	<i>flabby cheeks.</i>
flatteur,	M courtisan,	<i>a fawning courtier.</i>
foible,	F santé,	<i>feeble health.</i>
fortuit,	M cas,	<i>a mere chance.</i>
frais,	M air,	<i>a cool air.</i>
+ franc,	M arbitre,	<i>free will.</i>
Françoise,	F mode,	<i>a French fashion.</i>
frauduleux,	M commerce,	<i>a fraudulent trade.</i>
		friend,

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
friand,	M	pâté, <i>a dainty pye.</i>
froid,	M	temps, <i>cold weather,</i>
frugale,	F	vie, <i>a frugal life.</i>
frivole,	M	conte, <i>a frivolous story.</i>
fruitier,	M	arbre, <i>a fruitful tree.</i>
funèbre,	F	oraison, <i>a funeral sermon.</i>
funeste,	F	avanture, <i>a fatal adventure.</i>

G.

Galantes,	F	manières, <i>genteel manners.</i>
galleuse,	F	tête, <i>a scabby head.</i>
gauche,	F	main, <i>the left hand.</i>
généreux,	M	maître, <i>a generous master.</i>
géographique,	F	carte, <i>a map.</i>
géométrique,	F	démonstration, <i>a geometrical demonstration.</i>
glorieuse,	F	entreprise, <i>a glorious undertaking.</i>
Gothique,	F	lettre, <i>black letter.</i>
gracieux,	M	compliment, <i>a gracious compliment.</i>
grammaticale,	F	règle, <i>a grammatical rule.</i>
+ grand,	M	verger, <i>a great orchard.</i>
gras,	M	jambon, <i>a fat ham.</i>
grave,	F	démarche, <i>a grave gait.</i>
grenu,	M	épi, <i>a full ear of corn.</i>
+ gros,	M	paquet, <i>a large bundle.</i>
grotesques,	F	figures, <i>grotesque figures.</i>
guéable,	F	rivière, <i>a fordable river.</i>
guerrier,	M	peuple, <i>warlike people.</i>
gutturale,	F	lettre, <i>a guttural letter.</i>

H.

+ Habile,	M	ouvrier, <i>an able workman.</i>
habituel,	M	vice, <i>an habitual vice.</i>
hagards,	M	yeux, <i>fierce eyes.</i>
haïssable,	M	objet, <i>an hateful object.</i>
hardie,	F	entreprise, <i>a bold undertaking.</i>
harmonieuse,	F	période, <i>an harmonious period.</i>
		+ haute,

14 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
+ haute,	F	tour, <i>a high tower.</i>
héroïque,	F	action, <i>an heroical action.</i>
honorifique,	M	titre, <i>an honorary title.</i>
humide,	M	linge, <i>wet linen.</i>
hyperbolique,	F	narration, <i>an hyperbolical nar- ration.</i>
hypocrite,	F	mine, <i>an hypocritical mien.</i>

I.

Illégitime,	M	pouvoir, <i>an illegal power.</i>
illicite,	M	contrat, <i>an illicit convention.</i>
illustre,	F	famille, <i>an illustrious family.</i>
imaginaire,	M	bonheur, <i>a fantastical happiness.</i>
imbécilles,	F	façons, <i>filly manners.</i>
immémorial,	M	temps, <i>immemorial time.</i>
immodérée,	F	passion, <i>an immoderate passion.</i>
immodeste,	F	posture, <i>an immodest posture.</i>
impardonnable,	F	faute, <i>an unpardonable fault.</i>
imparfait,	M	ouvrage, <i>an imperfect work.</i>
impénétrable,	M	secret, <i>an impenetrable secret.</i>
imprenable,	F	ville, <i>an impregnable city.</i>
impraticable,	M	chemin, <i>an impracticable road.</i>
impropre,	M	terme, <i>an improper term.</i>
imprudent,	M	avis, <i>an imprudent advice.</i>
impudente,	F	conversation, <i>a shameless conver- sation.</i>
inaccessible,	F	montagne, <i>an inaccessible moun- tain.</i>
incomparable,	F	beauté, <i>an incomparable beauty.</i>
inconstant,	M	amour, <i>inconstant love.</i>
incontestable,	F	vérité, <i>incontestable truth.</i>
incorrigible,	M	garçon, <i>an incorrigible lad.</i>
incroyable,	F	nouvelle, <i>incredible news.</i>
incurable,	F	maladie, <i>an incurable sickness.</i>
indigent,	M	auteur, <i>an indigent author.</i>
indigeste,	M	manger, <i>undigested viands.</i>
indicible,	F	joye, <i>inexpressible joy.</i>
indisciplinable,	M	écolier, <i>an unruly scholar.</i>
indispensable,	M	devoir, <i>an indispensable duty.</i>
		indubitable,

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
indubitable,	M	succès, <i>undoubted success.</i>
inépuisable,	F	source, <i>inexhaustible source.</i>
inévitabile,	M	nauffrage, <i>an unavoidable shipwreck.</i>
inféodée,	F	rente, <i>rent-charge.</i>
infinie,	F	obligation, <i>an infinite obligation.</i>
ingénieuse,	F	invention, <i>an ingenious invention.</i>
inhabitable,	F	maison, <i>an uninhabitable house.</i>
inhumaine,	F	dureté, <i>an inhuman hardness.</i>
inimitable,	M	sculpteur, <i>an inimitable carver.</i>
inintelligible,	F	proposition, <i>an unintelligible proposition.</i>
inique,	F	action, <i>a wicked action.</i>
injurieuse,	F	parole, <i>an injurious word.</i>
innée,	F	idée, <i>an innate idea.</i>
inquiet,	M	esprit, <i>an unquiet mind.</i>
insatiable,	M	appétit, <i>an insatiable appetite.</i>
insolvable,	M	débiteur, <i>an insolvent debtor.</i>
insoutenable,	F	opinion, <i>an unwarrantable opinion.</i>
intime,	M	ami, <i>an intimate friend.</i>
intrinsèque,	F	qualité, <i>an inward quality.</i>
invalidé,	F	convention, <i>an invalid convention.</i>
invariable,	F	amitié, <i>an unchangeable friendship.</i>
inventive,	F	imagination, <i>an inventive imagination.</i>
invincible,	M	courage, <i>an invincible courage.</i>
inviolable,	M	attachement, <i>an inviolable attachment.</i>
inutile,	M	travail, <i>an useless labour.</i>
irrévocable,	M	arrêt, <i>an irrevocable decree.</i>
isabelle,	M	ruban, <i>an isabella ribband.</i>
isolée,	M	cheval, <i>a yellow dun horse.</i>
	F	muraille, <i>a wall that stands by itself.</i>
+ jeune,	F	beauté, <i>a young beauty.</i>
+ jolie,	F	demoiselle, <i>a handsome lady.</i>
joyeuse,	F	filles, <i>a joyful girl.</i>

Judaïque,

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
Judaïque,	F	coutume, <i>a Jewish custom.</i>
judiciaire,	F	astrologie, <i>judicial astrology.</i>
judicieux,	M	philosophe, <i>a judicious philosopher.</i>
Julienne,	F	période, <i>the Julian period.</i>
juridique,	F	conviction, <i>a juridical conviction.</i>
juste,	M	jugement, <i>a just judgment.</i>
justificative,	F	pièce, <i>a voucher.</i>

L.

Labile,	F	mémoire, <i>a weak memory.</i>
laborieux,	M	jardinier, <i>a laborious gardener.</i>
labourable,	F	terre, <i>arable ground.</i>
Laconique,	M	stile, <i>a Laconic style.</i>
+ laid,	M	portrait, <i>an ugly picture.</i>
lamentable,	M	cri, <i>a lamentable shriek.</i>
langoureuse,	F	situation, <i>a languishing situation.</i>
languissante,	F	santé, <i>weak health.</i>
large,	F	rue, <i>a broad street.</i>
lascif,	M	désir, <i>a lascivious desire.</i>
lent,	M	pas, <i>a slow step.</i>
licentieuse,	F	conduite, <i>a licentious conduct.</i>
licite,	F	vente, <i>a lawful sale.</i>
limitrophe,	M	pays, <i>a neighbouring country.</i>
liquide,	F	médecine, <i>liquid physic.</i>
littérale,	F	traduction, <i>a literal translation.</i>
litigieux,	M	droit, <i>a litigious right.</i>
livide,	M	teint, <i>a livid complexion.</i>
+ long,	M	discours, <i>a long discourse.</i>
lourd,	M	paquet, <i>a heavy burden.</i>
lucratif,	M	métier, <i>a lucrative trade.</i>
lugubre,	M	spectacle, <i>a mournful spectacle.</i>
lyrique,	F	poësie, <i>lyric poetry.</i>

M.

Madré,	M	bois, <i>speckled wood.</i>
magique,	M	art, <i>magic art.</i>
magnétique,	F	vertu, <i>magnetical virtue.</i>
		majestueux,

Adjectives.	Gender of Substantives.
majestueux,	M port, <i>a majestic carriage.</i>
maigre,	M mouton, <i>lean mutton.</i>
majuscule,	F lettre, <i>a capital letter.</i>
malencontreux,	M moment, <i>an ominous moment.</i>
malingre,	M cheval, <i>a sickly horse.</i>
malicieuse,	F femme, <i>a malicious woman.</i>
malpropres,	F manchettes, <i>slovenly ruffles.</i>
malaine,	F saison, <i>an unwholesome season.</i>
manifeste,	F vérité, <i>manifest truth.</i>
marchande,	F ville, <i>a trading town.</i>
marécageux,	M fossé, <i>a marshy ditch.</i>
marin,	M monstre, <i>a sea-monster.</i>
maritimes,	F puissances, <i>maritime powers.</i>
martiale,	F intrépidité, <i>warlike intrepidity.</i>
massif,	M or, <i>solid gold.</i>
matérielle,	F substance, <i>a material substance.</i>
maternelle,	F tendresse, <i>a motherly tenderness.</i>
matrice,	M église, <i>the mother-church.</i>
+ mauvaise,	F excuse, <i>a bad excuse.</i>
mécanique,	M art, <i>a mechanical art.</i>
+ méchante,	M créature, <i>a wicked creature.</i>
médicinal,	M breuvage, <i>a physical drink.</i>
mélancholique,	F humeur, <i>a melancholy humour.</i>
mélodieuse,	F voix, <i>a melodious voice.</i>
mémorable,	M événement, <i>a memorable event.</i>
mesquine,	F économie, <i>sordid economy.</i>
méthodique,	M discours, <i>a methodical discourse.</i>
militaire,	F académie, <i>a military academy.</i>
minérale,	F eau, <i>mineral water.</i>
minime,	F couleur, <i>a dark colour.</i>
mobiliaire,	M bien, <i>a personal estate.</i>
modeste,	F fille, <i>a modest girl.</i>
modique,	M prix, <i>a moderate price.</i>
moileux,	M drap, <i>substantial cloth.</i>
momentané,	M plaisir, <i>a momentary pleasure.</i>
monotone,	F voix, <i>a voice of one and the same sound.</i>
montagneux,	M pays, <i>a hilly country.</i>
moreau,	M cheval, <i>a black horse.</i>
morne,	M silence, <i>fullen silence.</i>
mortelle,	F fièvre, <i>a mortal ague.</i>
	municipal

18 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Adjectives.	Gender of	Substantives.
municipal,	M	droit, <i>common laws.</i>
municipale,	F	ville, <i>a corporation town.</i>
mûrs,	M	raisin, <i>ripe grapes.</i>
musical,	M	air, <i>a musical tune.</i>
mutuel,	M	amour, <i>mutual love.</i>
mythologique,	M	dictionnaire, <i>a mythological dictionary.</i>

N.

Nacarat,	F	robe, <i>a gown of a lively orange red.</i>
natal,	M	air, <i>the native air.</i>
naturel,	M	penchant, <i>a natural inclination.</i>
naval,	M	combat, <i>a sea-fight.</i>
navigable,	F	rivière, <i>a navigable river.</i>
nébuleux,	M	{ temps, <i>foggy</i> } <i>weather</i>
neigeux,		{ <i>snowy</i> }
nécessaire,	F	condition, <i>a necessary condition.</i>
net,	M	verre, <i>a clean glass.</i>
neuve,	F	perruque, <i>a new wig.</i>
noires,	F	culottes, <i>black breeches.</i>
nonchalant,	M	domestique, <i>a careless servant.</i>
notoire,	M	vol, <i>a notorious robbery.</i>
+ nouvelle,	F	mode, <i>a new mode.</i>
+ nu,	M	pieds, <i>bare feet.</i>

O.

Oblique,	F	ligne, <i>an oblique line.</i>
obscène,	F	peinture, <i>an obscene picture.</i>
obstrusif,	M	remède, <i>a stopping remedy.</i>
occulte,	F	qualité, <i>a hidden quality.</i>
oculaire,	M	témoin, <i>an eye-witness.</i>
odoriférante,	F	fleur, <i>an odorous flower.</i>
odieuse,	F	comparaison, <i>an odious comparison.</i>
oisif,	M	écolier, <i>an idle scholar.</i>
Olympiques,	M	jeux, <i>the Olympic games.</i>
Olimpien,	M	Jupiter, <i>Olympic Jove.</i>

onéreuse,

Adjectives. Gender Substantives.

onéreuse,	of	F charge, <i>a burdensome employment.</i>
opiniâtre,	M homme,	<i>an obstinate man.</i>
opulente,	F ville,	<i>an opulent city.</i>
orageux,	M vent,	<i>a stormy wind.</i>
orgueilleux,	M mépris,	<i>a proud scorn.</i>
originel,	M péché,	<i>original sin.</i>
outrageux,	M soupçon,	<i>an offensive suspicion.</i>

P.

Païenne,	F religion,	<i>the Pagan religion.</i>
pair,	M nombre,	<i>an even number.</i>
pâle,	M visage,	<i>a pale face.</i>
pacifique,	M roi,	<i>a peaceable king.</i>
panique,	F terreur,	<i>a panic fear.</i>
pardonnable,	F erreur,	<i>a pardonable mistake.</i>
pareilleuse,	F servante,	<i>an idle maid.</i>
particulier,	M soin,	<i>a particular care.</i>
patentes,	F lettres,	<i>letters patent.</i>
paternel,	M devoir,	<i>fatherly duty.</i>
pâthétique,	M ton,	<i>a pathetic tone.</i>
patrimonial,	M bien,	<i>a patrimonial estate.</i>
pattu,	M pigeon,	<i>a rough-footed pigeon.</i>
pédantes,	M manières,	<i>pedantic manners.</i>
pénale,	F loi,	<i>a penal law.</i>
pénates,	M dieux,	<i>household gods.</i>
pendable,	M cas,	<i>a hanging matter.</i>
pénible,	M ouvrage,	<i>a toilsome work.</i>
perceptible,	F fausseté,	<i>a perceptible untruth.</i>
peremptoire,	M argument,	<i>a peremptory proof.</i>
pernicieux,	M jeu,	<i>a pernicious game.</i>
perpétuel,	M tourment,	<i>a perpetual torment.</i>
personnelle,	F faute,	<i>a personal fault.</i>
pertinente,	F réplique,	<i>a pertinent reply.</i>
pesant,	M paquet,	<i>a heavy bundle.</i>
+ petit,	M mouchoir,	<i>a small handkerchief.</i>
philosophale,	F pierre,	<i>the philosopher's stone.</i>
philosophique,	F question,	<i>a philosophical question.</i>
pleine,	F bouteille,	<i>a full bottle.</i>
poétique,	M stile,	<i>a poetical style.</i>
pointilleux,	M critique,	<i>a cavilling critic.</i>
		poissonneux,

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
poissonneux,	M	étang, <i>a fish-pond well stored.</i>
polie,	F	nation, <i>a polite nation.</i>
poliglote,	M	dictionnaire, <i>a polyglot dictionary.</i>
pompeux,	M	équipage, <i>a pompous equipage.</i>
punctuelle,	F	heure, <i>punctual hour.</i>
poroux,	M	bois, <i>porous wood.</i>
posthume,	M	ouvrage, <i>a posthumous work.</i>
poudreux,	M	souliers, <i>dusty shoes.</i>
poussif,	M	cheval, <i>a short-winded horse.</i>
préalable,	F	convention, <i>a previous convention.</i>
précieuse,	F	pierre, <i>a precious stone.</i>
précis,	M	jour, <i>a precise day.</i>
précoces,	M	fruits, <i>hastings.</i>
préfixe,	F	heure, <i>an appointed hour.</i>
préliminaire,	F	observation, <i>a preliminary observation.</i>
prématuré,	M	esprit, <i>an untimely wit.</i>
présomptueuse,	F	jeunesse, <i>presumptuous youth.</i>
principale,	F	étude, <i>a chief study.</i>
probable,	M	sentiment, <i>a probable opinion.</i>
problématique,	F	proposition, <i>a problematical proposition.</i>
prochain,	M	printemps, <i>next spring.</i>
prodigieuse,	F	colosse, <i>a prodigious colossus.</i>
profond,	M	fossé, <i>a deep ditch.</i>
prolix,	M	discours, <i>a prolix discourse.</i>
+ prompt,	F	colère, <i>sudden anger.</i>
public,	M	affront, <i>a public affront.</i>
puéril,	M	amusement, <i>a childish amusement.</i>
pyramidale,	F	colonne, <i>a pyramidal column.</i>

Q.

Quadrangulaire,	F	place, <i>a four-square place.</i>
quadiennal,	M	congé, <i>a quadriennial leave.</i>
querelleuse,	F	femme, <i>a quarrelsome wife.</i>
quintaux,	M	poète, <i>a whimsical poet.</i>
quotidien,	M	pain, <i>daily bread.</i>

R.

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
Raboteuse,	of	
raisonnable,	F	planche, <i>a rugged shelf.</i>
rapide,	F	demande, <i>a reasonable demand.</i>
rare,	M	cours, <i>a rapid stream.</i>
rebelle,	M	oiseau, <i>an uncommon bird.</i>
récente,	M	sujet, <i>a rebellious subject.</i>
réci-proque,	F	playe, <i>a recent wound.</i>
récréative,	F	fidélité, <i>reciprocal fidelity.</i>
redoutable,	F	lecture, <i>an entertaining lecture.</i>
réelle,	F	mort, <i>a dreadful death.</i>
réformé,	F	perte, <i>a real loss.</i>
régulier,	M	officier, <i>a reformed.</i>
remarquable,	M	plan, <i>a regular plan.</i>
repréhensible,	F	enseigne, <i>a remarkable sign.</i>
respectueuse,	M	procédé, <i>a blameable proceeding.</i>
riche,	F	réponse, <i>a respectful answer.</i>
ridicule,	F	robe, <i>a rich gown.</i>
rigoureuse,	M	habillement, <i>a ridiculous dress.</i>
royal,	F	peine, <i>a rigorous pain.</i>
rouge,	M	palais, <i>a royal palace.</i>
	M	vin, <i>red wine.</i>
roux,	M	cheveux, <i>red hair.</i>
	M	papier, <i>brown paper.</i>
rubicond,	M	beurre, <i>yellow butter.</i>
rude,	M	visage, <i>a ruddy face.</i>
ruineuse,	M	hiver, <i>a hard winter.</i>
rustique,	F	dépense, <i>a ruinous expence.</i>
	F	vic, <i>country life.</i>

S.

Sablonneuse,	F	terre, <i>sandy ground.</i>
sage,	F	conduite, <i>wise behaviour.</i>
sain,	M	fruit, <i>sound fruit.</i>
Salique,	F	loi, <i>the Salic law.</i>
sanguinaire,	M	conquérant, <i>a blood-thirsty conqueror.</i>
satirique,	M	trait, <i>a satirical bolt.</i>
		savant,

22 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
savant,	M	ouvrage, <i>a learned work.</i>
sauvage,	M	canard, <i>a wild duck.</i>
scabreuse,	F	entreprise, <i>a dangerous under-taking.</i>
sec,	M	linge, <i>dry linen.</i>
scientifique,	F	préface, <i>a learned preface.</i>
scorbutique,	F	maladie, <i>scorbutical sickness.</i>
secret,	M	art, <i>a secret art.</i>
séditieux,	M	écrit, <i>a seditious writing.</i>
sempiternelle,	F	vieille, <i>an old woman.</i>
sérieuse,	F	réprimande, <i>a serious reprimand.</i>
sévère,	M	ton, <i>a severe tune.</i>
similaire,	M	son, <i>a similar sound.</i>
sincère,	M	ami, <i>a sincere friend.</i>
sinistre,	M	présage, <i>an unlucky omen.</i>
soigneux,	M	jardinier, <i>a careful gardener.</i>
solide,	M	fondement, <i>a solid foundation.</i>
solitaire,	F	vie, <i>a retired life.</i>
solvable,	M	débiteur, <i>a solvent debtor.</i>
sombre,	F	matinée, <i>a dark morning.</i>
soluble,	M	problème, <i>a soluble problem.</i>
somptueux,	M	repas, <i>a sumptuous meal.</i>
+ sot,	M	marché, <i>a silly bargain.</i>
spacieux,	M	jardin, <i>a spacious garden.</i>
spécieux,	M	prétexte, <i>a specious pretence.</i>
spiritueuse,	F	liqueur, <i>a spirituous liquor.</i>
splendide,	F	entrée, <i>a splendid entry.</i>
stanté,	M	tableau, <i>a stiff picture.</i>
stérile,	M	arbre, <i>a barren tree.</i>
Stoïque,	F	insensibilité, <i>a Stoical insensibility.</i>
stomachale,	F	liqueur, <i>a stomachic liquor.</i>
studieux,	M	écolier, <i>a studious scholar.</i>
suave,	F	odeur, <i>a sweet smell.</i>
sublime,	M	stile, <i>a sublime style.</i>
subreptice,	F	dispense, <i>a surreptitious dispensation.</i>
succincte,	F	analyse, <i>a short analysis.</i>
suffisant,	M	temoignage, <i>a sufficient character.</i>
superbe,	M	bâtiment, <i>a magnificent building.</i>
superstitieuse,	F	pratique, <i>a superstitious practice.</i>
		suraturel,

Adjectives.

Gender

Substantives.

of

ſurnaturel,
ſurnuméraire,

M ſigne, *a ſupernatural ſign.*
M penſionnaire, *a ſupernumerary
boarder.*

ſuſpect,
ſympathique,

M deſſein, *a ſuſpected deſign.*
F qualité, *a ſympathetical quality.*

T.

Tacite,
taliſmanique,
tardif,
téméraire,
tendre,
terrible,
tiède,
timide,
tolérable,
tortueux,
touffue,
triennal,
trionphal,
+ triſte,
tumultueuſe,

M conſentement, *a tacit conſent.*
F figure, *a taliſmanic figure.*
M raiſin, *tardy grapes.*
M combat, *a raſh combat.*
M poulet, *a tender chicken.*
F épouvante, *a terrible fright.*
M thé, *lukewarm tea.*
M lièvre, *a fearful hare.*
M mal, *a tolerable evil.*
M ruiſſeau, *a winding rivulet.*
F haye, *a buſhy hedge.*
M bail, *a triennial leaſe.*
M arc, *a triumphal arch.*
M ſouvenir, *a ſad remembrance,*
F compagnie, *a tumultuous com-
pany.*

turbulente,
Turque,
turquin,
tyrannique.

F république, *a turbulent republic.*
F religion, *the Turkiſh religion.*
M bleu, *a deep blue.*
M pouvoir, *tyrannical power.*

U.

Ulérieur,
ultramontaine,
unanime,

M examen, *a further examination.*
F déciſion, *a Pope's deciſion.*
M conſentement, *an unanimous con-
ſent.*

uniforme,
unique,
univerſelle,

M rapport. *an uniform report.*
M fils, *an only ſon.*
F connoiſſance, *univerſal know-
ledge.*

argente,
utile,

F néceſſité, *a preſſing neceſſity.*
F découverte, *an uſeful diſcovery.*

V. Vague,

V.

Adjectives.	Gender	Substantives.
	of	
Vague,	F	signification, <i>a vague signification.</i>
vaillant,	M	général, <i>a valiant general.</i>
vaine,	F	pensée, <i>a vain thought.</i>
valide,	M	contrat, <i>a valid contract.</i>
variable,	M	temps, <i>variable weather.</i>
vaste,	F	prairie, <i>a vast meadow.</i>
venimeuse,	F	araignée, <i>a venomous spider.</i>
vert,	M	tapis, <i>a green carpet.</i>
véreux,	M	fromage, <i>rotten cheese.</i>
véridique,	M	gazettier, <i>a true gazetteer.</i>
vérolé,	M	visage, <i>a pocky face.</i>
vertueuse,	F	femme, <i>a virtuous woman.</i>
viagère,	F	pension, <i>an annuity.</i>
victorieuse,	F	armée, <i>a victorious army.</i>
+ vieux,	M	pont, <i>an old bridge.</i>
vigoureuse,	F	défense, <i>a vigorous defence.</i>
visible,	F	éclipse, <i>a visible eclipse.</i>
vocale,	F	musique, <i>vocal music.</i>
volage,	F	jeunesse, <i>fickle youth.</i>
volontaire,	M	meurtre, <i>a wilful murder.</i>
vraie,	F	nouvelle, <i>true news.</i>
vide,	M	pot, <i>an empty pot.</i>
vulgaire,	F	opinion, <i>a vulgar opinion.</i>

Z.

Zain,	M	cheval, <i>a horse all of one colour, without any star, spot, or mark about him.</i>
zélé,	M	prédicateur, <i>a zealous preacher.</i>

CHAP. IV.

A List of Adjectives, with the Manner of their being placed before or after their Substantives, and their Signification in either Case.

J USTE prix, <i>a reason- able rate.</i>	homme juste, <i>a just man.</i>
juste défense, <i>a just defence.</i>	action juste, <i>a just action.</i>
à bas prix, <i>at a low rate.</i>	action basse, <i>a mean action.</i>
le bas ventre, <i>the lower part of the belly.</i>	les Pays-bas*, <i>the Low-coun- tries.</i>
une mûre délibération, <i>a mature deliberation.</i>	un fruit mûr, <i>ripe fruit.</i>
maigre chair, <i>poor fare.</i>	viande maigre, <i>lean meat.</i>
vive douleur, <i>a smart pain.</i>	esprit vif, <i>a lively wit.</i>
bon homme, <i>a man who means no harm, or a simple man.</i>	homme bon, <i>a good-natured man.</i>
pauvre homme, <i>a sorry fellow.</i>	homme pauvre, <i>a poor man.</i>
grand homme, <i>a man of dis- tinguished merit.</i>	homme grand, <i>a tall man.</i>
certaine nouvelle, <i>a certain piece of news.</i>	nouvelle certaine, <i>true or cer- tain news.</i>
sage-femme, <i>a midwife.</i>	femme sage, <i>a sober woman.</i>
grosse femme, <i>a large woman.</i>	femme grosse, <i>a woman big with child.</i>
galant homme, <i>a complete gentleman.</i>	homme galant, <i>a man com- plaisant to the ladies.</i>
le grand monde, <i>the great folks.</i>	air grand, <i>a noble aspect.</i>
plaisant homme, <i>an imperti- nent fellow.</i>	homme plaisant, <i>a pleasant man.</i>
vilain homme, <i>a disagree- able man.</i>	homme vilain, <i>a niggardly fellow.</i>
furieux animal, <i>a huge crea- ture.</i>	animal furieux, <i>a fierce crea- ture.</i>

* In other cases, speaking of countries, the adjective goes before; as, le bas Languedoc, la basse Normandie, la basse, ou la haute Saxe, la basse Autriche; le bas, ou le haut Rhin, &c.

26 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

- mort-bois, *brambles, briars, bois mort, dead trees, or other wood of no value.*
 morte-eau, *the water at the eau morte, standing water. bottom of the sea.*
 en droite ligne, *straight ligne droite, a straight line. along.*
 franc coquin, *a very rogue. homme franc, an honest, downright man.*
 franc-salé, *an allowance of arbre franc, a grafted, or real salt. tree.*
 franche vérité, *naked truth. marchandise franche, free merchandize.*
 franc-tillac, *the lowermost deck bourgeois franc, a free citizen.*
 basse-cour, *an inner yard. voix basse, a low voice.*
 basse-fosse, *a dungeon. rivière basse, a shallow river.*
 le bas-bord, *the larboard of faire main-basse, to put all to a ship. the sword.*
 les basses voiles, *the main cœur bas, a base soul. and mainzen sails.*
 le bas peuple, *the mob. avoir la vue basse, to be short-sighted.*
 les basses cartes, *the small esprit bas, a mean wit. cards.*
 cher ami, *dear friend. habit cher, a dear suit.*
 clairs deniers, *clear or spare du linon-clair, clear lawn. money.*
 le commun peuple, *the com- usage commun, common use. mon people.*
 un doux zéphir, *a gentle un billet-doux, a love-letter. gale.*
 dure-mère, *dura mater. viande dure, tough meat.*
 faux frais, *extraordinary ex- cheval faux, a stumbling horse. pences.*
 fin or, *fine gold. diamand fin, a right diamond.*
 fol espoir, *a foolish hope. peintre fou, a mad painter.*
 fol amour, *Cupid. poète fou, a mad poet.}*
 le haut bout, *the upper end. la chambre haute, the upper house.*
 menus plaisirs, *pocket money. jambes menues, small, slender legs.*
 molle condescendance, *a dull vie molle, an easy life. complaisance.*

A Grammar of the French Tongue, 27

les pâles couleurs, *the green visage* pâle, *pale face.*
sickness.

rouge bord, *a bumper.* des yeux rouges, *blood-shot eyes*
rouge-gorge, *a robin-red-* couleur rouge, *red colour.*
breast.

rase campagne, *an open field.* velours ras, *shorn velvet.*
saine doctrine, *true doctrine.* temps sain, *wholesome weather.*

saine raison, *sound reason.* jugement sain, *sound judg-*
ment.

de vains efforts, *vain en-* peine vaine, *unprofitable trou-*
deavours. ble.

foible raison, *a weak reason.* l'âge foible, *infancy.*

vaine gloire, *vain-glory.* homme vain, *a vain-glorious*
man.

on vif ressentiment, *a lively* des yeux vifs, *sparkling eyes.*
sentiment.

double bière, *strong beer.* acte double, *duplicate of a*
writing.

vive douleur, *a smart pain.* cheval vif, *a mettlesome horse.*

vif-argent, *quick-silver.* couleur vive, *a lively colour.*

de vive voix, *by word of* teint vif, *a lively complexion.*
mouth.

ferme résolution, *firm reso-* muraille ferme, *a firm wall.*
lution.

de vastes desseins, *great de-* un esprit vaste, *a great genius.*
signs.

vielle mode, *an old fashion.* vin vieux, *old wine.*

la verte jeunesse, *youthful days.* bois vert, *green wood.*

une verte réponse, *a sharp* fruit vert, *unripe fruit.*
answer.

une verte réprimande, *a sharp* pois verts, *green pease.*
reprimand.

âpre combat, *a cruel combat.* un esprit âpre, *an austere man.*

un vert galant, *a brisk gallant.* une tête verte, *a hair-brained*
fellow.

la tendre jeunesse, *tender* l'âge tendre, *tender age.*
youth.

maigre repas, *pitiful cheer.* terroir maigre, *a barren soil.*

maigre auteur, *a pitiful author* stile maigre, *a poor style.*

froide mine, *cold look.* viande froide, *cold meat.*

ample pouvoir, *full power.* discours ample, *a diffuse dis-*
course.

la plus forte raison, *how much* raison forte, *a strong reason.*
more.

C H A P. V.

Of the Notes and Points made Use of in writing French.

THE several marks used in writing French are the following :

A comma, *une virgule*, (,) divides the lesser part of a sentence, and stops the reader's voice till he can count *one*.

A semicolon, *une virgule & un point*, (;) divides the greater part of a sentence, at which the reader must stop till he can count *two*.

A colon, *deux points*, (:) marks the half of a sentence, at which the reader must stop till he can count *three*. Semicolons and colons are sometimes used promiscuously.

A period, or full point, *un point*, (.) is used when the sentence is fully ended, and requires a pause till we can count *four*.

A note of interrogation, *un signe d'interrogation*, (?) is used in asking a question.

A note of admiration, *un signe d'admiration*, (!) is used when we admire, wish, or wonder ; it serves also to express some violent passion.

* An apostrophe, *une apostrophe*, (') is set over the place where some letter is left out ; as, *l'amour*, instead of *le amour*, *love*.

* These three vowels *a, e, i*, when the following word begins with a vowel or an *h* not aspirated, are left out in French in these following words :

Le, la, je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, si, que, and compound
, *l', j', m', t', s', d', c', n', s', qu' puisqu', &c.*

A hyphen,

- A hyphen, *un tiret*, (-) joins words or syllables together ; as, *parla-t-il*, *did he speak ?* *parle-t-elle*, *does she speak ?*
- A cedilla, *une cédille*, (ç) is placed under c, when it is pronounced like s, before a, o, or u.
- A parenthesis, *une parenthèse*, () includes something not necessary to the sense, but brought in to explain or illustrate it, and is very seldom used.
- A dialysis, *deux points*, (') parts two vowels coming together, and signifies their making two syllables ; as, *Saül étoit roi d'Israël* ; *Saul was king of Israel*.

There are several other notes made use of by authors and printers ; it would be needless to trouble the learner here with any.

Obs. I. *Le, la, ce*, suffer no elision before *onze, onzième, oui* ; neither in the imperative mood, as, *laissez-le aller*, *let him go* ; except when followed immediately by *en* or *y*, as, *laissez-y aller*, *let him go thither*.

Obs. II. *Si* suffers an elision only before *il* or *ils*.

Obs. III. *Là* there is never contracted.

Obs. IV. *E* in *grande* is contracted in some words beginning with a consonant : as, *grand'mère, grandmother, à grand'peine, with much ado, &c.*

CHAP. VI.

Of Accents made Use of in writing French.

AN accent is a note put over a vowel, at the end of a syllable or word, to denote it's sound, quantity, nature, or signification.

An accent is either acute, *aiguë* ([^]), grave, *grave*, ([`]), or circumflex, *circonflexe*, (^ˆ).

The first is placed upon *e*, when it has the third sound; as in *été*, *the summer*; except in verbs of the second person plural, because *e* is joined with *x*, as, *vous aimez*, *you love*.

The second accent is sometimes put upon *e*, when it has the fourth sound; as in *salîre*, *salt-cellar*: in some monosyllables ending with an *s*, as *près*, *near*, *très*, *very*, *most*, &c. also at the end of words of more than one syllable, as in *progrès*, *progress*; *après* *after*. It is used in the last case, when an *s* follows.

This accent is likewise used to distinguish articles, adverbs, verbs, prepositions, and conjunctions, as in the following words:

<i>a</i> , <i>bas</i> .	<i>à</i> , <i>at</i> , or <i>to</i> .
<i>là</i> , <i>the</i> .	<i>là</i> , <i>there</i> .
<i>de là</i> , <i>of</i> , or <i>from the</i> .	<i>de-là</i> , <i>from thence</i> .
<i>des</i> , <i>some</i> , <i>of</i> , or <i>from the</i> .	<i>dès-que</i> , <i>as soon as</i> ,
<i>ça</i> , <i>come on</i> .	<i>çà</i> , <i>hither</i> .
<i>ou</i> , <i>or</i> .	<i>où</i> , <i>where</i> .

N. B. Compounds follow the same rule, as, *là-haut*, *above*; *là-bas*, *down there*, *below*; *sur-celà*, *thereupon*; *là-dessus*, *upon that*; *là-dessous*, *under that*, *under the*; *de-là*, *thence*, *from thence*; *par-là*, *that way*; *celui-là*, *that*, *this*.

This accent is never placed in the beginning or in the middle of words, when an *e* is followed by a consonant, with which it makes a syllable *.

The third is placed commonly upon a long vowel, as in *âge*, *age*, *bête*, *a bîast*, and particularly upon those which were formerly spelt with an *s*, as in *abîme*, *an abyss*, *les nôtres*, *ours*, &c.

In some monosyllables, as in *mât*, *a-mast*.

At the end of some words ending with *s*, as in *forêt*, *a forest*.

In the third person singular of the preterite subjunctive, as, *qu'il parlât*, *that he might speak*, to distinguish the subjunctive from the indicative, *il parla*, *he spoke*.

Observe that verbs of the first conjugation take a *z*, besides the accent, in the subjunctive mood, and none in the indicative: whereas all other verbs have a *t* in the indicative and subjunctive moods.

* I cannot but take notice of a mistake among some grammarians, who, contrary to all rules and custom, put a grave accent, where there is no need of any, as, in these words, *belle dentelle*, fine lace. This practice is contrary to the writing of all the celebrated *French Authors*. It avails nothing to say, that it is in order to shew the scholar the true sound of such a letter: children, without the help of this accent, cannot mistake it; they never pronounce it as if it were accented *belle dentelle*, according to the third sound.

A matter, in order to distinguish the sounds, is not allowed to give false notions about orthography, which is as great a nicety in writing, as pronunciation is in speaking. If in the *French Tongue* there were no written accents at all, perhaps it would not be amiss to put an accent in such a case, where there is no danger of it's being mistaken, as in the *English Tongue*: But, as there are some necessary accents in the *French Tongue*, how shall a scholar be able to know in writing *French*, if such an accent is for orthography's sake, or only to distinguish the sound?

C H A P. VII.

Observations on Conversing in French.

THE French have four ways of speaking to one another : They speak in the second person of the singular ; in the third person of the singular ; in the third person of the plural ; but more particularly in the second person of the plural.

Intimate friends, by way of familiarity, or persons in anger, make use of the second person of the singular ; as, *tu es bien pressé, thou art in a great hurry.* This way of speaking is quite banished from well-bred people, who leave it to the soldiers, though they make use of it in fondling their little children. It is likewise elegantly used in poetry and in all solemn speeches.

They speak in the third person of the singular to persons of an higher station they are not acquainted with ; as, *comment se porte Monsieur ? how does the Gentleman do ?* The meaning is, *how do you do ?* This civil manner of speaking is used in asking questions, in meeting, and in some preliminary compliments. There are some other circumstances where they make use of the third person singular, which I shall take notice of in giving some rules for the writing of French letters.

They speak in the third person of the plural in the very same circumstances as in the third person of the singular, if they speak to several persons.

The ordinary manner of speaking is in the second person of the plural.

C H A P. VIII.

Observations on writing French Letters.

THE rules of writing French letters are the same as those of speaking, yet those rules have a farther extent in the one than in the other. In order therefore to give short and plain notions for writing, I will consider the beginning, the middle, and the end of a letter.

SECTION

SECTION I.

For the Beginning.

First, If you write to a person of an inferior or equal rank, you may begin your letter a little below the title. *Secondly*, If to a person of a higher station, you ought to begin in the middle of the page: *Thirdly*, If you write to a person of the highest station, politeness requires you to begin almost at the bottom of the page.

In the two last cases, the title *Monseigneur*, *Monsieur*, *Madame*, or *Mademoiselle*, ought to be written at the top: in the first case the title is indifferently put at the top or after two or three words, as, *Je vous remercie*, *Monsieur*, &c. *I thank you*, *Sir*, &c.

A letter should never begin with *Monsieur*, *Madame*, *Monseigneur*, if these words are already at the top of the page. As it is altogether uncommon in English to see *Sir* at the top, and again *Sir* at the beginning of a letter, so it is in French. Nay, it is inconsistent to repeat it after one or two other words: as having written at the top of the page *Monsieur*, you begin, *J'ai vu Monsieur votre frère*.

SECTION II.

For the Middle.

Never begin a period with the title, but always after some words, as, *C'est pourquoi*, *Monseigneur*; au reste, *Monsieur*; après tout, *Madame*.

Those words are used with propriety after *vous*; as, *Ce n'est que de vous*, *Monsieur*, que j'ose attendre cette grace, *It is only from you*, *Sir*, *I dare expect that favour*. Care must be taken not to place them twice in the same period; neither place the title in any part, where it may make a ridiculous equivocation; as, *Envoyez moi du veau*, *Monsieur*, *Send me some veal*, *Sir*. *Je ne saurais vendre*, *Madame*, *les marchandises*, *I cannot sell*, *Madam*, *the merchandises*.

Those words are never placed between an adjective and a substantive; as, *C'est un procédé*, *Monsieur*, *désapprouvé*. *C* 5

prouvé de tout le monde, *It is a piece of dealing disproved of by every body.*

They are well placed before *que*, as, *Je ne doute pas, Monsieur, que . . . I do not doubt Sir, but . . .* Likewise before *de*, as, *C'est une preuve, Madame, de votre amitié, It is a proof, Madam, of your friendship.* Never at the end of a period. There is another fault to be avoided, not to repeat too often *Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle, &c.*

If the letter be written to a person of a distinguished rank, we make use of *Votre Excellence, Votre Eminence, Votre Grandeur, &c.* observing to speak always in the third person singular; in other places the pronoun personal, *elle*, may be used to avoid the too frequent repetition of *Votre Excellence, Votre Grandeur, &c.*

If the letter be long, *vous* may be used, but not often; in this case *vous* must be followed or preceded by *Monseigneur*, or any other title; as, *Vous me permettrez, Monseigneur, You will permit me, My Lord*; but, in this case, *Votre Excellence, Votre Grandeur, &c.* ought to be repeated oftener than *elle*, and *elle* oftener than *vous*.

There are some cases where only *vous* is to be used: as, *Vous êtes, Monseigneur, le général le plus expérimenté de l'armée, You are, my Lord, the most experienced general of the army.* It happens particularly, when you are speaking of the qualities of the body, or of the mind.

Observe here, that we, both *French and English*, have more liberty in our tongues than the *Italians* and some others in theirs. Our *vous* or *you* is inconsistent with the *Italian civility*, who, by the too frequent repetition of their *Vostre Signoria*, even in speaking almost to any body, are tedious and troublesome.

SECTION III.

For the End.

If you write to a person of a higher station, you ought to put *Votre . . . Serviteur* and your name, much below the last word of your letter, even at the bottom of the page; and, if the page is already filled up by your letter, the best method is to write some lines more on another page, and then write your name at the bottom.

Care

Care must be taken to write *Monseigneur, Madame, . . .* a little below the last word of your letter; *de Votre Excellence, de Votre Grandeur, . . .* a little below *Monseigneur, . . .* and afterwards at the bottom, *le,* and your name.

Never end your letter with a preposition, as, for example, *Vous pouvez compter sur, Monsieur, votre . . .* *You may rely upon, Sir, your . . .* except when the preposition is followed by it's governed case, as, *Soyez persuadé, que je serai toujours avec toute la reconnoissance possible, Monsieur, votre . . .* *Be assured of my being always with all possible gratitude, Sir, your . . .* *De tout mon cœur, . . .* *With all my heart, . . .* *Pour toute la vie, . . .* *For all my life, . . .* *Sans interruption, incessantly.*

Neither end your letter with an article, as, *Les services que vous avez rendus à, Monsieur, votre . . .* *The service you have done to, Sir, your . . .* *Trop flatté du titre de, Monsieur, votre . . .* *Too much pleased with the title of, Sir, your . . .*

The common and the best way is to end your letter in the aforesaid manner, with a preposition followed by it's case, or with the verb *être* in it's several tenses or moods, as you please; but the last period may be varied according to the writer's genius, the person whom he writes to, or the subject of his writing, as,

Soyez persuadé, que rien n'égalera le profond respect avec lequel j'ai l'honneur d'être . . .

Mes sentimens seront toujours aussi vifs & profonds, que le respect avec lequel . . . as above.

Soyez persuadé, que je suis tout à vous.

De tous ceux que vous avez obligés, il n'y en a point qui soient avec plus de reconnoissance & de respect . . .

Faites moi la grâce de croire, que je suis autant que je dois & avec toute sorte de passion . . .

Fournissez m'en l'occasion je la saisirai avec empressement, sans cesser d'être . . .

Ne doutez pas un moment que je ne sois.

Il me reste une grâce à vous demander, c'est celle de me croire avec respect . . .

Je n'aurai jamais d'autre ambition que celle de mériter votre protection & d'être toujours, or sans cesse, or toute ma vie.

36 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Mes promesses, vous le savez, sont des réalités : une chose n'est pas moins réelle ; c'est l'attachement parfait avec lequel j'ai l'honneur d'être.

J'ose me flatter que vous n'en exigez point pour être persuadé que personne n'est plus que moi.

Je finis par une décision qui sera toujours hors de doute ; c'est que tant je serai susceptible de plaisir, j'aurai toujours celui d'être tout à vous.

This will be enough upon this subject to give the scholar an idea of writing French letters, which he may better learn afterwards by reading letters written by good authors.

Cardinal Numbers.	Numerical Letters.	Les Nombres Cardinaux.
1, <i>one.</i>	I.	un.
2, <i>two.</i>	II.	deux.
3, <i>three.</i>	III.	trois.
4, <i>four.</i>	IV.	quatre.
5, <i>five.</i>	V.	cing.
6, <i>six.</i>	VI.	six.
7, <i>seven.</i>	VII.	sept.
8, <i>eight.</i>	VIII.	huit.
9, <i>nine.</i>	IX.	neuf.
10, <i>ten.</i>	X.	dix.
11, <i>eleven.</i>	XI.	onze.
12, <i>twelve.</i>	XII.	douze.
13, <i>thirteen.</i>	XIII.	treize.
14, <i>fourteen.</i>	XIV.	quatorze.
15, <i>fifteen.</i>	XV.	quinze.
16, <i>sixteen.</i>	XVI.	seize.
17, <i>seventeen.</i>	XVII.	dix-sept.
18, <i>eighteen.</i>	XVIII.	dix-huit.
19, <i>nineteen.</i>	XIX.	dix-neuf.
20, <i>twenty.</i>	XX.	vingt.
21, <i>twenty-one.</i>	XXI.	vingt & un.
22, <i>twenty-two.</i>	XXII.	vingt-deux.
<i>and so on to</i>		<i>jusqu'à</i>
30, <i>thirty.</i>	XXX.	trente.
31, <i>thirty-one.</i>	XXXI.	trente & un.
32, <i>thirty-two.</i>	XXXII.	trente-deux.
<i>and so on to</i>		<i>jusqu'à</i>
40, <i>forty.</i>	XL.	quarante.

41, <i>forty-one.</i>	XLI.	quarante & un.
42, <i>forty-two.</i>	XLII.	quarante-deux,
and so on to		jusqu' à
50, <i>fifty.</i>	L.	cinquante,
51, <i>fifty-one.</i>	LI.	cinquante & un.
52, <i>fifty-two.</i>	LII.	cinquante-deux,
and so on to		jusqu' à
60, <i>sixty.</i>	LX.	soixante.
61, <i>sixty-one.</i>	LXI.	soixante & un.
62, <i>sixty-two.</i>	LXII.	soixante-deux,
and so on to		jusqu' à
70, <i>seventy.</i>	LXX.	soixante & dix.
71, <i>seventy-one.</i>	LXXI.	soixante & onze.
72, <i>seventy-two.</i>	LXXII.	soixante & douze,
and so on to		jusqu' à
80, <i>eighty.</i>	LXXX.	quatre-vingts.
81, <i>eighty-one.</i>	LXXXI.	quatre-vingt un.
82, <i>eighty-two.</i>	LXXXII.	quatre-vingt-deux,
and so on to		jusqu' à
90, <i>ninety.</i>	XC.	quatre-vingt-dix.
91, <i>ninety-one.</i>	XCI.	quatre-vingt-onze.
92, <i>ninety-two.</i>	XCH.	quatre-vingt-douze,
and so on to		jusqu' à
100, <i>one hundred.</i>	C.	cent.
200, <i>two hundred.</i>	CC.	deux cents.
300, <i>three hundred.</i>	CCC.	trois cents.
400, <i>four hundred.</i>	CCCC.	quatre cents.
500, <i>five hundred.</i>	D, or IJ.	cinq cents.
600, <i>six hundred.</i>	DC, or IJ C.	six cents.
700, <i>seven hundred.</i>	DCC, or IJ CC.	sept cent.
800, <i>eight hundred.</i>	DCCC, or IJ CCC.	huit cents.
900, <i>nine hundred.</i>	DCCCC, or IJ CCCC.	neuf cents.
1000, <i>one thousand.</i>	M, or CIJ.	mille.

These numbers never vary their termination, except *un*, which makes *une* in the feminine; *cent*, which makes *cents* in the plural; *mille* is written *mil*, when we write the date of the year, in this case *cent* does not vary; as, 1767, *one thousand, se-* MDCCLXVII. *mil sept cent soixante-*
ven hundred, and sept.
sixty-seven.

38 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

ORDINAL NUMBERS. LES NOMBRES ORDINAUX.

1 st . <i>first</i> .	1 ^{er} . premier, M. première, F.
2 ^d . <i>second</i> .	2 ^e . second, M. seconde, F.
3 ^d . <i>third</i> .	3 ^e . troisième.
4 th . <i>fourth</i> .	4 ^e . quatrième.
5 th . <i>fifth</i> .	5 ^e . cinquième.
6 th . <i>sixth</i> .	6 ^e . sixième.
7 th . <i>seventh</i> .	7 ^e . septième.
8 th . <i>eighth</i> .	8 ^e . huitième.
9 th . <i>ninth</i> .	9 ^e . neuvième.
10 th . <i>tenth</i> .	10 ^e . dixième.
11 th . <i>eleventh</i> .	11 ^e . onzième.
12 th . <i>twelfth</i> .	12 ^e . douzième.
13 th . <i>thirteenth</i> .	13 ^e . treizième.
14 th . <i>fourteenth</i> .	14 ^e . quatorzième.
15 th . <i>fifteenth</i> .	15 ^e . quinzième.
16 th . <i>sixteenth</i> .	16 ^e . seizième.
17 th . <i>seventeenth</i> .	17 ^e . dix-septième.
18 th . <i>eighteenth</i> .	18 ^e . dix-huitième.
19 th . <i>nineteenth</i> .	19 ^e . dix-neuvième.
20 th . <i>twentieth</i> .	20 ^e . vingtième.
21 st . <i>twenty-first</i> .	21 ^e . vingt & unième.
22 ^d . <i>twenty-first</i> .	22 ^e . vingt-deuxième.
<i>and so on, &c.</i>	<i>ainsi de suite.</i>

<i>Once,</i>	<i>une fois.</i>
<i>twice,</i>	<i>deux fois.</i>
<i>thrice,</i>	<i>trois fois.</i>
<i>four times.</i>	<i>quatre fois.</i>

<i>First, or, in the first place.</i>	<i>premièrement, ou, en premier lieu.</i>
<i>Secondly, or, in the second place,</i>	<i>secondement, ou, en second lieu.</i>
<i>thirdly, or, in the third place,</i>	<i>troisièmement, ou, en troisi-ème lieu.</i>
<i>fourthly, or, in the fourth place,</i>	<i>quatrièmement, ou, en qua- trième lieu.</i>

A Grammar of the French Tongue.

39

The MONTHS of the YEAR. *The west, l'occident, ou l'ouest.*

January, Janvier.

The south, le midi, ou le sud.

February, Fevrier.

The north, le nord, ou le septentrion.

March, Mars.

April, Avril.

May, Mai.

June, Juin.

The FIVE SENSES.

July, Juillet.

The sight, la vue.

August, Août.

The hearing, l'ouïe.

September, Septembre.

The feeling, l'attouchement.

October, Octobre.

The taste, le goût.

November, Novembre.

The smell, l'odorat.

December, Decembre.

The SEASONS of the YEAR. The FOUR DIVISIONS of the WORLD.

The Spring, le printemps.

Europe, l'Europe.

The Summer, l'été.

Asia, l'Asie.

The Autumn, l'automne.

Africa, l'Afrique.

The Winter, l'hiver.

America, l'Amérique.

The DAYS of the WEEK.

Of the MOON.

Monday, Lundi.

New moon, nouvelle lune.

Tuesday, Mardi.

First quarter, premier quartier.

Wednesday, Mercredi.

Full moon, pleine lune.

Thursday, Jeudi.

tier.

Friday, Vendredi.

Last quarter, dernier quartier.

Saturday, Samedi.

Sunday, Dimanche.

Of GEOGRAPHY.

The FOUR ELEMENTS.

Terms relating to the Land.

The fire, le feu.

I.

The air, l'air.

A continent, un continent.

The earth, la terre.

An island, une île.

The water, l'eau.

A peninsula, une presqu'île.

An isthmus, un isthme.

The CARDINAL POINTS.

A promontory, un promontoire.

The east, l'orient, ou l'est.

A mountain,

A mountain, une montagne. *Manhood*, la virilité.
A coast, or shore, une côte. *Old-Age*, la vieillesse.
Death, la mort.

II.

OF ARTS AND SCIENCES.

Terms relating to the Water.

An ocean, un océan.
A sea, une mer.
A gulph, un golphe.
A streight, un détroit.
A channel, un canal.
A lake, un lac.
A river, une rivière.

OF the WEATHER.

The heat, le chaud.
The cold, le froid.
The rain, la pluie.
The dew, la rosée.
The hail, la grêle.
The snow, la neige.
The frost, la gelée.
The thaw, le dégel.
A fog or mist, un brouillard.
The glazed frost, le verglas.
A storm, un orage.
A tempest, une tempête.
A flash of lightning, un éclair.
The thunder, le tonnerre.
The thunderbolt, la foudre.
The rainbow, l'arc-en-ciel.
The wind, le vent.

The AGES of MEN.

Birth, la naissance.
Childhood, l'enfance.
Youth, la jeunesse.

Divinity, la théologie.
Philosophy, la philosophie.
Logic, la logique.
Natural Philosophy, la physique.
Physic, la médecine.
Surgery, la chirurgie.
Law, le droit.
Grammar, la grammaire.
Rhetoric, la rhétorique.
Poetry, la poésie.
Mathematics, les mathématiques.
Astrology, l'astrologie.
Chronology, la chronologie.
Arithmetic, l'arithmétique.
Algebra, l'algèbre.
Geometry, la géométrie.
Geography, la géographie.
Perspective, la perspective.
Dialling, la gnomonique.
Surveying, larpentage.
Architecture, l'architecture.
Fortifications, les fortifications.
Navigation, la navigation.
Music, la musique.
Chymistry, la chimie.
Painting, la peinture.
Statuary, la sculpture.
Fencing, l'escrime.
Riding, le manège.
Dancing, la danse.
Drawing, le dessin.

Of the PERIODS of TIME. *The gum, la gencive.*

An instant, un instant.

A moment, un moment.

A minute, une minute.

A quarter of an hour, un quart d'heure.

Half an hour, une demi-heure.

An hour, une heure.

A day, un jour.

The morning, le matin.

Noon, midi.

Afternoon, l'après midi.

The evening, le soir.

Midnight, minuit.

A week, une semaine.

A month, un mois.

A year, un an.

An age, un siècle.

Eternity, l'éternité.

The beginning, le commencement.

The middle, le milieu.

The end, la fin.

OF the HUMAN BODY.

The head, la tête.

The hair, les cheveux.

The face, le visage.

The forehead, le front.

The features, les traits.

The eyes, les yeux.

The eyebrows, les sourcils.

The eyelids, les paupières.

The nose, le nez.

The nostrils, les narines.

The cheeks, les joues.

The lips, les lèvres.

The mouth, la bouche.

The teeth, les dents.

The jaw, la machoire.

The throat, le gosier.

The ears, les oreilles.

The chin, le menton.

The neck, le cou.

The shoulders, les épaules.

The arms, les bras.

The elbow, le coude.

The wrist, le poignet.

The hand, la main.

The fingers, les doigts.

The thumb, le pouce.

The nails, les ongles.

The fist, le poing.

The belly, le ventre.

The knees, les genoux.

The legs, les jambes.

The feet, les pieds.

The heels, les talons.

OF WEARING APPAREL.

A suit of cloaths, un habit.

A waistcoat, une veste.

The breeches, les culottes.

The sleeves, les manches.

The buttons, les boutons.

The button-holes, les boutonnières.

The pockets, les poches.

A sob, un gousset.

The lining, la doublure.

Linen, du linge.

The ruffles, les manchettes.

Shams, de fausses manches.

A handkerchief, un mouchoir.

Stockings, des bas.

Garters, des jarretières.

Shoes, des souliers.

Buckles, des boucles.

A hat, un chapeau.

A wig, une perruque.
Gloves, des gands.
A muff, un manchon.
A comb, un peigne.
A sword, une épée.
Boots, des bottes.
A ring, une bague.
A watch, une montre.
A snuff-box, une tabatière.
A purse, une bourse.
Spectacles, des lunettes.
A petticoat, une juppe.
A gown, une robe.
A shirt, une chemise.
An apron, un tablier.
A fan, un éventail.
Ear-rings, des boucles d'oreille.
A pin, une épingle.
A needle, une aiguille.
A pincushion, une pelote.
Scent water, eau de senteur.
Powder, de la poudre.
The powder-box, la boîte à poudre.
Ribbands, des rubans.
Jewels, des bijoux.
Scissors, des ciseaux.
Pattini, des patins.
Cloth, du drap.
Linen, de la lisière.
Muslin, de la mouffeline.
Lawn, du linon.
Gauze, de la gaze.
Buckram, du bougras.
Dimity, du basin.
Velvet, du velours.
Camblet, du camelot.
Druggs, du drogues.
Rattem, de la ratine.
Lustre, du taffetas.

OF HOUSEHOLD-FURNITURE.

A bed, un lit.
The curtains, les rideaux.
A warming-pan, une baignoire.
The bed-cloaths, la couverture.
A pillow, un oreiller.
A quilt, un matelas.
A straw-bed, une paille.
A feather-bed, un lit de plumes.
The tester, le fond du lit.
The top of the bed, le ciel du lit.
The bed's feet, les pieds du lit.
A bedstead, un bois de lit.
A chamber-pot, un pot de chambre.
A house, une maison.
The hangings, la tapisserie.
A looking-glass, un miroir.
A chair, une chaise.
A table, une table.
A carpet, un tapis.
A table-cloth, une nappe.
A plate, une assiette.
A napkin, une serviette.
A knife, un couteau.
A fork, une fourchette.
A spoon, une cuiller.
A salt-cellar, une salière.
A dish, un plat.
A porringer, une écuelle.
A basin, un bassin.
A towel, un essui-main.
A bottle, une bouteille.
A glass, un verre.
A screw, un tire-bouchon.
A candle, une chandelle.

is pronounced,

A candlestick,

Of HERBS, PLANTS, and FRUIT.	
<i>A candlestick</i> , un chandelier.	<i>Turnips</i> , des navets.
<i>A wax-candle</i> , une bougie.	<i>Carrots</i> , des carottes.
<i>The snuffers</i> , les mouchettes.	<i>Red beets</i> , des betteraves.
<i>A chest of drawers</i> , un bureau.	<i>Radishes</i> , des raves.
<i>A trunk</i> , un coffre.	<i>Spinage</i> , des épinards.
<i>A box</i> , une boîte.	<i>Cabbage</i> , des choux.
<i>A cradle</i> , un berceau.	<i>Collyflowers</i> , des choux fleuris.
<i>The fire</i> , le feu.	<i>Artichokes</i> , des artichaux.
<i>The chimney</i> , la cheminée.	<i>Asparagus</i> , des asperges.
<i>The hearth</i> , le foyer.	<i>Lettice</i> , de la laitue.
<i>The bellows</i> , le soufflet.	<i>Endive</i> , de la chicorée.
<i>A grate</i> , une grille.	<i>Celeri</i> , du céleri.
<i>A gridiron</i> , un grille.	<i>Parsley</i> , du persil.
<i>The tongs</i> , les pincettes.	<i>Purslain</i> , du pourpier.
<i>The shovel</i> , la pelle.	<i>Cresses</i> , du cresson.
<i>The poker</i> , le fourgon.	<i>Sorrel</i> , de l'oseille.
<i>The ashes</i> , les cendres.	<i>Onions</i> , des oignons.
<i>The flames</i> , la flamme.	<i>Garlick</i> , de l'ail.
<i>The smoke</i> , la fumée.	<i>Shallots</i> , des échalottes.
<i>The soot</i> , la suie.	<i>Leeks</i> , des porreaux.
<i>Matches</i> , des allumettes.	<i>Thyme</i> , du thim.
<i>The tinder</i> , la mèche.	<i>Chervil</i> , du cerfeuil.
<i>A tinder-box</i> , une boîte à fusil.	<i>Sage</i> , de la sauge.
<i>A flint</i> , une pierre à feu.	<i>Melons</i> , des melons.
<i>The steel</i> , le fusil.	<i>Cucumbers</i> , des cocombres.
<i>A kettle</i> , un chauderon.	<i>Gourds</i> , des citrouilles.
<i>A pot</i> , un pot.	<i>Pumpkins</i> , des courges.
<i>A pot-lid</i> , un couvercle.	<i>Nettles</i> , des orties.
<i>A flesh-hook</i> , un crochet.	<i>Fern</i> , de la fougère.
<i>A trevet</i> , un trépied.	<i>Thistles</i> , des chardons.
<i>A skimmer</i> , un écumoire.	<i>A flower</i> , une fleur.
<i>A frying-pan</i> , une poêle.	<i>A tulip</i> , un tulippe.
<i>A pudding-pan</i> , une tourtière.	<i>A violet</i> , un violette.
<i>A spit</i> , une broche.	<i>A pink</i> , un œillet.
<i>A jack</i> , un tournebroche.	<i>A gilliflower</i> , une giroflée.
<i>A broom</i> , un balai.	<i>A tree</i> , un arbre.
<i>A dish-clout</i> , un torchon.	<i>A shrub</i> , un arbrisseau.
<i>A dripping-pan</i> , une lèche-frite.	<i>A wall-tree</i> , un espalier.
<i>A chafing-dish</i> , un réchaud.	<i>A bramble</i> , une ronce.
<i>A sieve</i> , un tamis.	<i>A thorn</i> , une épine.
<i>A washing-tub</i> , une cuve.	

24 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Apples, des pommes.

Pears, des poires.

Cherries, des cerises.

Plums, des prunes.

Almonds, des amandes.

Peaches, des pêches.

Figs, des figues.

Chestnuts, des chataignes.

Walnuts, des noix.

Small nuts, des noisettes.

Filberts, des avelines.

Oranges, des oranges.

Citrons, des citrons.

Grapes, des raisins.

Gooseberries, des groseilles.

Strawberries, des fraises.

Of the STUDY and the SCHOOL.

Paper, du papier.

Blotting-paper, du papier
brouillard.

Brown paper, du papier
gris.

Gilt-paper, du papier doré.

A quire of paper, une main
de papier.

A sheet of paper, une feuille
de papier.

A ream of paper, une rame
de papier.

A book, un livre.

A page, un page.

A leaf, un feuillet.

The margin, la marge.

The ink, l'encre.

The inkhorn, l'écrivoire.

Cotton, du coton.

A pen, une plume.

The nib, le bec.

A pen-knife, un canif.

Dust, de la poussière.

Sand, du sable.

A powder-box, un poudrier.

A lesson, une leçon.

Wax, de la cire.

Wafers, des pains à cacheter.

A seal, un cachet.

Table-book, des tablettes.

A ruler, une règle.

A writing, une écriture.

A letter, une lettre.

A syllable, une syllabe.

A word, un mot.

An accent, un accent.

A phrase, une phrase.

A sentence, une sentence.

A period, une période.

An exercise, un thème.

A translation, une traduction.

Verses, des vers.

Prose, de la prose.

A desk, un pupitre.

Parchment, du parchemin.

Paste-board, du carton.

A blot, un pâté.

A pencil, un crayon.

FAMILIAR AND EASY DIALOGUES,
FOR YOUNG BEGINNERS.

I.

S IR, your most humble servant.	Monsieur, votrest très-humble serviteur.
<i>I have the honour to be yours.</i>	J'ai l'honneur d'être le vôtre.
<i>I hope you are well.</i>	Votre santé est-elle bonne ?
<i>To render my duty to you.</i>	A vous rendre mes devoirs.
<i>To obey you.</i>	A vous obéir.
<i>How do they do at your house ?</i>	Comment se porte-t on chez vous ?
<i>They are all well.</i>	Tout le monde s'y porte bien.
<i>Ready to do you any service.</i>	Prêt à vous rendre service.
<i>At your service.</i>	A votre service.
<i>And you, Madam, how do you do ?</i>	Et vous, Madame, comment vous portez-vous ?
<i>Pretty well. Very well.</i>	Passablement bien. Fort bien.
<i>Is all your family well ?</i>	Tout le monde se porte-t-il bien chez vous.
<i>Perfectly well.</i>	Parfaitement bien ?
<i>How does your mother do ? —</i>	Comment se porte madame
<i>Your father—your sister ?</i>	votre mère ? monsieur votre père, mademoiselle votre sœur ?
<i>You do them much honour ; they are all in good health.</i>	Vous leur faites bien de l'honneur ; ils sont tous en bonne santé.
<i>I am very glad of having the pleasure to see you in good health.</i>	Je suis charmé d'avoir le plaisir de vous voir en bonne santé.
<i>And I also.</i>	Et moi pareillement.
<i>I am infinitely obliged to you.</i>	Je vous suis infiniment obligé.
<i>I most humbly thank you.</i>	Je vous remercie très-humblement.
<i>I am much indebted to you.</i>	Je vous suis bien redevable.
<i>I give you a thousand thanks.</i>	Je vous rends mille grâces.

Madam,

46 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>Madam, you jest; I do but my duty.</i>	Madame, vous vous moquez; je ne fais que mon devoir.
<i>Now I think on it, how does your brother do?</i>	A propos, comment se porte Monsieur votre frère?
<i>Exceeding well.</i>	Parfaitement bien.
<i>I am very glad of it.</i>	J'en suis bien aise.
<i>Does he learn French?</i>	Apprend-il le François?
<i>Yes, Sir, and my sister likewise.</i>	Oui, Monsieur, & ma sœur aussi.
<i>Does he go to school?</i>	Va-t-il à l'école.
<i>He goes to the Academy, and my sister is in a boarding-school.</i>	Il va à l'Académie, & ma sœur est dans une école de pension.
<i>I shall be very glad to see them at the next holy-days.</i>	Je serai bien aise de les voir aux vacances prochaines.
<i>Sir, they will be no less glad of having the pleasure to see you.</i>	Monsieur, ils ne seront pas moins bien aises d'avoir le plaisir de vous voir.
<i>Farewell, present my most humble respects to your father and mother.</i>	Adieu, présentez mes très-humbles respects à monsieur votre père & à madame votre mère.
<i>Tell them I will go and see them some day or other.</i>	Dites leur que j'irai les voir un de ces jours.
<i>Well, good b'ye.</i>	{ ah ça, au plaisir. { ah ça, à l'honneur.

II.

<i>Sir, I am overjoyed to meet you here.</i>	Monsieur, je suis ravi de vous rencontrer ici.
<i>Sir, you are very kind.</i>	Monsieur, vous avez bien de la bonté.
<i>How have you done since I had the pleasure to see you?</i>	Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que je n'ai eu le plaisir de vous voir?
<i>Always very well; thank God.</i>	Toujours fort bien; Dieu merci.
<i>My mother is sick.</i>	Ma mère est malade.
<i>Is she! Indeed I am very sorry for it.</i>	Elle est malade! En vérité j'en suis bien fâché.

What

<i>What ails her ?</i>	<i>Qu'est-ce qu'elle a ?</i>
<i>She has the head-ach.</i>	<i>Elle a mal à la tête.</i>
<i>She has the tooth-ach.</i>	<i>Elle a mal aux dents.</i>
<i>She has a fever.</i>	<i>Elle a la fièvre.</i>
<i>She did not go out this fort- night.</i>	<i>Il y a quinze jours, qu'elle n'est pas sortie.</i>
<i>I am very sorry I have not time to see her to-day.</i>	<i>Je suis bien fâché que je n'aie pas le temps de la voir aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>What hinders you ?</i>	<i>Qu'est-ce qui vous empêche ?</i>
<i>Indeed I cannot : I must go to Islington.</i>	<i>En vérité je ne saurois : il faut que j'aille à Islington.</i>
<i>She would be very glad of see- ing you.</i>	<i>Elle seroit bien aise de vous voir.</i>
<i>To-morrow, without fail, I shall have that honour.</i>	<i>Demain, sans faute, j'aurai cet honneur-là.</i>
<i>I am very sorry to hear she is ill.</i>	<i>Je suis bien fâché d'appren- dre qu'elle se porte mal.</i>
<i>Do not fail to call to-morrow.</i>	<i>Ne manquez pas de venir de- main.</i>
<i>No, no ; I will not fail.</i>	<i>Non, non ; je n'y manque- rai pas.</i>
<i>I rely on you.</i>	<i>Je compte sur vous.</i>
<i>You may rely on me.</i>	<i>Vous pouvez compter sur moi.</i>
<i>Farewell ; I will tell her.</i>	<i>Adieu ; je lui dirai.</i>

III.

<i>Let us speak nothing else but French.</i>	<i>Ne parlons que François.</i>
<i>I agree to it ; it is the best means to learn a language.</i>	<i>J'y consens ; c'est le meilleur moyen d'apprendre une langue.</i>
<i>Will ; let us begin.</i>	<i>Hé bien ; commençons.</i>
<i>Do you speak French ?</i>	<i>Parlez vous François ?</i>
<i>I speak it a little.</i>	<i>Je le parle un peu.</i>
<i>French is a very useful lan- guage.</i>	<i>Le François est une langue fort utile.</i>
<i>It is now-a-days the universal language.</i>	<i>C'est aujourd'hui la langue universelle.</i>

28 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

The French tongue is very difficult. Le François est fort difficile.

The English is still more so. L'Anglois l'est encore davantage.

Are you very well versed in the French tongue? Etes-vous bien savant dans la langue François?

Not much; I do but begin. Pas trop; je ne fais que de commencer.

Do you understand what you read? Comprenez-vous ce que vous lisez?

I understand better than I can speak. Je comprends mieux que je ne parle.

I do not wonder at it; it is always easier to understand a language than to speak it. Je ne m'en étonne pas; il est toujours plus facile de comprendre une langue que de la parler.

Who teaches you French? Qui est-ce qui vous enseigne le François.

It is master A. C'est Monsieur A.

I know him; he is a very able man. Je le connois; c'est un fort habile homme.

How many times a week does he attend you. Combien de leçons vous donne-t-il par semaine?

As often as I am at leisure. Aussi souvent que j'ai le temps.

Almost every day. Presque tous les jours.

How long have you been learning French? Combien y a-t-il que vous apprenez le François?

Six months. Six mois.

Indeed you have made a great progress. En vérité vous avez fait de grands progrès.

Sir, you encourage me to make greater ones. Monsieur, vous m'encouragez d'en faire de plus grands.

You must always speak French. Il faut toujours parler François.

I am afraid of making blunders. J'ai peur de faire des fautes.

They would laugh at me. On se moqueroit de moi.

Not at all; do not be afraid. Point du tout; ne craignez pas.

IV.

- Where are you going?* Où allez-vous?
I am going to the Park, to church, to the play, to Greenwich, to Islington, &c. Je vais au Parc, à l'église, à la comédie, à Greenwich, à Islington, &c.
Where do you come from? D'où venez-vous?
I come from the Park, from church, from the play, from Greenwich, from Islington, &c. Je viens du Parc, de l'église, de la comédie, de Greenwich, d'Islington, &c.
Was the king at the play? Le roi étoit-il à la comédie?
Yes, and the queen likewise. Oui, & la reine aussi.
How do you like the English language? Comment agréez-vous l'Anglois?
The English tongue is very difficult for Frenchman to learn. L'Anglois est fort difficile aux François.
Do you learn Latin? Apprenez-vous le Latin?
I have been learning it these two years. Il y a deux ans que je l'apprends.
What do you think of the Latin? Que pensez-vous du Latin?
Sir, I think that the Latin is more difficult than French. Monsieur, je pense que le Latin est plus difficile que le François.
You are in the right. Vous avez raison.
What French authors do you read? Quels auteurs François lisez-vous?
I read the adventures of Télémaque, Gil Blas, the age of Louis XIV, the history of Charles XII, king of Sweden. Je lis les aventures de Télémaque, Gil Blas, le siècle de Louis XIV, l'histoire de Charles XII, roi de Suède.
Do not you read sometimes La Fontaine's fables? Ne lisez-vous pas quelque fois les fables de La Fontaine.
Yes, Sir, my master told me it was the best author for fables. Oui, Monsieur, mon maître m'a dit, que c'étoit le meilleur auteur pour les fables.
What do you learn by heart? Qu'apprenez-vous par cœur?
I learn the articles, the pronouns, the verbs, &c. J'apprends les articles, les pronoms, les verbes, &c.

50 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

You pronounce the French very well. Vous prononcez fort bien le François.
I take a great deal of pains. Je prends beaucoup de peine.
Nothing is to be got without pains. On n'a rien sans peine.

V.

Is it true? Est-il vrai?
Yes, it is true. Oui, il est vrai.
Do you believe it? Le croyez-vous?
It is but too true. Il n'est que trop vrai.
Believe me on my word. Croyez-moi sur ma parole.
I would not tell you a lye for all the gold in the world. Je ne voudrois pas vous dire un mensonge pour tout l'or du monde.
Did you see it? L'avez-vous vu?
Why did not you tell it me? Pourquoi ne me l'avez-vous pas dit?
I can assure you. Je puis vous assurer.
I believe you. Je vous crois.
Do you speak in earnest? Parlez-vous sérieusement?
I speak in earnest. Je parle sérieusement.
Well, let it be so. Hé bien, à la bonne heure.
I will not oppose it. Je ne m'y opposerai pas.
That is not true. Cela n'est pas vrai.
You are mistaken. Vous vous trompez.
Did you guess it? L'avez-vous deviné?
Who told it you? Qui est-ce qui vous l'a dit?
It is somebody you know. C'est quelqu'un que vous connoissez.
Are you certain of it? Êtes-vous sûr de cela?
You may be mistaken. Vous pouvez vous tromper.
I do not believe I am mistaken. Je ne crois pas que je me trompe.
There is no such thing. Il n'y a rien de cela.
Who doubts it? Qui est-ce qui en doute?
I will never doubt of it. Je n'en douterai jamais.
There is no doubt of it. Il n'y a point de doute.
I will lay any thing you please. Je gagerois tout ce qu'il vous plaira.
I never lay any wager. Je ne fais jamais de gageure.

When

<i>When did you see him, or her ?</i>	Quand l'avez-vous vu or vue ?
<i>When did you see them ?</i>	Quand les avez-vous vus ?
<i>I saw him last week.</i>	Je le vis la semaine passée.
<i>I saw her last month.</i>	Je la vis le mois passé.
<i>I did not see them.</i>	Je ne les ai pas vus.
<i>What do you say ?</i>	Que dites-vous ?
<i>I said nothing at all.</i>	Je n'ai rien dit du tout.
<i>I heard it.</i>	Je l'ai ouï dire.
<i>Do not believe such a story.</i>	Ne croyez pas un tel conte.
<i>I do not believe it.</i>	Je ne le crois pas.
<i>When did you hear it ?</i>	Quand l'avez-vous ouï dire ?
<i>To-day, yesterday, the day before yesterday.</i>	Aujourd'hui, hier, avant-hier.
<i>Will you tell it him ?</i>	Le lui direz-vous ?
<i>I will never tell it him.</i>	Je ne le lui dirai jamais.

VI.

<i>Do you chuse to drink a dish of tea ?</i>	Souhaitez-vous de boire une tasse de thé ?
<i>Sir, I am much obliged to you ; I never drink any.</i>	Monsieur, je vous fais très-obligé ; je n'en bois jamais.
<i>What ! you never drink tea ?</i>	Quoi ! vous ne buvez jamais du thé ?
<i>Perhaps you like coffee better ?</i>	Peut-être que vous aimez mieux le café ?
<i>Do you know any news ?</i>	Savez-vous quelque nouvelle ?
<i>I know none worth your while.</i>	Je n'en fais point qui soit digne de vous être rapportée.
<i>There is no talk of any thing.</i>	On ne parle de rien.
<i>When do you expect him ?</i>	Quand l'attendez-vous ?
<i>Did you ever know him ?</i>	L'avez-vous jamais connu ?
<i>I know him by reputation.</i>	Je le connois de réputation.
<i>Do you remember it ?</i>	Vous en souvenez-vous ?
<i>No, Sir, I do not remember it.</i>	Non, Monsieur, je ne m'en souviens pas.
<i>I have a very bad memory.</i>	J'ai la mémoire fort mauvaise.
<i>You forget easily.</i>	Vous oubliez aisément.
<i>Will you take a little walk ?</i>	Voulez-vous faire une petit tour de promenade ?

<i>With all my heart.</i>	De tout mon cœur.
<i>Where shall we go ?</i>	Où irons-nous ?
<i>Let us go into the Park ; we shall see the king there.</i>	Allons au Parc ; nous y verrons le roi.
<i>At what o'clock is he to be seen ?</i>	A quelle heure peut-on le voir ?
<i>About twelve o'clock.</i>	Vers midi.
<i>I should be very glad of seeing him.</i>	Je serois bien aise de le voir.
<i>He is a very handsome prince.</i>	C'est un fort beau prince.
<i>I shall be glad of seeing the queen likewise : every body speaks well of her.</i>	Je serai bien aise de voir la reine aussi : tout le monde en dit du bien.
<i>Did you ever see the prince of Wales ?</i>	Avez-vous jamais vu le prince de Galles ?
<i>They say he is an accomplished prince.</i>	On dit que c'est un prince accompli.

VII.

<i>It is very fine weather.</i>	Il fait fort beau temps.
<i>Do you believe it will rain to-day ?</i>	Croyez-vous qu'il pleuve aujourd'hui ?
<i>I do not believe it will cease to rain all the day long.</i>	Je ne crois pas que la pluie cesse d'aujourd'hui.
<i>The sky is very clear and serene.</i>	Le ciel est fort clair & serein.
<i>We are in the best season now.</i>	Nous sommes dans la meilleure saison à présent.
<i>What season do you like best ?</i>	Quelle saison aimez-vous davantage ?
<i>The summer is the most agreeable of all the seasons.</i>	L'été est la plus agréable de toutes les saisons.
<i>It is sometimes very cold in the spring.</i>	Il fait quelquefois fort froid au printemps.
<i>I do not like winter at all.</i>	Je n'aime pas l'hiver du tout.
<i>Do not you go to the play ?</i>	N'allez-vous pas à la comédie ?
<i>I am to go thither this evening.</i>	Je dois y aller ce soir.
<i>There is a new play.</i>	Il y a une nouvelle comédie.
<i>There will be a great abundance of people.</i>	Il y aura un grand concours de monde.
<i>I have a mind to go thither likewise.</i>	J'ai envie d'y aller aussi.

Do :

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 53

<i>Do : I shall be very glad of</i>	<i>Venez : je serai bien aise</i>
<i>having the pleasure to ac-</i>	<i>d'avoir le plaisir de vous</i>
<i>company you thither.</i>	<i>y accompagner.</i>
<i>Stay a little ; I will be with</i>	<i>Attendez un peu ; je suis à</i>
<i>you in an instant.</i>	<i>vous dans l'instant.</i>
<i>Do your business ; I will stay</i>	<i>Faites vos affaires ; je vous</i>
<i>for you.</i>	<i>attendrai.</i>
<i>Now, I am ready.</i>	<i>A présent, je suis prêt.</i>
<i>Let us go.</i>	<i>Allons.</i>

VIII.

<i>What o'clock is it ?</i>	<i>Quelle heure est-il ?</i>
<i>What o'clock do you believe it</i>	<i>Quelle heure croyez-vous</i>
<i>is ?</i>	<i>qu'il soit ?</i>
<i>I believe it is not yet late.</i>	<i>Je crois qu'il n'est pas en-</i>
	<i>core tard.</i>
<i>Guess.</i>	<i>Devinez.</i>
<i>Nine o'clock.</i>	<i>Neuf heures.</i>
<i>It is past ten o'clock.</i>	<i>Il est dix heures passées.</i>
<i>It is a quarter past ten.</i>	<i>Il est dix heures & un quart.</i>
<i>It is half an hour past ten.</i>	<i>Il est dix heures & demie.</i>
<i>It is three quarters past ten.</i>	<i>Il est onze heures moins un</i>
	<i>quart.</i>
<i>Indeed, I did not think it was</i>	<i>En vérité, je ne croyois pas</i>
<i>so late.</i>	<i>qu'il fût si tard.</i>
<i>Time goes away swiftly.</i>	<i>Le temps s'écoule avec ra-</i>
	<i>pidité.</i>
<i>One is never dull in good com-</i>	<i>On ne s'ennuye jamais en</i>
<i>pany.</i>	<i>bonne compagnie.</i>
<i>Let us go and take a walk into</i>	<i>Allons faire un tour de pro-</i>
<i>the garden.</i>	<i>menade au jardin.</i>
<i>With all my heart.</i>	<i>De tout mon cœur.</i>
<i>Have you fine flowers in your</i>	<i>Avez-vous de belles fleurs</i>
<i>garden ?</i>	<i>dans votre jardin ?</i>
<i>Very fine ones.</i>	<i>De fort belles.</i>
<i>Will you give me leave to ga-</i>	<i>Me donnerez-vous permis-</i>
<i>ther some ?</i>	<i>sion d'en cueillir ?</i>
<i>You may gather as many as you</i>	<i>Vous en pouvez cueillir au-</i>
<i>please.</i>	<i>tant qu'il vous plaira.</i>
<i>Do you chuse pears, apples,</i>	<i>Souhaitez-vous des poires,</i>
<i>cherries, &c ?</i>	<i>des pommes, des cerises,</i>
	<i>&c ?</i>

54. *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I am not fond of fruit.

Je ne suis pas grand amateur de fruit.

Let us go home; it is almost dinner-time. Allons au logis; il est presque temps de dîner.

Are you hungry?

Avez-vous faim?

Have you a good appetite?

Avez-vous bon appétit?

I do not know if I shall be able to eat a dinner; I breakfasted very heartily. Je ne sais pas si je pourrai dîner; j'ai fort bien déjeuné.

One gets a stomach by eating. L'appétit vient en mangeant.

IX.

Let us sit at table.

Alléons-nous à table.

Is the dinner ready?

Le dîner est-il prêt?

The meat is upon the table.

On a servi.

Sir, you make ceremonies; pray, do not make any. Monsieur, vous faites des cérémonies; de grâce, n'en faites point.

What do you chuse to have?

Que souhaitez-vous?

What you please.

Ce qu'il vous plaira.

How do you like this roast meat? Comment trouvez-vous ce rôti?

It is exceeding good and very tender. Il est excellent & fort tendre.

Sir, if you are dry, call for some drink. Monsieur, si vous avez soif, demandez à boire.

You do not eat.

Vous ne mangez pas.

I beg your pardon; I eat very heartily. Je vous demande pardon; je mange de bon appétit.

That is all we have.

C'est tout ce que nous avons.

There is no need of any thing else. Il ne faut rien de plus.

I invited you to dinner only to enjoy your good company. Je ne vous ai invité à dîner que pour jouir de votre bonne compagnie.

What do you chuse to drink? Que souhaitez-vous de boire?

Sir, to your health.

Monsieur, à votre santé.

Madam, I have the honour to drink to your health. Madame, j'ai l'honneur de boire à votre santé.

To all that please you.

A tout ce qui vous fait plaisir.

Sir,

<i>Sir, it is the pleasure of seeing you.</i>	Monsieur, c'est celui de vous voir.
<i>Shall I help you to a little bit of the leg of mutton ?</i>	Vous servirai-je un petit morceau de gigot ?
<i>I am infinitely obliged to you ; I eat enough.</i>	Je vous suis infiniment obligé ; j'ai mangé suffisamment.
<i>No more.</i>	Pas davantage.
<i>What shall we do after dinner ?</i>	Que ferons-nous après dîner ?
<i>What the ladies please.</i>	Ce qu'il plaira à ces dames.

X.

<i>We will have a holy-day to-morrow.</i>	Nous aurons demain congé.
<i>Shew me your exercise.</i>	Montrez-moi votre thème.
<i>I will shew it you after breakfast.</i>	Je vous le montrerai après déjeuner.
<i>Who took my inkhorn ?</i>	Qui est-ce qui a pris mon écritoire ?
<i>Give me my penknife.</i>	Donnez-moi mon canif.
<i>I did not see it.</i>	Je ne l'ai pas vu.
<i>Do not blot your paper.</i>	Ne faites point de pâtés.
<i>Who has got some wafers ?</i>	Qui est-ce qui a des pains à cacheter ?
<i>Come, I will give you some.</i>	Venez, je vous en donnerai.
<i>They make a great deal of noise there.</i>	On fait bien du bruit par-là.
<i>Sit down in your place, and be quiet.</i>	Asseyez-vous à votre place & soyez tranquille.
<i>Indeed, I do not speak a word.</i>	En vérité, je ne dis pas un mot.
<i>Learn your lesson.</i>	Apprenez votre leçon.
<i>I know it perfectly well.</i>	Je la fais parfaitement bien.
<i>Will you be pleased to make me a pen ?</i>	Vous plaît-il de me tailler une plume.
<i>This is good for nothing at all.</i>	Celle-ci ne vaut rien du tout.
<i>Make your pens yourself.</i>	Taillez vos plumes vous-même.
<i>Why is your exercise so ill written ?</i>	Pourquoi votre thème est-il si mal écrit ?
<i>That paper stinks.</i>	C'est du papier qui boit.

56 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>It is wet ; you must dry it near the fire.</i>	Il est humide ; il faut le sécher près du feu.
<i>What is the French for . . . ?</i>	Quel est le François de . . . ?
<i>How do you say in French . . . ?</i>	Comment dit-on en François . . . ?
<i>Why do not you shut the door ?</i>	Pourquoi ne fermez-vous pas la porte ?
<i>I found it open.</i>	Je l'ai trouvé ouverte.
<i>Your stockings have holes in them.</i>	Vos bas sont troués.
<i>I will get them mended.</i>	Je les ferai raccommoder.
<i>I did not mind it when I put them on.</i>	Je n'y ai pas pris garde quand je les ai mis.
<i>Tie your garters ; your stockings are about your heels.</i>	Attachez vos jarrettières ; vos bas sont ravalés.
<i>Now, come and say your lesson.</i>	A présent, venez dire votre leçon.
<i>I have but two words to write.</i>	Je n'ai que deux mots à écrire.
<i>Give me leave to go out.</i>	Donnez-moi la permission de sortir.
<i>Go, and come back presently.</i>	Allez & revenez dans l'instant.
<i>I lost my pencil.</i>	J'ai perdu mon crayon.
<i>You lose every thing.</i>	Vous perdez tout.
<i>You do not take care of any thing.</i>	Vous ne prenez garde à rien.
<i>Somebody took it from me.</i>	Quelqu'un me l'a pris.
<i>Look for it.</i>	Cherchez-le.
<i>I looked every-where.</i>	J'ai cherché par-tout.
<i>Lend me your book.</i>	Prêtez-moi votre livre.
<i>I want it myself.</i>	J'en ai besoin moi-même.
<i>Do not push me ; I cannot write.</i>	Ne me poussez pas, je ne saurois écrire.
<i>Who shakes the table ?</i>	Qui est-ce qui remue la table ?
<i>I did not do it on purpose.</i>	Je ne l'ai pas fait exprès.
<i>Well, let us see.</i>	Ah ça, voyons.

XI.

<i>It is time to go to bed.</i>	Il est temps de s'aller coucher.
<i>It grows late.</i>	Il se fait tard.
<i>I never go to bed so early.</i>	Je ne me couche jamais de si bonne heure.

<i>At what o'clock do you rise ?</i>	A quelle heure vous levez-vous ?
<i>I have no fixed hour.</i>	Je n'ai point d'heure fixe.
<i>You may sit up as long as you please ; for my part, I am going to bed.</i>	Vous pouvez veiller tant qu'il vous plaira ; pour moi, je m'en vais aller coucher.
<i>I am used to go to bed betimes.</i>	J'ai coutume de me coucher de bonne heure.
<i>Light a candle.</i>	Allumez une chandelle.
<i>Where are my slippers ?</i>	Où sont mes pantoufles ?
<i>I am going to fetch them.</i>	Je m'en vais les aller chercher.
<i>Snuff the candle.</i>	Mouchez la chandelle.
<i>Draw the curtains.</i>	Tirez les rideaux.
<i>Do not fail to wake me.</i>	Ne manquez pas de m'éveiller.
<i>I will come sooner perhaps than you chuse.</i>	Je viendrai peut-être plutôt que vous ne voudriez.
<i>No ; do not be afraid.</i>	Non ; n'ayez pas peur.
<i>Gentlemen and ladies, I wish you good night.</i>	Messieurs & mesdames, je vous souhaite le bon soir.
<i>Sir, or Madam, I wish you a good night's rest.</i>	Monsieur, ou Madame, je vous souhaite un bon repos.

XII.

<i>What ! you are a-bed still ?</i>	Quoi ! vous êtes encore au lit ?
<i>Do you sleep ?</i>	Dormez-vous ?
<i>No ; I am awake.</i>	Non ; je suis éveillé.
<i>You awake me too early ; it is very dark yet.</i>	Vous m'éveillez de trop grand matin ; il fait encore fort sombre.
<i>Your curtains are drawn ; you do not see the day-light.</i>	Vos rideaux sont tirés ; vous ne voyez pas la clarté du jour.
<i>How did you sleep this night ?</i>	Comment avez-vous dormi cette nuit ?
<i>I did not sleep a wink all the night long.</i>	Je n'ai pas fermé l'œil de toute la nuit.
<i>No matter ; I will get up presently.</i>	N'importe ; je me leverai dans l'instant.

58 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>I am going to bid the servant make a fire.</i>	<i>Je m'en vais dire au domestique de faire du feu.</i>
<i>Bring me water; I must wash my face, my mouth, and my hands.</i>	<i>Apportez-moi de l'eau; il faut que je me lave le visage, la bouche & les mains</i>
<i>Where are my shoes?</i>	<i>Où sont mes souliers?</i>
<i>They are at the door.</i>	<i>Ils sont à la porte.</i>
<i>Are they clean?</i>	<i>Sont-ils propres?</i>
<i>Give me my silk stockings.</i>	<i>Donnez-moi mes bas de soie.</i>
<i>Somebody knocks at the door; go and see who it is.</i>	<i>On frappe à la porte; allez voir qui c'est.</i>
<i>I am not yet ready to go out.</i>	<i>Je ne suis pas encore prêt à sortir.</i>
<i>Take care to keep a good fire in the parlour.</i>	<i>Ayez soin d'entretenir un bon feu dans la salle.</i>
<i>Tell Mr. A. I am going down immediately.</i>	<i>Allez dire à Mr. A. que je vais descendre sur le champ.</i>
<i>Sir, I am overjoyed to see you in good health.</i>	<i>Monfieur, je suis ravi de vous voir en bonne santé.</i>
<i>I am sorry to have made you stay so long.</i>	<i>Je suis fâché de vous avoir fait attendre si longtemps.</i>
<i>Not at all, you jest.</i>	<i>Point du tout, vous vous moquez,</i>
<i>Let us go and take a turn.</i>	<i>Allons faire un tour de promenade.</i>

P A R T II.

CHAP. I.

A Short Analysis of the Parts of Speech.

IN the French Tongue are nine parts of speech : The ARTICLE, the NOUN, the PRONOUN, the VERB, the PARTICIPLE, the ADVERB, the PREPOSITION, the CONJUNCTION, and the INTERJECTION.

1. The ARTICLE shews the object or thing : as, *le, la, les*. It serves to shew the gender, number, and different states of a noun. They commonly reckon two sorts of articles ; the one called definite, the other indefinite.

The definite Article restrains the thing spoken of to some particular object, or in an universal sense, as, *le ciel, la terre, les hommes*.

The indefinite Article restrains the object to one or several in an unlimited sense ; as, *un, M. une, F. du, M. de la, F.* for the singular ; and, for the plural, *des, or de* before an adjective, and signifies some, which word is seldom expressed in English.

2. The NOUN shews the name of the object or thing ; as, *le cheval, la vache, les lapins*.

Of Nouns some are substantives, and some adjectives.

A Substantive is a word which by itself signifies a thing ; as, *le ciel, la terre, les éléments*.

An Adjective marks the quality of a thing ; as, *blanc, noir, rouge*.

Five particulars are to be observed in Substantives ; the article, the gender, the number, the case, and the declension.

The gender is either masculine or feminine. There is no neuter in the French tongue.

60 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

The masculine has before it, in the nominative case, the definite article *le*, or the indefinite *un*.

The feminine has in the same case the definite article *la*, or the indefinite *une*.

The number is either singular or plural.

The singular signifies one thing; the plural more than one.

The case signifies the different states, or the several circumstances of a noun, when the articles or prepositions are used before it.

Each number has six cases; the nominative, the genitive, the dative, the accusative, the vocative, and the ablative.

The nominative and accusative in nouns are both alike; having before them the definite article *le*, or the indefinite *un*, if the noun be masculine; and the definite *la*, or the indefinite *une*, if the noun be feminine.

Plurals, whether masculine or feminine, admit the article *les*, or the indefinite article *des*, or *de*, as above.

The genitive and the ablative are both alike; having before them the definite article *du*, if the noun be masculine, and begins with a consonant; but if the noun begins with a vowel, or be feminine, the definite article *de la* is used; or the indefinite *d'un*, if the noun be masculine; *d'une*, if feminine.

In the plural, whether masculine or feminine, *des* is always used for the definite article, and *de* for the indefinite.

The dative is preceded by the definite article *au*, if the noun be masculine, and begins with a consonant; but if it begins with a vowel, or is feminine, the article *à la* is used.

In the plural, whether masculine or feminine, *aux* is used for the definite article, and *à des* for the indefinite.

The vocative is the same with the nominative; it is sometimes preceded by the particle *o*.

The declension is the representation of the noun in all its cases, together with its article or preposition.

3. The PRONOUN supplies the place of a noun, and removes the confusion arising from a frequent repetition: a. *j'ai vu mon frère, il étoit fort malade*, instead of *mon frère étoit fort malade*; I saw my brother, he was very sick, instead of my brother was very sick. Pronouns

Pronouns are of six kinds, viz. personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, and improper or indefinite.

The personal pronoun is used instead of the name of a person; as, *je, tu, il, m. elle, f.* for the singular; *moi, vous, ils, m. elles, f.* for the plural.

The possessive pronouns mark possession, they are of two sorts, conjunctive and absolute.

The conjunctive pronouns are used only with substantives: as, *mon, ma, mes; ton, ta, tes; son, sa, ses; notre, nos; votre, vos; leur, leurs.*

The absolute pronouns are used by themselves, their substantives being understood; as, *le mien, la mienne; les miens, les miennes; le tien, la tienne; les tiens, les tiennes; le sien, la sienne; les siens, les siennes; le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres; le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres; le leur, la leur, les leurs.*

The demonstrative pronouns are used to particularise persons or things, as if pointed at by the finger.

The relative pronouns refer to persons or things spoken of in the former part of a sentence.

The interrogative pronouns are used in asking questions.

The indefinite pronouns are used in a vague sense; as, *tout, quelque, chaque, &c.*

4. The VERB shews the action or passion of the object; as, *Jean aime, Jean est aimé; John loves, John is loved.*

Verbs are divided, first, into regular and irregular, personal and impersonal.

When a verb follows the rule of it's conjugation, it is called regular; but, if it deviates from it, it is called irregular.

Personal verbs are those which are conjugated with the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, elle, &c.*

Impersonal verbs, are those which are conjugated only in the third person singular with the pronoun *il*.

Secondly, verbs are divided into active, passive, neuter, and reflected.

The active verb marks the action of it's subject, or nominative case; and makes good sense with the accusative of it's object, or the thing on which it acts: as, *je mange*

60 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

The masculine has before it, in the nominative case, the definite article *le*, or the indefinite *un*.

The feminine has in the same case the definite article *la*, or the indefinite *une*.

The number is either singular or plural.

The singular signifies one thing; the plural more than one.

The case signifies the different states, or the several circumstances of a noun, when the articles or prepositions are used before it.

Each number has six cases; the nominative, the genitive, the dative, the accusative, the vocative, and the ablative.

The nominative and accusative in nouns are both alike; having before them the definite article *le*, or the indefinite *un*, if the noun be masculine; and the definite *la*, or the indefinite *une*, if the noun be feminine.

Plurals, whether masculine or feminine, admit the article *les*, or the indefinite article *des*, or *de*, as above.

The genitive and the ablative are both alike; having before them the definite article *du*, if the noun be masculine, and begins with a consonant; but if the noun begins with a vowel, or be feminine, the definite article *de la* is used; or the indefinite *d'un*, if the noun be masculine; *d'une*, if feminine.

In the plural, whether masculine or feminine, *des* is always used for the definite article, and *de* for the indefinite.

The dative is preceded by the definite article *au*, if the noun be masculine, and begins with a consonant; but if it begins with a vowel, or is feminine, the article *à la* is used.

In the plural, whether masculine or feminine, *aux* is used for the definite article, and *à des* for the indefinite.

The vocative is the same with the nominative; it is sometimes preceded by the particle *o*.

The declension is the representation of the noun in all it's cases, together with it's article or preposition.

3. The PRONOUN supplies the place of a noun, and removes the confusion arising from a frequent repetition: as. *j'ai vu mon frère, il étoit fort malade*, instead of *mon frère étoit fort malade*; I saw my brother; he was very sick, instead of *my brother was very sick*. Pronouns

Pronouns are of six kinds, viz. personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, and improper or indefinite.

The personal pronoun is used instead of the name of a person; as, *je, tu, il, m. elle, f.* for the singular; *moi, vous, ils, m. elles, f.* for the plural.

The possessive pronouns mark possession, they are of two sorts, conjunctive and absolute.

The conjunctive pronouns are used only with substantives: as, *mon, ma, mes; ton, ta, tes; son, sa, ses; notre, nos; votre, vos; leur, leurs.*

The absolute pronouns are used by themselves, their substantives being understood; as, *le mien, la mienne; les miens, les miennes; le tien, la tienne; les tiens, les tiennes; le sien, la sienne; les siens, les siennes; le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres; le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres; le leur, la leur, les leurs.*

The demonstrative pronouns are used to particularise persons or things, as if pointed at by the finger.

The relative pronouns refer to persons or things spoken of in the former part of a sentence.

The interrogative pronouns are used in asking questions.

The indefinite pronouns are used in a vague sense; as, *tout, quelque, chaque, &c.*

4. The VERB shews the action or passion of the object; as, *Jean aime, Jean est aimé; John loves, John is loved.*

Verbs are divided, first, into regular and irregular, personal and impersonal.

When a verb follows the rule of it's conjugation, it is called regular; but, if it deviates from it, it is called irregular.

Personal verbs are those which are conjugated with the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, elle, &c.*

Impersonal verbs, are those which are conjugated only in the third person singular with the pronoun *il*.

Secondly, verbs are divided into active, passive, neuter, and reflected.

The active verb marks the action of it's subject, or nominative case; and makes good sense with the accusative of it's object, or the thing on which it acts: as, *je mange*

mange du pain, I eat bread; *tu bois de la bière*, thou drinkest beer; *il chante un chanson*, he sings a song.

The passive verb marks the passion or suffering of it's subject: as *je suis aimé*, I am loved; *tu es puni*, thou art punished; *il est banni*, he is banished.

A neuter verb is a word denoting the action of it's subject or nominative, which remains in the subject, and does not with propriety admit an accusative after it: as, *je dors*, I sleep.

The reflexive verbs receive their names from reflecting the action of a subject or nominative on itself; as, *je me brûle*, I burn myself; *il s'aime*, he loves himself.

There are also two auxiliary or helping verbs, *être*, *to be*; and *avoir*, *to have*; these are called auxiliary, from their helping in the conjugation of other verbs.

Four things are to be distinguished in verbs: the mood, the tense, the number, and the person.

The mood expresses the different manners and uses made of a verb positively, conditionally, or in an unspecified manner. There are four moods, infinitive, indicative, subjunctive, and imperative.

The infinitive is the root of verbs; it expresses the action or passion in an indefinite sense, without any particular circumstance of time, number, or person.

The indicative expresses the action or passion in a direct or positive manner, in a time present, past, or future. We shall have a more precise idea of the indicative in comparing it with the subjunctive mood.

The subjunctive is a manner of expressing the action or passion with a modified affirmation or negation, always supposing another verb, which it follows or it belongs to, or some conjunction by which it is governed*.

The imperative expresses the action or passion by commands, prohibitions, desires, &c.

The future tense has sometimes the signification of the imperative mood, when it commands or forbids; as, *tu feras*, thou shalt do.

* The differences between the indicative and the subjunctive are chiefly: 1. The tenses of the subjunctive affirm or deny indirectly, always supposing another verb affirming or denying directly; as in this phrase: I will have you do your duty, *je veux*

thou shalt love the Lord thy God, tu aimeras le Seigneur ton Dieu.

The tenses express the period of time in which an action or passion is, was, or shall be. There are properly three, the present, the past, and the future.

Each tense has two numbers, singular and plural; and each number has three persons.

5. A PARTICIPLE partakes something of the nature of a verb, and something of that of a noun.

6. An ADVERB marks the difference and circumstance of an action or passion.

7. A PREPOSITION is a word placed before those nouns and pronouns which it governs, or before some verbs.

The difference between a preposition and an adverb is: The former has a case after it, the latter never.

8. A CONJUNCTION serves to connect one word with another, and sentences with sentences.

9. An INTERJECTION expresses the motions or passions of the soul, as joy, grief, admiration, &c.

The four last parts of speech are undeclinable.

veux que vous sachiez votre devoir. *Je veux* is a direct affirmation, and independent of any other; whereas *que vous sachiez votre devoir* is but an indirect affirmation, and depending on the first. 2. The tenses of the subjunctive are so depending on the words or conjunctions that are before them, that they cannot be separated from them without having an undetermined sense, nor consequently a simple affirmation. So, if from the foregoing example you take *je veux que*, what follows, *vous sachiez votre devoir*, has no determined sense, and could not be put in the beginning of a phrase; whereas the tenses of the indicative may be separated, and make by themselves, without the help of any conjunction, a clear and determined sense; as, I believe we shall have some rain, *je crois que nous aurons de la pluie*; take away *je crois que*, what follows, *nous aurons de la pluie* has a determined sense, and is understood without any other word.

C H A P. II

Of Genders.

To give rules for knowing the Gender of Substantives would be needless and puzzling: "They are so many," says *Boyer*, "so intricate, and liable to so many exceptions, that the best and easiest way is to learn them in his Royal Dictionary*." And, indeed, rules would be of no advantage to the learner. However, as some Substantives are of the masculine gender in one sense, and of the feminine in another, it will not be amiss to give a list of those.

M A S C U L I N E.

F E M I N I N E.

un aigle †, *an eagle.*les aigles Romaines, *the Roman standard.*un aire, *a nest of a bird of prey.*une aire, *a threshing-floor.*un aune, *an alder-tree.*une aune, *an ell.*un barbe, *a barb (a horse.)*une barbe, *a beard.*un coche, *a public travelling coach.*une coche, *a saw.*un cornette, *a cornet of a troop of horse.*une cornette, *a woman's cor- net.*un couple, *a couple, (two persons united together.)*une couple, *a pair, (two things together.)*un cravate, *a Croatian soldier.*une cravate, *a cravat, or neckcloth.*un écho, *an echo.*Echo, *the nymph Echo.*un espace, *a space, a distance.*une espace, *a space used by printers.*un enseigne, *an ensign.*une enseigne, *a post-sign.*un exemple, *an example.*une exemple, *a copy for writing.*le fin d'une affaire, *the main or chief point of a business.*la fin d'une affaire, *the end of a business.*

* According to the FRENCH ACADEMY's manner of pronouncing the letters of the Alphabet, they are all now of the masculine gender.

† Mr. Chambaud in his *ÆSOP'S FABLES*, and Mr. Hudson in the same, make this word feminine. It is always masculine; and such is the FRENCH ACADEMY's decision.

M A S C U L I N E.

F E M I N I N E.

un foret, <i>a piercer.</i>	une forêt, <i>a forest.</i>
le foudre de Jupiter, <i>Jupiter's thunder-bolt.</i>	la foudre, <i>thunder.</i>
un garde, <i>one of the guards.</i>	une garde, <i>a guard, also a sick person's nurse.</i>
le grêse, <i>the rolls,</i>	une grêse, <i>a slip of a tree.</i>
un livre, <i>a book.</i>	une livre, <i>a pound.</i>
le gueule, <i>the gules (in heraldry.)</i>	la gueule, <i>the mouth of a dog, cat, lion, &c.</i>
un hâle, <i>drying weather.</i>	une halle, <i>a market-hall.</i>
un quatrième, <i>the fourth part of something.</i>	une quatrième, <i>a sequence of four cards at pique.</i>
un lis, <i>a lilly.</i>	la Lis, <i>a river in Flanders.</i>
un loutre, <i>a sort of bat.</i>	une loutre, <i>an otter.</i>
un manœuvre, <i>a labourer.</i>	la manœuvre, <i>the tackling of a ship, and the working of it.</i>
un manche, <i>a handle.</i>	une manche, <i>a sleeve.</i>
un mémoire, <i>a memorandum.</i>	la mémoire, <i>memory.</i>
un mestre de camp, <i>a colonel of horse.</i>	la mestre de camp, <i>the first company of a regiment of horse.</i>
un mode, <i>a mood, (a philosophical term.)</i>	une mode, <i>a fashion.</i>
un moule, <i>a mould.</i>	une moule, <i>a muscle.</i>
un mousse, <i>a cabin-boy.</i>	de la mousse, <i>moss.</i>
un navire, <i>a ship.</i>	la navire, <i>the ship, (a term of heraldry.)</i>
un office, <i>an office or business.</i>	une office, <i>a battery.</i>
le grand œuvre, <i>the philosopher's stone.</i>	une œuvre de piété, <i>a work of piety.</i>
un page, <i>a young footman.</i>	une page, <i>a page of a book.</i>
un palme, <i>a hand's-breadth.</i>	une palme, <i>a branch of a palm-tree.</i>
un parallèle, <i>a comparison.</i>	une parallèle, <i>a parallel line.</i>
un pendule, <i>a pendulum.</i>	une pendule, <i>a pendulum-clock.</i>
un période, <i>a period (a course, a space.)</i>	une période, <i>a period, (in discourse.)</i>
personne, <i>nobody, any body.</i>	une personne, <i>a person.</i>
un pique, <i>a spade, (at cards.)</i>	une pique, <i>a pike.</i>

66 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

M A S C U L I N E.

F E M I N I N E.

un pivoine, *a gnat-snapper.*

une pivoine, *a piony.*

un poêle, *a stove, a pall.*

une poêle, *a frying-pan.*

un plane, *a plant-tree.*

une plane, *a plane.*

un poste, *a post, an employ-ment.*

la poste, *post, the post-office.*

le pourpre, *the purples.*

la pourpre, *the purple mark of regality, &c.*

d'un beau pourpre, *of a fine purple-colour.*

de la pourpre Tyrienne, *Tyrian purple.*

le réclame, *the sign to call back a hawk.*

la réclame, *the catch-word.*

un satire, *a satire, a baathen demigod.*

une satire, *a satire in poetry.*

un somme, *a sleep, a nap.*

une somme, *a sum.*

un souris, *a smile.*

une souris, *a mouse.*

un temple, *a church.*

la temple, *the temple.*

un triomphe, *a triumph.*

une triomphe, *trumps at cards.*

un trompette, *a trumpeter.*

une trompette, *a trumpet.*

un tour, *a turn, a trick.*

une tour, *a tower.*

un teneur de livres, *a book-keeper.*

la teneur d'un acte, *the tenor or contents of writing.*

un vase, *a jar, a vessel.*

la vase, *the bottom of the sea.*

un vigogne, *a bat made of a sort of Spanish wool.*

de la vigogne, *a sort of Spanish wool.*

un voile, *a veil.*

une voile, *a sail.*

These following substantives are

Rather M A S C U L I N E.

Rather F E M I N I N E.

amour, *love.*

absinthe, *wormwood.*

amours, *cupids.*

amours, *passions, intrigues.*

bronze, *cast copper.*

alcove, *alcove.*

caque, *cag or barrel.*

épitafe, *epitafis.*

cloaque, *common-sewer, or sink.*

épitaphe, *epitaph.*

comté, *county.*

hymne *, *hymn.*

* According to the FRENCH ACADEMY, this word is feminine, when we speak of hymns in churches; otherwise, it is masculine.

dnché, <i>duchy</i> .	énigme, <i>a riddle</i> .
épisode, <i>episode</i> .	idylle, <i>idyl</i> .
épithalame, <i>epithalamium</i> .	{ anagramme, <i>an anagram</i> .
amulette, <i>an amulet</i> .	{ épigramme, <i>an epigram</i> .
sphinx, <i>sphinx</i> .	orgues †, <i>organs</i> .
orgue, <i>an organ</i> .	parallaxe, <i>parallax</i> .
holocauste, <i>burnt-sacrifice</i> .	thériaque, <i>treacle</i> .
horoscope, <i>horoscope</i> .	horloge, <i>a clock</i> .
	équivoque, <i>an equivocation</i> .

† This word is masculine in the singular, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY.

CHAP. III.

Of the Formation of the Feminine Gender of Adjectives.

GENERAL RULE.

Adjectives take an *e* mute for the formation of their feminine; as, aimé, *aimée*; écrit, *écrite*; constant, *constante*||. ADJECTIVES ending with an *e* mute have no variation in their feminine, without exception; as, admirable, *M. admirable F. aimable, M. aimable, F.*

Other Adjectives form their feminine according to their termination, as in the following *Concise Table*.

Adjectives ending	form their Feminine
in	in
c,	1 che.
f,	ve.
g,	gue,
el, eil, il, ol, ul,	2 elle, eille, ille, olle, ulle,
on,	onne.
ien,	ienne.

EXCEPTIONS.

|| Favori, *favorite*; benin, *benigne*; malin, *maligne*; frais, *fraiche*; épais, *épaisse*.

1. Grec, *Grecque*; Turc, *Turque*; public, *publique*; caduc, *caduque*.

2. Civil, *civile*; subtil, *subtile*; puéril, *puérile*.

3. Vieux

eur, {
 eux, {
 ai, ès, oi,
 ous,
 et, oi,
 eau.
 ou,
 oux,
 aux,

3 euse.

4 aise, eise, osse.

oute.

5 ette, otte.

elle.

olle.

6 ouce.

ausse.

EXCEPTIONS.

3. Vieux, *vieille*; antérieur, postérieur, citérier, ultérieur, intérieur, extérieur, majeur, mineur, supérieur, inférieur, meilleur, follow the general rule.

4. Ras, *rase*; clos, *close*.

5. Secret, *secrète*; complet, *complète*; dévot, *dévoté*.

6. Jaloux, *jalouse*: roux, *rousse*.

N. B. The FRENCH ACADEMY write, first, cru, *rau*; nu, *naked*; vert, *green*; and not crud, nud, verd. Secondly, bénit and béni, *blest*, *holy*, both follow the general rule. Thirdly, tors, and not tort, *twisted*, *wrung*. This adjective makes in it's feminine both *torte* and *torse*; for we say: *une colonne torse*, *de la soie torse*; and popularly we say: *une jambe torte*, *une bouche, torte*, *une gueule torte*.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Formation of the Plural of Nouns.

GENERAL RULE.

Nouns in general form their plural by adding an *s* to the singular; as, homme, *hommes* †.

POLYSYLLABLES ending in *nt* in the singular form their plural by changing the final *t* into *s*: as, enfant, *enfants*; but monosyllables follow the general rule.

Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are alike in both numbers.

EXCEPTIONS.

† Tout makes tous.

NOUNS

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 69

Nouns ending in *ail*, or *al*, change *ail* and *al* into *aux*, in the plural: as, *travail*, *travaux*; *cheval*, *chevaux* ||.

Nouns ending in *au*, *eu*, *eux*, *ieu*, and *ou* have their plural by adding an *x* to their singular §.

N. B. *Ceil* makes *yeux*; *ayeul*, *ayeux*; *gentilhomme*; *gentilshommes*; *monfieur*, *messieurs*; *madame*, *mesdames*; *monfeigneur*, *messeigneurs*; *mon*, *mes*; *ton*, *tes*; *fon*, *ses*; *notre*, *nos* *our*; *votre*, *vos*, *your*; *ciel*, *heaven*, makes *cieux*. However, we say: *des ciels de lit*, testers of beds; *des ciels d'un tableau*, the top of a picture; *des arc-en-ciels*, rainbows.

|| *Ail*, *aux*, *Bal*, *carnaval*, *pal*, *régat*, and proper names ending in *al*, likewise these nouns, *attirail*, *camail*, *détail*, *éventail*, *mail*, *épouvantail*, *gouvernail*, *portail*, *féraïl*, follow the general rule.

§ *Bleu*, *trou*, *clou*, *cou*, *matou*, *licou*, *bibou*, *fou*, and *loup-garou* follow the general rule.

N. B. The FRENCH ACADEMY more commonly write *lois*, *laws*, in the plural.

CHAP. V.

The Declension of Nouns.

As I have hinted, before, the *nominative* in nouns is like the *accusative*, the *genitive* is like the *ablative*; so we shall call the *nominative* the *first case*, the *genitive* the *second case*, and the *dative* the *third case*.

Nouns substantive of the *masculine gender*, and beginning with a *consonant*, are thus declined:

S I N G U L A R.

1st. <i>le</i>	}	<i>livre.</i>	<i>the</i> of or from <i>the</i> to <i>the</i>	}	<i>book.</i>
2d. <i>du</i>					
3d. <i>au</i>					

P L U R A L.

<i>les</i>	}	<i>livres,</i>	<i>the</i> of or from <i>the</i> to <i>the</i>	}	<i>books.</i>
<i>des</i>					
<i>aux</i>					

Nouns

70 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Nouns substantive of the *feminine* gender, and beginning with a *consonant*, are thus declined :

S I N G U L A R.

1st. la	}	table,	of or from the to the	{	table.
2d. de la					
3d. à la					

P L U R A L.

les	}	tables,	of or from the to the	{	tables.
des					
aux					

Nouns substantive of *either* gender, beginning with a *vowel*, or an *b* mute, are thus declined :

S I N G U L A R.

1st. l'	}	homme,	of or from the to the	{	man.
2d. de l'					
3d. à l'					

P L U R A L.

les	}	hommes,	of or from the to the	{	men.
des					
aux					

Nouns substantive of the *masculine* gender, and beginning with a *consonant*, are thus declined with the *indefinite* article :

S I N G U L A R.

1st. un	}	miroir,	of or from a to a	{	looking-glass.
2d. d'un					
3d. à un					

P L U R A L.

des	}	miroirs,	of or from some to some	{	looking-glasses.
de					
à des					

Nouns

Nouns substantive of the *masculine* gender, and beginning with a *vowel*, or an *b* mute, are thus declined :

S I N G U L A R

1st. un	}	accident, <i>of or from an</i>	}	accident.
2d. d'un				
3d. à un				

P L U R A L

des	}	accidens, <i>of or from some</i>	}	accidents.
d'				
à des				

Nouns substantive of the *feminine* gender, and beginning with a *consonant*, thus :

S I N G U L A R

1st. une	}	peine, <i>of or from a</i>	}	pain.
2d. d'une				
3d. à une				

P L U R A L

des	}	peines, <i>of or from some</i>	}	pains.
de				
à des				

Nouns substantive, beginning with a *vowel* or an *b* mute, and of the *feminine* gender, thus :

S I N G U L A R

1st. une	}	aiguille, <i>of or from a</i>	}	needle.
2d. d'une				
3d. à une				

P L U R A L

des	}	aiguilles, <i>of or from some</i>	}	needles.
d'				
à des				

But, in the *plural* number, when a noun substantive of *either* gender is preceded by an *adjective*, beginning with a *consonant*, it is thus declined :

P L U R A L

1st. de	}	malheureux accidens, <i>of some</i>	}	unhappy accidents.
2d. de				
3d. à de				

Before

Before an *adjective* beginning with a *vowel* or an *b* mute thus :

1st. d'	} indignes amis,	of or from ^{some} _{to some}	} unworthy friends.
2d. d'			
3d. à d'			

Proper names of *men, women, cities, villages, &c.* take no article before them ; but in the 2d and 3d cases they take the prepositions *de* and *à* thus :

1st.	} Jean,	of or from _{to}	} John.
2d. de			
3d. à			

1st.	} Nanette,	of or from _{to}	} Nancy.
2d. de			
3d. à			

When they begin with a *vowel*, or an *b* mute, thus :

1st.	} Alexandre,	of or from _{to}	} Alexander.
2d. d'			
3d. à			

1st.	} André,	of or from _{to}	} Andrew.
2d. d'			
3d. à			

Observe : *Some* in English expressed or understood, before a noun, taken in a limited sense, is expressed in French by *du, de la, de l'* for the *singular*, and *des* for the *plural*, or *de* for both genders and numbers, in the following manner.

When the word of the masculine gender begins with a *consonant*, thus :

1st. du	} sel,	of or from ^{some} _{to some}	} salt.
2d. de			
3d. à du			

When the word, either masculine or feminine, begins with a *vowel* or an *b* mute, thus :

1st. de l'	} argent,	of or from ^{some} _{to some}	} money.
2d. d'			
3d. à de l'			

When

When the noun is feminine, thus :

1st. de la	} <i>some</i> <i>of or from some</i> } <i>salad.</i>
2d. de	
3d. à de la	

Before an adjective of either gender or number, thus :

1st. de	} <i>some</i> <i>of or from some</i> } <i>bad bread.</i>
2d. de	
3d. à de	

The plural is the same as the plural of the indefinite article.

CHAP. VI.

Of Pronouns.

THE construction of the pronouns being the most difficult part of our language, I shall here, for perspicuity's sake, nearly follow the denomination which other grammarians have given them, though many of the pronouns may be looked upon as adjectives.

SECTION I.

Of Personal Pronouns.

They are two-fold : conjunctive and disjunctive. The first generally precede the verb; the second commonly follow the verb. The first take neither article nor preposition before them ; the second take in their second case the preposition *de*, and in their third case the preposition *à*.

The Conjunctive Pronouns.

All nouns and pronouns, as we have hinted before, have three cases: the first answering to the Nominative and Accusative; the second to the Genitive and Ablative; the third to the Dative. The three cases of the conjunctive personal pronouns alone, and the three cases of the third

person indeterminate, when they take no preposition before them, do not answer the three cases of other nouns; therefore we shall call the first the Nominative case, the second the Dative case, and the third the Accusative case.

The First Person.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. Je, <i>I,</i>	Nom. nous, <i>we,</i>
Dat. me, <i>to me,</i>	Dat. nous, <i>to us,</i>
Acc. me, <i>me.</i>	Acc. nous, <i>us.</i>

The Second Person.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. tu, <i>thou,</i>	Nom. vous, <i>you,</i>
Dat. te, <i>to thee,</i>	Dat. vous, <i>to you,</i>
Acc. te, <i>thee.</i>	Acc. vous, <i>you.</i>

The Third Person Masculine.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. il, <i>he or it,</i>	Nom. ils, <i>they,</i>
Dat. lui, <i>to him or it,</i>	Dat. leur, <i>to them,</i>
Acc. le, <i>him or it.</i>	Acc. les, <i>them.</i>

The Third Person Masculine.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. elle, <i>she or it,</i>	Nom. elles, <i>they,</i>
Dat. lui, <i>to her or it,</i>	Dat. leur, <i>to them,</i>
Acc. la, <i>her or it.</i>	Acc. les, <i>them.</i>

The Third Person indeterminate.

Nom. on, <i>one, they, or people.</i>
Dat. se, <i>to one's self, himself, herself, itself, themselves, or one another.</i>
Acc. se, <i>one's self, himself, herself, itself, themselves, or one another.</i>

The Third Person supplying and governed.

- 1st. le, *it, him, so.*
- 2d. en, *of him, of her, of it, some, of them, from them, by them, with them.*
- 3d. y, *to it, there, therein, in it, in them, about it, or &c.*

The

The Disjunctive Pronouns.

N. B. Those which have the mark (†) before them are both disjunctive and conjunctive.

The First Person.

SINGULAR.

- 1st. † moi, *I, me,*
2d. de moi, *of or from me,*
3d. à moi, moi, *to me.*

PLURAL.

- 1st. † nous, *we, us,*
2d. de nous, *of or from us,*
3d. à nous, *to us.*

The Second Person.

- 1st. † toi, *thou, thee,*
2d. de toi, *of or from thee,*
3d. à toi, toi, *to thee,*
- 1st. † vous, *you,*
2d. de vous, *of or from you,*
3d. à vous, *to you.*

The Third Person Masculine.

- 1st. † lui, *him, he, or it,*
2d. de lui, *of or from him, or it,*
3d. à lui, *to him, or it.*
- 1st. † eux, *they, them,*
2d. d'eux, *of or from them,*
3d. à eux, *to them.*

The Third Person Feminine.

- 1st. † elle, *she, her, or it.*
2d. d'elle, *of or fr. her, or it,*
3d. à elle, *to her, or it,*
- 1st. † elles, *they, them,*
2d. d'elles, *of or from them*
3d. à elles, *to them.*

The Third Person indeterminate.

- 1st. soi, *one's self, himself, herself, or itself.*
2d. de soi, *of or from one's self, himself, herself, or itself.*
3d. à soi, *to one's self, himself, herself, or itself.*

Note: Their compounds have the same cases as their simples; as,

moi-même, *myself,*
toi-même, *thyself,*
lui-même, *himself,*
elle-même, *herself,*
soi-même, *one's self,*

nous-mêmes, *ourselves,*
vous-mêmes, *yourselves,*
eux-mêmes, } *themselves.*
elles-mêmes, }

SECTION II.

Of Possessive Pronouns.

SING.		PLUR.
Maf.	Fem.	
1st. mon,	ma,	mes, <i>my,</i>
2d. demon,	de ma,	de mes, <i>of or from my,</i>
3d. à mon,	à ma,	à mes, <i>to my.</i>

After the same manner are declined
 ton, ta, tes, *thy.*
 son, sa, ses, *his or her.*
 notre, nos, *our* : votre, vos, *your* : leur, leurs, *their.*

Observe, first, these conjunctive pronouns come always before a noun to which they are joined.

Observe, secondly, the following absolute possessive pronouns, being used by themselves, are declined with the definite article, thus :

SING.		PLUR.
MASC.	FEM.	
1st. le	la	les } miens, <i>mine.</i>
2d. du	mien, de la	des } F. <i>of mine.</i>
3d. au	à la	aux } miennes, <i>to mine.</i>

After the same manner are declined
 le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes, *thine.*
 le sien, la sienne. les siens, les siennes, *his or her's.*
 le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres, *ours.*
 le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres, *yours.*
 le leur, la leur, les leurs, *theirs.*

SECTION III.

Of Demonstrative Pronouns.

SING.	SING.	
MASC.	FEM.	
1st. ce or cet	cette,	<i>this or that,</i>
2d. de ce or cet,	de cette,	<i>of or from this or that,</i>
3d. à ce or cet,	à cette,	<i>to this or that.</i>
		PLUR.

PLUR.	
M. and F.	
1st. ces,	<i>these or those,</i>
2d. de ces,	<i>of or from these,</i>
3d. à ces,	<i>to these.</i>

After the same manner is declined

SING. M. F.	PLUR. M. F.
celui, celle, <i>he or she</i> ;	ceux, celles, <i>those.</i>

N. B. The foregoing demonstrative pronouns are used, speaking of persons or things. *Ceci* and *cela* are used speaking of things only.

1st. ceci,	<i>this,</i>	cela,	<i>that</i>
2d. de ceci,	<i>of or from this,</i>	de cela,	<i>of or from that,</i>
3d. à ceci,	<i>to this.</i>	à cela,	<i>to that.</i>

SECTION IV.

Of Relative Pronouns.

Most Pronouns in French have a relative signification : but those which are properly so called are these following ;

SING. and PLUR.

1st. qui, que,	<i>who, whom, or which,</i>
2d. de qui, or dont,	<i>of whom, or whose,</i>
3d. à qui,	<i>to whom.</i>
1st. quoi,	<i>what,</i>
2d. de quoi, or dont,	<i>of what, or whose,</i>
3d. à quoi,	<i>to what.</i>

SING. MASC. SING. FEM.

1st. le } la	} <i>which,</i>
2d. du } quel, de la	
3d. au } à la	

PLUR. MASC. PLUR. FEM.

1st. les } les	} <i>of which, or whose,</i>
2d. des } quels, des	
3d. aux } aux	

SECTION V.

Of Interrogative Pronouns.

1st. qui,	who, or whom,	que,	what,
2d. de qui,	of or from whom,	de quoi,	of or from what,
3d. à qui,	to whom.	à quoi,	to what.

After the same manner is declined

SING. M.	F.	PLUR. M.	F.	
quel,	quelle,	quels,	quelles,	what,

This pronoun is always followed by a substantive.

SING. MASC.	SING. FEM.	
1st. le	la	{
2d. du	de la	
3d. au	à la	
PLUR. MASC.	PLUR. FEM.	
1st. les	les	{
2d. des	des	
3d. aux	aux	

which,
of or from which,
to which.

SECTION VI.

Of Indefinite Pronouns.

SING.	PLUR.	
MASC. and FEM.	MASC. and FEM.	
1st. quelque,	quelques,	some,
2d. de quelque,	de quelques,	of or from some,
3d. à quelque,	à quelques,	to some.

After the same manner are declined

quelqu'un, quelqu'une, quelques-uns, quelques-unes, *someb.*
 chaque, chacun, chacune, *every.*
 quiconque, qui que ce soit, *whosoever.*
 pas un, aucun, nul, personne, *nobody.*
 rien, *nothing* : peu, *little* : plusieurs, beaucoup, *many.*

SING.

SING. MASC.	SING. FEM.	
1st. l'un l'autre,	l'une l'autre,	{
2d. l'un de l'autre,	l'une de l'autre,	
3d. l'un à l'autre,	l'une à l'autre,	
PLUR. MASC.	PLUR. FEM.	
les uns les autres,	les unes les autres,	{
les uns des autres,	les unes des autres,	
les uns aux autres,	les unes aux autres,	

*one another,
of one another,
to one another.*

SING. MASC.	SING. FEM.	
1st. l'un & l'autre,	l'une & l'autre,	{
2d. de l'un & de l'autre,	de l'une & de l'autre,	
3d. à l'un & à l'autre,	à l'une & à l'autre,	
PLUR. MASC.	PLUR. FEM.	
les uns & les autres,	les unes & les autres,	{
des uns & des autres,	des unes & des autres,	
aux uns & aux autres,	aux unes & aux autres,	

*both,
of or from
both.
to both.*

SING. MASC.	SING. FEM.	
1st. l'un ou l'autre,	l'une ou l'autre,	{
2d. de l'un ou de l'autre,	de l'une ou de l'autre,	
3d. à l'un ou à l'autre,	à l'une ou à l'autre,	
PLUR. MASC.	PLUR. FEM.	
les uns ou les autres,	les unes ou les autres,	{
des uns ou des autres,	des unes ou des autres,	
aux uns ou aux autres,	aux unes ou aux autres,	

*either,
of or from
either.
to either.*

SING. MASC.	SING. FEM.	
1st. ni l'un ni l'autre,	ni l'une ni l'autre,	{
2d. ni de l'un ni de l'autre,	ni de l'une ni de l'autre,	
3d. ni à l'un ni à l'autre,	ni à l'une ni à l'autre,	
PLUR. MASC.	PLUR. FEM.	
ni les uns ni les autres,	ni les unes ni les autres,	{
ni des uns ni des autres,	ni des unes ni des autres,	
ni aux uns ni aux autres,	ni aux unes ni aux autres,	

*neither,
of neither.
to neither.*

C H A P. VII.

Of Verbs.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

1. **A**LL personal verbs are conjugated by the help of these pronouns, *je, tu, il* or *elle*, for the singular, and *nous, vous, ils* or *elles*, for the plural.

2. All reflected verbs are conjugated with these pronouns, *je me, tu te, il se* or *elle se*; *nous nous, vous vous, ils se* or *elles se*; *e*, in *me, te, se*, is omitted, and an apostrophe is put in it's place, when the following word begins with a vowel.

3. All active verbs may become reflected, by putting *se* before the infinitive, when the action may return upon the agent that produces it.

4. Reflected verbs, in a reciprocal sense, are used in the plural only.

5. All neuter and active verbs are conjugated in their compound tenses by the help of the auxiliary *avoir*, likewise the verb *être*.

6. Reflexive and reciprocal verbs are always conjugated in their compound tenses by the help of *être*; also these following verbs, *aller, aborder, arriver, accourir, décider, descendre, entrer, monter, mourir, naître, partir, retourner, sortir, tomber, venir*, and their derivatives, except when some of them are used actively.

7. All the verbs of the first conjugation, wherein an *e* is preceded by a *g*, that *e* is kept through all tenses and moods.

8. All the compound regular and irregular verbs follow the simple, from which they are derived.

9. The terminations of the tense marked thus † are the same in all verbs both regular and irregular.

CONJUGATION

CONJUGATION

Of the auxiliary verb AVOIR, *to have.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

AVOIR, *to have.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

J'ai, *I have,*
tu as, *thou hast,*
il a, *he has.*

PLURAL.

Nous avons, *we have,*
vous avez, *you have,*
ils ont, *they have.*

IMPERFECT †.

J'avois, *I had,*
tu avois, *thou hadst,*
il avoit, *he had.*

Nous avions, *we had,*
vous aviez, *you had,*
ils avoient, *they had.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'eus, *I had,*
tu eus, *thou hadst,*
il eut, *he had.*

Nous eûmes, *we had,*
vous eûtes, *you had,*
ils eurent, *they had.*

FUTURE †.

J'aurai, *I shall or will*
tu auras, *thou shalt*
il aura, *he shall*

} *have.*

Nous aurons, *we shall*
vous aurez, *you shall*
ils auront, *they shall*

} *have.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Aye, *have thou,*
qu'il ait, *let him have,*
qu'elle ait, *let her have.*

PLURAL.

Ayons, *let us have,*
ayez, *have ye, [them have.*
qu'ils or qu'elles aient, *let*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Paye, *I may*
tu ayes, *thou mayest*
il ait, *he may*

} *have.*

PLURAL.

Nous ayons, *we may*
vous ayez, *you may*
ils aient, *they may*

} *have.*

* Or *elle*, she, in the third person singular of all verbs.

† Or *elles*, for the feminine, in all verbs in the third person plural.

IMPERFECT †.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'aurois, <i>I should</i> *	} <i>have.</i>	Nous aurions, <i>we should</i>
tu aurois, <i>thou shouldst</i>		vous auriez, <i>you should</i>
il auroit, <i>he should</i>		ils auroient, <i>they should</i> } <i>have.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

J'eusse, <i>I might</i> †	} <i>have.</i>	Nous eussions, <i>we might</i>
tu eusses, <i>thou mightest</i>		vous eussiez, <i>you might</i>
il eût, <i>he might</i>		ils eussent, <i>they might</i> } <i>have.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.	PAST.
Ayant, <i>having.</i>	Eu, <i>had.</i>

* Or *I could, would, or might have.*

† Or *I bad, or I could, would, or should have.*

Now, to have the compound tenses, you need only (without puzzling yourself about needless denominations) add after each person the participle past *eu* for the French, and *bad* for the English, through all tenses and moods; as, *j'ai eu*, I have had, and so on.

CONJUGATION

Of the auxiliary verb ETRE, *to be.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ETRE, *to be.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je suis, <i>I am,</i>	Nous sommes, <i>we are,</i>
tu es, <i>thou art,</i>	vous êtes, <i>you are,</i>
il est, <i>he is.</i>	ils sont, <i>they are.</i>

IMPERFECT.

J'étois, <i>I was,</i>	Nous étions, <i>we were,</i>
tu étois, <i>thou wast,</i>	vous étiez, <i>you were,</i>
il étoit, <i>he was.</i>	ils étoient, <i>they were.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je fus, *I was,*
tu fus, *thou wast,*
il fut, *he was.*

PLURAL.

Nous fûmes, *we were,*
vous fûtes, *you were,*
ils furent, *they were.*

FUTURE.

Je serai, *I shall or will*
tu seras, *thou shalt*
il sera, *he shall*

nous serons, *we shall*
vous serez, *you shall*
ils seront, *they shall*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Sois, *be thou,*
qu'il soit, *let him be,*
qu'elle soit, *let her be.*

PLURAL.

Soyons, *let us be,*
soyez, *be ye,* [*them be.*
qu'ils or qu'elles soient, *let*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je sois, *I may*
tu sois, *thou mayest*
il soit, *he may*

PLURAL.

Nous soyons, *we may*
vous soyez, *you may*
ils soient, *they may*

IMPERFECT.

Je serois, *I should*
tu serois, *thou shouldest*
il seroit, *he should*

Nous serions, *we should*
vous seriez, *you should*
ils seroient, *they should*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je fusse, *I might*
tu fusses, *thou mightest*
il fût, *he might*

Nous fussions, *we might*
vous fussiez, *you might*
ils fussent, *they might*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Etant, *being.*

PAST.

Été, *been.*

The compounds of this verb are formed by the help of the auxiliary verb *avoir* through all it's tenses and moods, by adding, after each person and tense, *été* for the French, and *been* for the English : as, *j'ai été*, *I have been*, &c. *j'avais été*, *I had been*, &c. and so on.

Observe, 1st, the compounds of all other verbs, both regular and irregular, are formed by the help of these two auxiliary verbs, by adding the participle past of the verb you are conjugating after each tense and person. For example, to find all the compound tenses of this verb *parler*, to speak, it's participle past being *parlé*, you need only put it after the simple tenses of the verb *avoir*.

Observe, 2dly, those verbs which are conjugated by the help of *être*, are only compounded of the simple of that auxiliary verb; that is to say, the compound of the verb *être* does not serve for the compound of others; whereas the compound of the verb *avoir* may serve, but seldom, for the compound of others: consequently, verbs conjugated by the help of *avoir* are sometimes compounded of the compound, and those conjugated by the help of *être* are only compounded of it's simple tenses. The reason of it may be, because the compound tenses of the verb *être* are formed by the help of the verb *avoir*, which reflexive and some neuter verbs will not admit of. Except from this observation verbs used passively, which are conjugated by the help of *être* in all it's tenses, both simple and compound.

N. B. What verbs are conjugated by the help of *avoir* or the help of *être*. See *Preliminary Observations*, p. 78.

Conjugation of Regular Verbs.

It is very indifferent how many conjugations we admit. Some admit four, others ten, and even father *Buffier* reckons twelve. There may be reckoned six conjugations:

The

1st.

2d.

3d.

4th.

5th.

6th.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{er} \\ \text{ir, or } \text{avoir} \\ \text{avoir} \\ \text{re preceded by } d \\ \text{re preceded by } ui \\ \text{re preceded by } ind \end{array} \right\} \text{as}$

aimer, to love.

punir, to punish.

devoir, to owe.

vendre, to sell.

traduire, to translate.

joindre, to join.

FIRST CONJUGATION.
INFINITIVE MOOD.

AIMER, *to love.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'aime, *I love**,
tu aimes, *thou lovest*,
il aime, *he loves*.

Nous aimons, *we love*,
vous aimez, *you love*,
ils aiment, *they love*.

IMPERFECT.

J'aimois, *I did love*†,
tu aimois, *thou didst love*,
il aimoit, *he did love*.

Nous aimions, *we did love*,
vous aimiez, *ye did love*,
ils aimoient, *they did love*.

PRETERPERFECT.

J'aimai, *I loved*,
tu aimas, *thou lovedst*,
il aima, *he loved*.

Nous aimâmes, *we loved*,
vous aimâtes, *ye loved*,
ils aimèrent, *they loved*.

FUTURE.

J'aimerai, *I shall or will love*,
tu aimeras, *thou shalt love*,
il aimera, *he shall love*.

Nous aimerons, *we shall love*,
vous aimerez, *ye shall love*,
ils aimeront, *they shall love*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Aime, *love thou*||,
qu'il aime, *let him love*,
qu'elle aime, *let her love*.

Aimons, *let us love*,
aimez, *love ye*,
qu'ils aiment, *let them love*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'aime, *I may love*,
tu aimes, *thou mayest love*,
il aime, *he may love*,

Nous aimions, *we may love*,
vous aimiez, *ye may love*,
ils aiment, *they may love*.

* Or *I do love*, *I am loving*, which is to be observed in all other verbs.

† Or *I was used to love*, or *I used to love*; it is likewise the same in all other verbs.

|| Or *do thou love*, and so on in all other verbs.

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

J'aimerois, *I should love,*
 tu aimerois, *thou shouldst love*
 il aimeroit, *he should love.*

PLURAL.

Nous aimerions, *we sho. love,*
 vous aimeriez, *ye should love,*
 ils aimeroient, *they sho. love.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'aimasse, *I might love,*
 tu aimasses, *thou mightest love,*
 il aimât, *he might love.*

Nous aimassions, *we mi. love,*
 vous aimassiez, *ye might love,*
 ils aimassent, *they might love.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Aimant, *loving.*

PAST.

Aimé, *loved.*

SECOND CONJUGATION.
INFINITIVE MOOD.

PUNIR, *to punish.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je punis, *I punish,*
 tu punis, *thou punishest,*
 il punit, *he punishes.*

PLURAL.

Nous punissons, *we punish,*
 vous punissez, *ye punish,*
 ils punissent, *they punish.*

IMPERFECT.

Je punissois, *I did punish,*
 tu punissois, *thou didst punish,*
 il punissoit, *he did punish.*

Nous punissions, *we did*
 vous punissiez, *ye did*
 ils punissaient, *they did* } *punish.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je punis, *I punished,*
 tu punis, *thou punishedst,*
 il punit, *he punished.*

Nous punîmes, *we punished,*
 vous punîtes, *ye punished,*
 ils punirent, *they punished.*

FUTURE.

Je punirai, *I shall punish.*
 tu puniras, *thou shalt punish,*
 il punira, *he shall punish.*

Nous punirons, *we shall*
 vous punirez, *ye shall*
 ils puniront, *they shall* } *punish.*

IMPERATIVE.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Punis, *punish thou,*
qu'il punisse, *let him punish,*
qu'elle punisse, *let her punish.*

PLURAL.

Punissons, *let us punish,*
punissez, *punish ye,* [niss.
qu'ils punissent, *let them pu-*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je punisse, *I may*
tu punisses, *thou mayest*
il punisse, *he may*

} *punish.*

PLURAL.

Nous punissions, *we may*
vous punissiez, *ye may*
ils punissent, *they may*

} *punish.*

IMPERFECT.

Je punirois, *I should*
tu punirois, *thou shouldst*
il puniroit, *he should*

} *punish.*

Nous punirions, *we sho.*
vous puniriez, *ye should*
ils puniroient, *they should*

} *punish.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je punisse, *I might*
tu punisses, *thou mightest*
il punît, *he might*

} *punish.*

Nous punissions, *we mi.*
vous punissiez, *ye might*
ils punissent, *they might*

} *punish.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Punissant, *punishing.*

PAST.

[Puni, *punished.*

THIRD CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

DEVOIR, *to owe.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je dois, *I owe,*
tu dois, *thou owest,*
il doit, *he owes.*

PLURAL.

Nous devons, *we owe,*
vous devez, *ye owe,*
ils doivent, *they owe.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je devois, *I did owe,*
 tu devois, *thou didst owe,*
 il devoit, *he did owe.*

PLURAL.

Nous devions, *we did owe,*
 vous deviez, *ye did owe,*
 ils devoient, *they did owe.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je dus, *I owed,*
 tu dus, *thou owedst,*
 il dut, *he owed.*

Nous dûmes, *we owed,*
 vous dûtes, *ye owed,*
 ils durent, *they owed.*

FUTURE.

Je devrai, *I shall owe,*
 tu devras, *thou shalt owe,*
 il devra, *he shall owe.*

Nous devrons, *we shall owe,*
 vous devrez, *ye shall owe,*
 ils devront, *they shall owe.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Dois, *owe thou,*
 qu'il doive, *let him owe,*
 qu'elle doive, *let her owe.*

PLURAL.

Devons, *let us owe.*
 devez, *owe ye.*
 qu'ils doivent, *let them owe.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je doive, *I may owe.*
 tu doives, *thou mayest owe,*
 il doive, *he may owe.*

PLURAL.

Nous devions, *we may owe.*
 vous deviez, *ye may owe,*
 ils doivent, *they may owe.*

IMPERFECT.

Je devrois, *I should owe,*
 tu devrois, *thou shouldst owe,*
 il devrait, *he should owe.*

Nous devrions, *we should owe.*
 vous devriez, *ye should owe,*
 ils devraient, *they should owe.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je dusse, *I might owe,*
 tu dusses, *thou mightest owe,*
 il dût, *he might owe.*

Nous dussions, *we might owe,*
 vous dussiez, *ye might owe,*
 ils dussent, *they might owe.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Devant, *owing.*

PAST.

Dû * *owed.*

* The FRENCH ACADEMY do not put an accent upon the participle ending in *a*.

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

VENDRE, to sell.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je vends, *I sell,*
tu vends, *thou sellest,*
il vend, *he sells.*

PLURAL.

Nous vendons, *we sell,*
vous vendez, *ye sell,*
ils vendent, *they sell.*

IMPERFECT.

Je vendois, *I did sell,*
tu vendois, *thou didst sell,*
il vendoit, *he did sell.*

Nous vendions, *we did sell,*
vous vendiez, *ye did sell,*
ils vendaient, *they did sell.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je vendis, *I sold,*
tu vendis, *thou soldst,*
il vendit, *he sold.*

Nous vendîmes, *we sold,*
vous vendîtes, *ye sold,*
ils vendirent, *they sold.*

FUTURE.

Je vendrai, *I shall sell,*
tu vendras, *thou shalt sell,*
il vendra, *he shall sell.*

Nous vendrons, *we shall sell,*
vous vendrez, *ye shall sell,*
ils vendront, *they shall sell.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Vends, *sell thou,*
qu'il vende, *let him sell,*
qu'elle vende, *let her sell.*

PLURAL.

Vendons, *let us sell,*
vendez, *sell ye,*
qu'ils vendent, *let them sell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je vende, *I may sell,*
tu vendes, *thou mayest sell,*
il vende, *he may sell.*

PLURAL.

Nous vendions, *we may sell,*
vous vendiez, *ye may sell,*
ils vendent, *they may sell.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je vendrois, *I should sell,*
 tu vendrois, *thou shouldst sell,*
 il vendroit, *he should sell.*

PLURAL.

Nous vendrions, *we sho. sell,*
 vous vendriez, *ye should sell,*
 ils vendroient, *they should sell.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je vendisse, *I might sell,*
 tu vendisses, *thou mightest sell,*
 il vendît, *he might sell.*

Nous vendissions, *we mi. sell,*
 vous vendissiez, *ye might sell,*
 ils vendissent, *they might sell.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Vendant, *selling.*

PAST.

Vendu, *sold.*

FIFTH CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

TRADUIRE, *to translate.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je traduis, *I translate,*
 tu traduis, *thou translatest,*
 il traduit, *he translates.*

PLURAL.

Nous traduisons, *we translate*
 vous traduisez, *ye translate,*
 ils traduisent, *they translate.*

IMPERFECT.

Je traduisois, *I did*
 tu traduisois, *thou didst*
 il traduisoit, *he did*

} *transla.*

Nous traduisions, *we did*
 vous traduisiez, *ye did*
 ils traduisoient, *they did*

} *transla.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je traduisis, *I translated,*
 tu traduisis, *thou translatedst,*
 il traduisit, *he translated.*

Nous traduisîmes, *we*
 vous traduisîtes, *ye*
 ils traduisirent, *they*

} *transla.*

FUTURE.

Je traduirai, *I shall*
 tu traduiras, *thou shalt*
 il traduira, *he shall*

} *transla.*

Nous traduirons, *we sh.*
 vous traduirez, *ye shall*
 ils traduiront, *they shall*

} *transla.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Traduis, <i>translate thou,</i>		Traduisons, <i>let us translate,</i>
qu'il traduise, <i>let him translate</i>		traduisez, <i>translate ye,</i>
qu'elle traduise, <i>let her trans.</i>		qu'ils traduisent, <i>let them tra.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je traduise, <i>I may</i>	} transla.	Nous traduisions, <i>we m.</i>	} transla.
tu traduises, <i>thou mayest</i>		vous traduissiez, <i>you may</i>	
il traduise, <i>he may</i>		ils traduisent, <i>they may</i>	

IMPERFECT.

Je traduirois, <i>I should</i>	} transla.	Nous traduirions, <i>we sh.</i>	} transla.
tu traduirais, <i>thou sh.</i>		vous traduiriez, <i>ye sh.</i>	
il traduirait, <i>he should</i>		ils traduiroient, <i>they sh.</i>	

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je traduisisse, <i>I might</i>	} transla.	Nous traduisissions, <i>we</i>	} m. tran.
tu traduisisses, <i>thou mig.</i>		vous traduisissiez, <i>ye</i>	
il traduisît, <i>he might</i>		ils traduisissent, <i>they</i>	

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Traduisant, <i>translating.</i>		Traduit, <i>translated.</i>
---------------------------------	--	-----------------------------

SIXTH CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

JOINDRE, *to join.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je joins, <i>I join,</i>		Nous joignons, <i>we join,</i>
tu joins, <i>thou joinest,</i>		vous joignez, <i>ye join,</i>
il joint, <i>he joins.</i>		ils joignent, <i>they join.</i>

IMPERFECT

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je joignois, *I did join,*
 tu joignois, *thou didst join,*
 il joignoit, *he did join.*

PLURAL.

Nous joignions, *we did join,*
 vous joigniez, *ye did join,*
 ils joignoient, *they did join.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je joignis, *I joined,*
 tu joignis, *thou joinedst,*
 il joignit, *he joined.*

Nous joignîmes, *we joined,*
 vous joignîtes, *ye joined,*
 ils joignirent, *they joined.*

FUTURE.

Je joindrai, *I shall join.*
 tu joindras, *thou shalt join,*
 il joindra, *he shall join.*

Nous joindrons, *we sha. }*
 vous joindrez, *ye shall }*
 ils joindront, *they shall }* *join.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Joins, *join thou,*
 qu'il joigne, *let him join,*
 qu'elle joigne, *let her join.*

PLURAL.

Joignons, *let us join,*
 Joignez, *join ye,*
 qu'ils joignent, *let them join.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je joigne, *I may join,*
 tu joignes, *thou mayst join,*
 il joigne, *he may join.*

PLURAL.

Nous joignons, *we may join,*
 vous joignez, *ye may join,*
 ils joignent, *they may join.*

IMPERFECT.

Je joindrois, *I should join,*
 tu joindrois, *thou shouldst join,*
 il joindroit, *he should join.*

Nous joindrions, *we sh. join,*
 vous joindriez, *ye should join,*
 ils joindraient, *they sh. join.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je joignisse, *I might join,*
 tu joignisses, *thou mightest join,*
 il joignît, *he might join.*

Nous joignissions, *we mi. join,*
 vous joignissiez, *ye might join,*
 ils joignissent, *they might join.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Joignant, *joining.*

PAST.

Joint, *joined.*

Conjugation

Conjugation of Reflected Verbs.

A Reflected Verb, as I have hinted before, has always *se* before it's infinitive ; as, *se repentir*, to repent ; but it is generally nothing but an active verb, whose action returns upon the agent that produces it. The following example, of the first conjugation, will be sufficient to learn how to conjugate any reflected verb.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SE LEVER, *to rise.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je me lève, *I rise,*
tu te lèves, *thou risest,*
il se lève, *he rises.*

PLURAL.

Nous nous levons, *we rise,*
vous vous levez, *ye rise,*
ils se lèvent, *they rise.*

IMPERFECT.

Je me levois, *I did rise,*
tu te levois, *thou didst rise,*
il se levoit, *he did rise.*

Nous nous levions, *we did rise*
vous vous leviez, *ye did rise,*
ils se levoient, *they did rise.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je me levai, *I rose,*
tu te levas, *thou rosedst,*
il se leva, *he rose.*

Nous nous levâmes, *we rose,*
vous vous levâtes, *ye rose,*
ils se levèrent, *they rose.*

FUTURE.

Je me leverai, *I shall rise,*
tu te leveras, *thou shalt rise,*
il se levera, *he shall rise.*

[*rise,*
Nous nous leverons, *we shall*
vous vous leverez, *ye shall rise*
ils se leveront, *they shall rise.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Lève toi, *rise thou,*
qu'il se lève, *let him rise,*
qu'elle se lève, *let her rise.*

PLURAL.

Levons nous, *let us rise,*
levez vous, *rise ye,*
qu'ils se lèvent, *let them rise.*

SUBJUNCTIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je me lève, *I may rise,*
tu te lèves, *thou mayest rise,*
il se lève, *he may rise.*

[*rise,*
Nous nous levions, *we may*
vous vous levez, *ye may rise,*
ils se lèvent, *they may rise.*

IMPERFECT.

Je me leverois, *I should rise,*
tu te leverois, *thou shouldest rise*
il se leveroit, *he should rise.*

[*rise,*
Nous nous leverions, *we shou.*
vous vous leveriez, *ye sh. rise,*
ils se leveroient, *they sh. rise.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je me levasse, *I might rise,*
tu te levasses, *thou mightest rise*
il se levât, *he might rise.*

[*rise,*
Nous nous levassions, *we mig.*
vous vous levassiez, *ye mi. rise,*
ils se levassent, *they might rise.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Selevant, *rising.*

| Levé, *risen.*

There are three neuter verbs which become reflexive by the addition of the particle *en* immediately after the double pronouns: *s'en aller*, to go away; *s'en fuir*, to run away; *s'en retourner*, to return. Perhaps there are some more, but seldom used.

A reciprocal verb, which is by no means to be confounded with a reflected one, is used in the plural only, and conjugated like reflected verbs with a double pronoun.

Conjugation of the Irregular Verbs, alphabetically.

A.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ABSOLUTRE, *to absolve.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'absous, *I absolve,*
tu absous, *thou absolvest,*
il absout, *he absolves.*

Nous absolvons, *we absolve,*
vous absolvez, *ye absolve,*
ils absolvent, *they absolve.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'absolvois, <i>I did</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>	Nous absolvions, <i>we did</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>
tu absolvois, <i>thou didst</i>		vous absolviez, <i>ye did</i>	
il absolvait, <i>he did</i>		ils absolvoient, <i>they did</i>	

FUTURE.

J'absoudrai, <i>I shall</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>	Nous absoudrons, <i>we sh.</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>
tu absoudras, <i>thou shalt</i>		vous absoudrez, <i>ye shall</i>	
il absoudra, <i>he shall</i>		ils absoudront, <i>they shall</i>	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Absois, <i>absolve thou,</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>	Absolvons, <i>let us absolve,</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>
qu'il absolve, <i>let him absolve.</i>		absolvez, <i>absolve ye,</i>	
		qu'ils absolvent, <i>let them abs.</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'absolve, <i>I may</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>	Nous absolvions <i>we may</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>
tu absolves, <i>thou mayest</i>		vous absolviez, <i>ye may</i>	
il absolve, <i>he may</i>		ils absolvent, <i>they may</i>	

IMPERFECT.

J'absoudrois, <i>I should</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>	Nous absoudrions <i>we sh.</i>	} <i>absolve.</i>
tu absoudrois, <i>thou shou.</i>		vous absoudriez, <i>ye sho.</i>	
il absoudrait, <i>he should</i>		ils absoudroient, <i>they sh.</i>	

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Absolvant, <i>absolving.</i>	Absous, <i>absolved.</i>
------------------------------	--------------------------

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ABSTRAIRE, *to abstract.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'abstrais, <i>I abstract,</i>	} <i>wanting.</i>	
tu abstrais, <i>thou abstractest,</i>		
il abstrait, <i>he abstracts.</i>		

FUTURE

FUTURE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'abstrairai, <i>I shall</i>	} <i>abstract</i>	Nous abstrairons, <i>we sh.</i>
tu abstrairas, <i>thou shalt</i>		vous abstrairez, <i>ye shall</i>
il abstraira, <i>he shall</i>		ils abstrairont, <i>they shall</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'abstrairais, <i>I should</i>	} <i>abstract</i>	Nous abstrairions, <i>we sh.</i>
tu abstrairais, <i>thou should</i>		vous abstrairiez, <i>ye sh.</i>
il abstrairait, <i>he should</i>		ils abstrairaient, <i>they sh.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

wanting.

PAST.

{ Abstrait, *abstracted*.

Observe, *distraire*, *extraire*, and *soustraire*, are conjugated after the same manner, and want the same tenses. Moreover, they are seldom used in many of their simple tenses.

ACQUERIR, *to acquire*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
J'acquiers, <i>I acquire</i> ,	Nous acquérons, <i>we acquire</i> ,
tu acquiers, <i>thou acquirest</i> ,	vous acquérez, <i>ye acquire</i> ,
il acquiert, <i>he acquires</i> .	ils acquièrent, <i>they acquire</i> .

IMPERFECT.

J'acquérois, <i>I did</i>	} <i>acquire</i>	Nous acquérions, <i>we did</i>	} <i>acquire</i>
tu acquérois, <i>thou didst</i>		vous acquériez, <i>ye did</i>	
il acquéroit, <i>he did</i>		ils acquéroient, <i>they did</i>	

PRETERPERFECT.

J'acquis, <i>I acquired</i> ,	Nous acquîmes, <i>we acquired</i> ,
tu acquis, <i>thou acquiredst</i> ,	vous acquîtes, <i>ye acquired</i> ,
il acquit, <i>he acquired</i> .	ils acquirent, <i>they acquired</i> .

FUTURE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'acquerrai, <i>I shall</i>	} <i>acquire.</i>	Nous acquerrons, <i>we sh.</i>
tu acquerras, <i>thou shalt</i>		vous acquerez, <i>ye shall</i>
il acquerra, <i>he shall</i>		ils acquerront, <i>they shall</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Acquiers, <i>acquire thou,</i>	Acquérons, <i>let us acquire,</i>
qu'il acquierre, <i>let him acquire</i>	acquérez, <i>acquire ye,</i>
	qu'ils acquierrent, <i>let them ac.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'acquierre, <i>I may</i>	} <i>acquire.</i>	Nous acquérions, <i>we m.</i>
tu acquierres, <i>thou mayest</i>		vous acquériez, <i>ye may</i>
il acquierre, <i>he may</i>		ils acquierrent, <i>they may</i>

IMPERFECT.

J'acquerois, <i>I should</i>	} <i>acquire.</i>	Nous acquerrions, <i>we sh.</i>
tu acquerois, <i>thou sh.</i>		vous acqueriez, <i>ye should</i>
il acqueroit, <i>he should</i>		ils acquerroient, <i>they sh.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

J'acquisse, <i>I might</i>	} <i>acquire.</i>	Nous acquisitions, <i>we mi.</i>
tu acquisses, <i>thou might.</i>		vous acquissiez, <i>ye might</i>
il acquit, <i>he might</i>		ils acquissent, <i>they might</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.	PAST.
Acquérant, <i>acquiring.</i>	Acquis, <i>acquired.</i>

ALLER, *to go.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je vais, <i>I go.</i>	Nous allons, <i>we go,</i>
tu vas, <i>thou goest,</i>	vous allez, <i>ye go.</i>
il va, <i>he goes.</i>	ils vont, <i>they go.</i>

F IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

J'allois, *I did go,*
 tu allois, *thou didst go,*
 il alloit, *he did go.*

PLURAL.

Nous allions, *we did go,*
 vous alliez, *ye did go,*
 ils alloient, *they did go.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'allai, *I went,*
 tu allas, *thou wentest,*
 il alla, *he went.*

Nous allâmes, *we went,*
 vous allâtes, *ye went,*
 ils allèrent, *they went.*

FUTURE.

J'irai, *I shall go,*
 tu iras, *thou shalt go,*
 il ira, *he shall go.*

Nous irons, *we shall go,*
 vous irez, *ye shall go,*
 ils iront, *they shall go.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Va, *go thou,*
 qu'il aille, *let him go.*

PLURAL.

Allons, *let us go,*
 allez, *go ye,*
 qu'ils aillent, *let them go.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

J'aïlle, *I may go,*
 tu aïlles, *thou mayest go,*
 il aïlle, *he may go.*

PLURAL.

Nous aïllions, *we may go,*
 vous aïliez, *ye may go,*
 ils aïllent, *they may go.*

IMPERFECT.

J'irois, *I should go,*
 tu irois, *thou shouldst go,*
 il iroit, *he should go.*

Nous irions, *we should go,*
 vous iriez, *ye should go,*
 ils iroient, *they should go.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'allasse, *I might go,*
 tu allasses, *thou mightest go,*
 il allât, *he might go.*

Nous allussions, *we might go,*
 vous allassiez, *ye might go,*
 ils allaient, *they might go.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Allant, *going.*

PAST.

Allé, *gone.*

S'ASSEOIR,

S'ASSEOIR, to sit down.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je m'assieds, *I sit down,*
tu t'assieds, *thou sittest down,*
il s'assied, *he sits down.*

PLURAL.

[*down,*
Nous nous asseyons, *we sit*
vous vous asseyez, *ye sit down,*
ils s'asseient, *they sit down.*

IMPERFECT.

Je m'asseyois, *I did sit down,*
tu t'asseyois, *thou didst sit do.*
il s'asseyoit, *he did sit down.*

[*fit down,*
Nous nous asseyions, *we did*
vous vous asseyiez, *ye did fit do*
ils s'asseyoient, *they did fit do.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je m'assis, *I sat down,*
tu t'assis, *thou sattest down,*
il s'assit, *he sat down.*

Nous nous assimes, *we sat do.*
vous vous assîtes, *ye sat down,*
ils s'assirent, *they sat down.*

FUTURE.

Je m'assiérai*, *I shall sit down,*
tu t'assiéras, *thou shalt sit down*
il s'assiéra, *he shall sit down.*

[*fit down,*
Nous nous assiérons, *we shall*
vous vous assiérez, *ye sh. sit do.*
ils s'assièront, *they sh. sit down.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Assied toi, *fit thou down,*
qu'il s'assieye, *let him sit down.*

PLURAL.

Asseyons nous, *let us sit down*
asseyez vous, *fit (ye) down,*
qu'ils s'asseient, *let them sit do.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je m'assieye, *I may sit down,*
tu t'assieyes, *thou mayest sit do.*
il s'assieye, *he may sit down.*

PLURAL.

[*fit down,*
Nous nous asseyions, *we may*
vous vous asseyiez, *ye m. sit do.*
ils s'asseient, *they may sit down*

* Or, *Je m'assierai*, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je m'affiérois*, <i>I was fit down.</i>	[<i>fit down,</i>
tu t'affiérois, <i>thou was fit do.</i>	Nous nous affiérions, <i>we sho.</i>
il s'affiéroit, <i>he was fit down.</i>	vous vous affiériez, <i>ye sho. fit do.</i>
	ils s'affiéroient, <i>they sho. fit do.</i>

PRÉTERPERFECT.

Je m'affisse, <i>I might fit down.</i>	[<i>fit down,</i>
tu t'affisses, <i>thou mightest fit do.</i>	Nous nous affissions, <i>we might</i>
il s'affît, <i>he might fit down.</i>	vous vous affissiez, <i>ye m. fit do.</i>
	ils s'affissent, <i>they might fit do.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

S'Assayant, <i>sitting down.</i>	Assis, <i>sat down.</i>
----------------------------------	-------------------------

Observe, this manner of conjugating the verb *asseoir* is very puzzling for learners. To avoid those difficulties, the best way is to follow the advice of *Vangelas*, and, instead of that verb, to make use of *se placer*, *prendre place*, *se reposer*, *se mettre dans un siège*, according to the sense.

* Or, je m'affeyerois, *ibid.*

B.

B A T T R E, *to beat.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je bats, <i>I beat.</i>	Nous battons, <i>we beat,</i>
tu bats, <i>thou beatest,</i>	vous battez, <i>ye beat,</i>
il bat, <i>he beats.</i>	ils battent, <i>they beat.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je battois, <i>I did beat,</i>	Nous battions, <i>we did beat,</i>
tu battois, <i>thou didst beat,</i>	vous battiez, <i>ye did beat,</i>
il battoit, <i>he did beat.</i>	ils battoient, <i>they did beat.</i>

PRÉTERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je battis, *I beat,*
tu battis, *thou beatest,*
il battit, *he beat.*

Nous battîmes, *we beat,*
vous battîtes, *ye beat,*
ils battirent, *they beat.*

FUTURE.

Je battrai, *I shall beat,*
tu battras, *thou shalt beat,*
il battra, *he shall beat.*

Nous battons, *we shall beat,*
vous battrez, *ye shall beat,*
ils battront, *they shall beat.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Bats, *beat thou,*
qu'il batte, *let him beat.*

Battons, *let us beat,*
battez, *beat ye,*
qu'ils battent, *let them beat.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je batte, *I may beat,*
tu battes, *thou mayest beat,*
il batte, *he may beat.*

Nous battions, *we may beat,*
vous battiez, *ye may beat,*
ils battent, *they may beat.*

IMPERFECT.

Je battrais, *I should beat,*
tu battrais, *thou shouldst beat,*
il battrait, *he should beat.*

Nous battrions, *we should beat*
vous battriez, *ye should beat,*
ils battraient, *they should beat.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je battisse, *I might beat,*
tu battisses, *thou mightest beat,*
il battît, *he might beat.*

Nous battissions, *we mig. beat*
vous battissiez, *ye might beat,*
ils battissent, *they might beat.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Battant, *beating.*

Battu, *beaten.*

BOIRE, *to drink.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je bois, *I drink,*
tu bois, *thou drinkeſt,*
il boit, *he drinks.*

PLURAL.

Nous buvons, *we drink,*
vous buvez, *ye drink,*
ils boivent, *they drink.*

IMPERFECT.

Je buvois, *I did drink,*
tu buvois, *thou didſt drink,*
il buvoit, *he did drink.*

Nous buvions, *we did drink,*
vous buviez, *ye did drink,*
ils buvoient, *they did drink.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je bus, *I drank,*
tu bus, *thou drankſt,*
il but, *he drank.*

Nous bûmes, *we drank,*
vous bûtes, *ye drank,*
ils burent, *they drank.*

IMPERFECT.

Je boirai, *I ſhall drink,*
tu boiras, *thou ſhalt drink,*
il boira, *he ſhall drink.*

Nous boirons, *we ſhall drink,*
vous boirez, *ye ſhall drink,*
ils boiront, *they ſhall drink.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Bois, *drink thou,*
qu'il boive, *let him drink.*

PLURAL.

Buvons, *let us drink.*
buvez, *drink ye,*
qu'ils boivent, *let them drink.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je boive, *I may drink,*
tu boives, *thou mayeſt drink,*
il boive, *he may drink.*

PLURAL.

Nous buvions, *we may drink,*
vous buviez, *ye may drink,*
ils boivent, *they may drink.*

IMPERFECT.

Je boirois, *I ſhould drink,*
tu boirois, *thou ſhouldeſt drink,*
il boiroit, *he ſhould drink.*

Nous boirions, *we ſhou. drink,*
vous boiriez, *ye ſhould drink,*
ils boiroient, *they ſhould drink.*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je busse, *I might drink,*
tu busse, *thou mightest drink,*
il bût, *he might drink.*

PLURAL.

Nous bussons, *we might drink*
vous bussez, *ye might drink,*
ils bussent, *they might drink.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Buvant, *drinking.*

PAST.

Bu, *drunk.*

BOUILLIR, *to boil.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je boue, *I boil,*
tu boue, *thou boilest,*
il bout, *he boils.*

PLURAL.

Nous bouillons, *we boil,*
vous bouillez, *ye boil,*
ils bouillent, *they boil.*

IMPERFECT.

Je bouillois, *I did boil,*
tu bouillois, *thou didst boil,*
il bouilloit, *he did boil.*

Nous bouillions, *we did boil,*
vous bouilliez, *ye did boil,*
ils bouilloient, *they did boil.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je bouillis, *I boiled,*
tu bouillis, *thou boiledst,*
il bouillit, *he boiled.*

Nous bouillîmes, *we boiled,*
vous bouillîtes, *ye boiled,*
ils bouillirent, *they boiled.*

FUTURE.

Je bouillirai, *I shall boil,*
tu bouilliras, *thou shalt boil,*
il bouillira, *he shall boil.*

Nous bouillirons, *we sh. boil,*
vous bouillirez, *ye shall boil,*
ils bouilliront, *they shall boil.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Boue, *boil thou,*
qu'il bouille, *let him boil.*

PLURAL.

Bouillons, *let us boil,*
bouillez, *boil ye,*
qu'ils bouillent, *let them boil.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je bouille, <i>I may boil,</i>	Nous bouillions, <i>we may boil,</i>
tu bouilles, <i>thou mayest boil,</i>	vous bouilliez, <i>ye may boil,</i>
il bouille, <i>he may boil.</i>	ils bouillent, <i>they may boil.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je bouillirois, <i>I should boil,</i>	Nous bouillirions, <i>we sh. boil,</i>
tu bouillirois, <i>thou shou. boil,</i>	vous bouilliriez, <i>ye should boil</i>
il bouilliroit, <i>he should boil.</i>	ils bouilliroient, <i>they sh. boil.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je bouillisse, <i>I might boil,</i>	Nous bouillissions, <i>we m. boil</i>
tu bouillisses, <i>thou mig. boil,</i>	vous bouillissiez, <i>ye might boil</i>
il bouillît, <i>he might boil.</i>	ils bouillissent, <i>they mig. boil.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Bouillant, <i>boiling.</i>	Bouilli, <i>boiled.</i>
----------------------------	-------------------------

This verb is seldom used, except in the third persons singular and plural; and, instead of *bouillir de la viande*, to boil meat, we say, *faire bouillir de la viande*.

C.

CIRCONCIRE, *to circumcise.*

This verb is not of great use. It is conjugated like *lire*, to read, except in both the preter tenses, and in the participle past, where it makes *circoncis*, *circoncisse*, *circoncis*.

CONQUERIR, *to conquer.*

This verb is conjugated like *acquérir*, and is not commonly used, except in the infinitive, in both the preter tenses, and participle past, and consequently in the compound tenses.

CONCLURE,

CONCLURE, *to conclude.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je conclus, *I conclude,*
tu conclus, *thou concludest,*
il conclut, *he concludes.*

Nous concluons, *we conclude,*
vous concluez, *ye conclude,*
ils concluent, *they conclude.*

IMPERFECT.

Je conclusois, *I did conclude,*
tu conclusois, *thou didst concl.*
il concluait, *he did conclude.*

[conclude,
Nous concluions, *we did*
vous concluez, *ye did conclude*
ils concluoient, *they did concl.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je conclus, *I concluded,*
tu conclus, *thou concludedst,*
il conclut, *he concluded.*

Nous conclûmes, *we concluded*
vous conclûtes, *ye concluded,*
ils conclurent, *they concluded.*

FUTURE.

Je conclurai, *I shall conclude,*
tu concluras, *thou shalt concl.*
il conclura, *he shall conclude.*

[conclude,
Nous conclurons, *we shall*
vous conclurez, *ye shall concl.*
ils concluront, *they shall concl.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Conclus, *conclude thou,*
qu'il conclue, *let him conclude*

Concluons, *let us conclude,*
concluez, *conclude ye,*
qu'ils concluent, *let them conc.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je conclue, *I may conclude,*
tu conclues, *thou mayest concl.*
il conclue, *he may conclude.*

[conclude,
Nous concluions, *we may*
vous concluez, *ye may conclu.*
ils concluent, *they may conclu.*

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

<i>[clude,</i>	<i>[conclude,</i>
Je conclurois, <i>I should con-</i>	Nous conclurons, <i>we should</i>
tu conclurois, <i>thou sho. concl.</i>	vous concluriez, <i>ye sho. concl.</i>
il concluroit, <i>he should concl.</i>	ils concluroient, <i>they sho. concl.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

<i>[clude,</i>	<i>[conclude,</i>
Je conclusse, <i>I might conclude,</i>	Nous conclusions, <i>we might</i>
tu conclusses, <i>thou mig. concl.</i>	vous conclussiez, <i>ye mig. concl.</i>
il conclût, <i>he might conclude.</i>	ils conclussent, <i>they mig. concl.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Concluant, <i>concluding.</i>	Conclu, <i>concluded.</i>
-------------------------------	---------------------------

CONFIRE. *to pickle.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je confis, <i>I pickle,</i>	Nous confisons, <i>we pickle,</i>
tu confis, <i>thou picklest,</i>	vous confisez, <i>ye pickle,</i>
il confit, <i>he pickles.</i>	ils confisent, <i>they pickle.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je confisois, <i>I did pickle.</i>	Nous confisions, <i>we did pickle,</i>
tu confisois, <i>thou didst pickle.</i>	vous confisiez, <i>ye did pickle,</i>
il confisoit, <i>he did pickle.</i>	ils confisoient, <i>they did pickle.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je confis, <i>I pickled,</i>	Nous confimes, <i>we pickled,</i>
tu confis, <i>thou pickledst,</i>	vous confîtes, <i>ye pickled,</i>
il confit, <i>he pickled.</i>	ils confirent, <i>they pickled.</i>

FUTURE.

Je confirai, <i>I shall pickle,</i>	Nous confirons, <i>we sh. pickle,</i>
tu confiras, <i>thou shalt pickle,</i>	vous confirez, <i>ye shall pickle,</i>
il confira, <i>he shall pickle.</i>	ils confiront, <i>they sh. pickle.</i>

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Confis, *pickle thou,*
qu'ils confise, *let him pickle.*

PLURAL.

Confisons, *let us pickle,*
confisez, *pickle ye,*
qu'ils confisent, *let them pickle*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je confise, *I may pickle,*
tu confises, *thou mayest pickle,*
il confise, *he may pickle.*

PLURAL.

Nous confisions, *we may pickle*
vous confisiez, *ye may pickle,*
ils confisent, *they may pickle,*

IMPERFECT.

Je confirois, *I should pickle,*
tu confirois, *thou shou. pickle,*
il confiroit, *he should pickle.*

[*pickle,*
Nous confirions, *we should*
vous confiriez, *ye shou. pickle,*
ils confiroient, *they shou. pickle*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je confisse, *I might pickle,*
tu confisses, *thou mig. pickle,*
il confit, *he migbt pickle.*

[*pickle,*
Nous confissions, *we might*
vous confissiez, *ye migbt pickle,*
ils confissent, *they mig. pickle.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Confisant, *pickling.*

PAST.

| Confit, *pickled.*

CONTREDIRE, *to gainsay.*

This verb is conjugated like *dire*, except in the second person plural, where it makes *vous contredisez*.

CONVAINCRE, *to convince.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je convaincs, <i>I convince.</i>	[<i>vince,</i>
tu convaincs, <i>thou convincest,</i>	Nous convainquons, <i>we convince.</i>
il convainc, <i>he convinces.</i>	vous convainquez, <i>ye convince.</i>
	ils convainquent, <i>they convince.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je convainquois, <i>I did convince.</i>	[<i>convince,</i>
tu convainquois, <i>thou did convince.</i>	Nous convainquions, <i>we did convince.</i>
il convainquoit, <i>he did convince.</i>	vous convainquiez, <i>ye did convince.</i>
	ils convainquoient, <i>they did convince.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je convainquis, <i>I convinced.</i>	[<i>convinced,</i>
tu convainquis, <i>thou convinced.</i>	Nous convainquîmes, <i>we convinced.</i>
il convainquit, <i>he convinced.</i>	vous convainquîtes, <i>ye convinced.</i>
	ils convainquirent, <i>they convinced.</i>

FUTURE.

Je convaincrai, <i>I shall convince.</i>	[<i>convince,</i>
tu convaincras, <i>thou shalt convince.</i>	Nous convaincrons, <i>we shall convince.</i>
il convaincra, <i>he shall convince.</i>	vous convaincrez, <i>ye shall convince.</i>
	ils convaincront, <i>they shall convince.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Convaincs, <i>convince thou,</i>	Convainquons, <i>let us convince.</i>
qu'il convainque, <i>let him convince.</i>	vous convainquez, <i>convince ye.</i>
	qu'ils convainquent, <i>let them convince.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je convainque, <i>I may convince.</i>	[<i>convince,</i>
tu convainques, <i>thou may convince.</i>	Nous convainquions, <i>we may convince.</i>
il convainque, <i>he may convince.</i>	vous convainquiez, <i>ye may convince.</i>
	il convainquent, <i>they may convince.</i>

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

<i>[wince,</i> Je convaincrois, <i>I should con-</i> tu convaincrois, <i>thou sh. con.</i> il convaincroit, <i>he sh. conv.</i>	<i>[convince,</i> Nous convaincrions, <i>we sh.</i> vous convaincriez, <i>ye sh. conv.</i> ils convaincroient, <i>they sh. conv.</i>
--	---

PRETERPERFECT.

<i>[convince,</i> Je convainquissè, <i>I might</i> tu convainquissès, <i>th. m. conv.</i> il convainquît, <i>he might conv.</i>	<i>[convince,</i> Nous convainquissions, <i>we m.</i> vous convainquissiez, <i>ye m. co.</i> ils convainquissent, <i>they m. co.</i>
--	---

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Convainquant, *convincing.* | Convaincu, *convinced.*

C O U D R E, *to sew.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je couds, <i>I sew,</i> tu couds, <i>thou sewest,</i> il coud, <i>he sews,</i>	Nous cousons, <i>we sew,</i> vous cousez, <i>ye sew,</i> ils cousent, <i>they sew.</i>
--	--

IMPERFECT.

Je cousois, <i>I did sew,</i> tu cousois, <i>thou didst sew.</i> il cousoit, <i>he did sew.</i>	Nous cousions, <i>we did sew,</i> vous cousiez, <i>you did sew,</i> ils cousoient, <i>they did sew.</i>
---	---

PRETERPERFECT.

Je cousis *, <i>I sewed,</i> tu cousis, <i>thou sewedst,</i> il coufit, <i>he sewed.</i>	Nous cousîmes, <i>we sewed,</i> vous cousîtes, <i>ye sewed,</i> ils cousîrent, <i>they sewed.</i>
--	---

FUTURE.

Je coudrai, <i>I shall sew,</i> tu coudras, <i>thou shalt sew,</i> il coudra, <i>he shall sew.</i>	Nous coudrons, <i>we shall sew</i> vous coudrez, <i>ye shall sew,</i> ils coudront, <i>they shall sew.</i>
--	--

* All the grammarians have *Je cousis*, and in the subjunctive mood *Je cousisse*; but the FRENCH ACADEMY write in those two tenses as above.

IMPERATIVE

210 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Couds, *sew thou,*
qu'il couse, *let him sew.*

PLURAL.

Coufons, *let us sew,*
cousez, *sew ye,*
qu'ils coufent, *let them sew.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je couse, *I may sew,*
tu couses, *thou mayest sew,*
il couse, *he may sew.*

PLURAL.

Nous coufions, *we may sew,*
vous coufiez, *ye may sew,*
ils coufent, *they may sew.*

IMPERFECT.

Je coudrois, *I should sew,*
tu coudrois, *thou shouldst sew,*
il coudroit, *he should sew.*

[*sew,*
Nous coudrions, *we should*
vous coudriez, *ye should sew,*
ils coudroient, *they should sew.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je coufisse, *I might sew,*
tu coufisses, *thou mightest sew,*
il coufist, *he might sew.*

[*sew,*
Nous coufissions, *we might*
vous coufissiez, *ye might sew,*
ils coufissent, *they might sew.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Confant, *sewing.*

PAST.

| Confu, *sewed.*

COURIR, *to run.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je cours, *I run,*
tu cours, *thou runnest,*
il court, *he runs.*

PLURAL.

Nous courons, *we run,*
vous courez, *ye run,*
ils courent, *they run.*

IMPERFECT.

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 111

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je courrois, *I did run,*
tu courrois, *thou didst run,*
il courroit, *he did run.*

PLURAL.

Nous courrions, *we did run,*
vous courriez, *ye did run,*
ils courroient, *they did run.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Jo courus, *I ran,*
tu courus, *thou rankest,*
il courut, *he ran.*

Nous courûmes, *we ran,*
vous courûtes, *ye ran,*
ils coururent, *they ran.*

FUTURE.

Je courrai, *I shall run,*
tu courras, *thou shalt run,*
il courra, *he shall run.*

Nous courrons, *we shall run,*
vous courrez, *ye shall run,*
ils courront, *they shall run.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Cours, *run thou,*
qu'il coure, *let him run.*

PLURAL.

Courons, *let us run,*
courez, *run ye,*
qu'ils courent, *let them run.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je coure, *I may run,*
tu coures, *thou mayest run,*
il coure, *he may run.*

PLURAL.

Nous courions, *we may run,*
vous couriez, *ye may run,*
ils courent, *they may run.*

IMPERFECT.

Je courrois, *I should run,*
tu courrois, *thou shouldst run,*
il courroit, *he should run.*

Nous courrions, *we should run,*
vous courriez, *ye should run,*
ils courroient, *they should run.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je courrusse, *I might run,*
tu courrasses, *thou mightest run,*
il courût, *he might run.*

Nous courrussions, *we might run,*
vous courrussiez, *ye might run,*
ils courrussent, *they might run.*

PARTICIPLES.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Courant, *running.*

Couru, *run.*

COUVRIR, *to cover.*

PRESENT TENSE,

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je couvre, *I cover.*

tu couvres, *thou coverest,*

il couvre, *he covers.*

Nous couvrons, *we cover,*

vous couvrez, *ye cover,*

ils couvrent, *they cover.*

IMPERFECT.

Je couvrois, *I did cover,*

tu couvrois, *thou didst cover,*

il couvroit, *he did cover.*

Nous couvriions, *we did cover,*

vous couviez, *ye did cover,*

ils couvroient, *they did cover.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je couvris, *I covered,*

tu couvris, *thou coveredst,*

il couvrit, *he covered.*

Nous couvrîmes, *we covered,*

vous couvrites, *ye covered,*

ils couvrirent, *they covered.*

FUTURE.

Je couvrirai, *I shall cover,*

tu couvriras, *thou shalt cover,*

il couvrira, *he shall cover.*

Nous couvrirons, *we shall cover,*

vous couvrirez, *ye shall cover,*

ils couvriront, *they shall cover.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Couvre, *cover thou,*

qu'il couvre, *let him cover.*

Couvrons, *let us cover,*

couvrez, *cover ye,*

qu'ils couvrent, *let them cover.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je couvre, *I may cover,*

tu couvres, *thou mayest cover,*

il couvre, *he may cover.*

Nous couvriions, *we may cover*

vous couviez, *ye may cover,*

ils couvrent, *they may cover.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je couvrirois, *I should cover,*
tu couvrirois, *thou shd. cover,*
il couvriroit, *he should cover.*

[*cover,*
Nous couvririons, *we should*
vous couvririez, *ye shd. cover,*
ils couvriroient, *they shd. cover.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je couvrisse, *I might cover,*
tu couvrisse, *thou mig. cover,*
il couvrit, *he might cover.*

[*cover,*
Nous couvrissions, *we might*
vous couvriez, *ye mi. cover,*
ils couvrirent, *they mi. cover.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Couvrant, *covering.*

| Couvert, *covered.*

CROIRE, *to believe.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je crois, *I believe,*
tu crois, *thou believest,*
il croit, *he believes.*

Nous croyons, *we believe,*
vous croyez, *ye believe,*
ils croient, *they believe.*

IMPERFECT.

Je croyois, *I did*
tu croyois, *thou didst*
il croyoit, *he did*

} *believe.*

Nous croyions, *we did*
vous croyiez, *ye did*
ils croyoient, *they did*

} *believe.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je crus, *I believed,*
tu crus, *thou believedst,*
il crut, *he believed.*

Nous crûmes, *we believed,*
vous crûtes, *ye believed,*
ils crurent, *they believed.*

FUTURE.

Je croirai, *I shall*
tu croiras, *thou shalt*
il croira, *he shall*

} *believe.*

Nous croirons, *we shall*
vous croirez, *ye shall*
ils croiront, *they shall*

} *believe.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Crois, *believe thou,*
qu'il croye, *let him believe.*

PLURAL.

Croyons, *let us believe,*
croyez, *believe ye,*
qu'ils croient, *let them believe*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je croye, *I may*
tu croyes, *thou mayst*
il croye, *he may*

} *believe.*

PLURAL.

Nous croyions, *we may*
vous croyiez, *ye may*
ils croient, *they may*

} *believe.*

IMPERFECT.

Je croirois, *I should*
tu croirois, *thou shouldst*
il croiroit, *he should*

} *believe.*

Nous croirions, *we sho.*
vous croiriez, *ye should*
ils croient, *they sho.*

} *believe.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je crusse, *I might*
tu crusses, *thou mightst*
il crût, *he might*

} *believe.*

Nous crussions, *we might*
vous crussiez, *ye might*
ils crussent, *they might*

} *believe.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Croyant, *believing.*

PAST.

Cru, *believed.*

CROITRE, *to grow.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je crois, *I grow,*
tu crois, *thou growest,*
il croit, *he grows,*

PLURAL.

Nous croissons, *we grow,*
vous croissez, *ye grow,*
ils croissent, *they grow.*

IMPERFECT.

Je croissois, *I did grow,*
tu croissois, *thou didst grow,*
il croissoit, *he did grow.*

Nous croissions, *we did grow,*
vous croissiez, *ye did grow,*
ils croissoient, *they did grow.*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je crus, *I grew,*
tu crus, *thou grewst,*
il crut, *he grew.*

Nous crûmes, *we grew,*
vous crûtes, *ye grew,*
ils crurent, *they grew.*

FUTURE.

Je croîtrai, *I shall*
tu croîtras, *thou shalt*
il croîtra, *he shall*

} *grow,*

Nous croîtrons, *we shall*
vous croîtrez, *ye shall*
ils croîtront, *they shall*

} *grow.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Crois, *grow thou,*
qu'il croisse, *let him grow.*

Croissons, *let us grow,*
croissez, *grow ye,*
qu'ils croissent, *let them grow.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je croisse, *I may grow,*
tu croisses, *thou mayest grow,*
il croisse, *he may grow.*

Nous croissions, *we may grow,*
vous croissiez, *ye may grow,*
ils croissent, *they may grow.*

IMPERFECT.

Je croîtrois, *I should*
tu croîtrois, *thou shouldst*
il croîtroit, *he should*

} *grow.*

Nous croîtrions, *we sho.*
vous croîtriez, *ye should*
ils croîtroient, *they sho.*

} *grow.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je crusse, *I might*
tu crusses, *thou mightest*
il crût, *he might*

} *grow.*

Nous crussions, *we might*
vous crussiez, *ye might*
ils crussent, *they might*

} *grow.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Croissant, *growing.*

Cru, *grown.*

CUEILLIR, to gather.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je cueille, *I gather,*
tu cueilles, *thou gatherest,*
il cueille, *he gathers.*

PLURAL.

Nous cueillons, *we gather,*
vous cueillez, *ye gather,*
ils cueillent, *they gather.*

IMPERFECT.

Je cueillois, *I did*
tu cueillois, *thou didst*
il cueilloit, *he did*

} *gather.*

Nous cueillions, *we did*
vous cueilliez, *ye did*
ils cueilloient, *they did*

} *gather.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je cueillis, *I gathered,*
tu cueillis, *thou gatheredst,*
il cueillit, *he gathered.*

Nous cueillîmes, *we gathered,*
vous cueillîtes, *ye gathered,*
ils cueillirent, *they gathered.*

FUTURE.

Je cueillerai, *I shall*
tu cueilleras, *thou shalt*
il cueillera, *he shall*

} *gather.*

Nous cueillerons, *we sh.*
vous cueillerez, *ye shall*
ils cueilleront, *they shall*

} *gather.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Cueille, *gather thou,*
qu'il cueille, *let him gather.*

PLURAL.

Cueillons, *let us gather,*
cueillez, *gather ye,*
qu'ils cueillent, *let th. gather.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je cueille, *I may*
tu cueilles, *thou mayest*
il cueille, *he may*

} *gather.*

PLURAL.

Nous cueillions, *we may*
vous cueilliez, *ye may*
ils cueillent, *they may*

} *gather.*

IMPERFECT.

Je cueillerois, *I should gather,*
tu cueillerois, *thou sho. gath.*
il cueilleroit, *he should gather.*

Nous cueillerions, *we should*
vous cueilleriez, *ye sho. gath.*
ils cueilleroient, *they sho. gath.*

[*gather,*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je cueillisse, *I might gather,*
tu cueillisses, *thou mig. gath.*
il cueillit, *he might gather.*

[gather,
Nous cueillions, *we might*
vous cueillissiez, *ye mi. gath.*
ils cueillissent, *they mi. gather.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Cueillant, *gathering.*

Cueilli, *gathered.*

CONNOITRE, *to know.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je connois, *I know,*
tu connois, *thou knowest,*
il connoit, *he knows.*

Nous connoissons, *we know,*
vous connoissez, *ye know,*
ils connoissent, *they know.*

IMPERFECT.

Je connoissois, *I did know,*
tu connoissois, *thou didst know*
il connoissoit, *he did know.*

Nous connoissions, *we di. kno.*
vous connoissiez, *ye did know,*
ils connoissoient, *they did kn.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je connus, *I knew,*
tu connus, *thou knewest,*
il connut, *he knew.*

Nous connûmes, *we knew,*
vous connûtes, *ye knew,*
ils connurent, *they knew.*

FUTURE.

Je connoîtrai, *I shall know,*
tu connoîtras, *thou sh. know,*
il connoîtra, *he shall know.*

[know,
Nous connoîtrons, *we shall*
vous connoîtrez, *ye sh. know,*
ils connoîtront, *they sh. know.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Connois, *know thou,*
qu'il connoisse, *let him know.*

Connoissons, *let us know,*
connoissez, *know ye,*
qu'ils connoissent, *let th. kn.*

SUBJUNCTIVE

18 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.* **SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je connoisse, *I may know,*
 tu connoisses, *thou ma. know,*
 il connoisse, *he may know.*

Nous connoissions, *we may*
 vois connoissiez, *ye m. know,*
 ils connoissent, *they m. know.*

IMPERFECT.

Je connoitrois, *I should know,*
 tu connoitrois, *thou sho. know,*
 il connoitroit, *he should know.*

Nous connoîtrions, *we should*
 vous connoitriez, *ye sho. know*
 ils connoitroient, *they sho. kno.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je connusse, *I might know,*
 tu connusses, *thou mig. know,*
 il connût, *he might know.*

Nous connussions, *we m. know*
 vous connussiez, *ye m. know,*
 ils connussent, *they m. know.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Connoissant, *knowing.*

Connu, *known.*

D.

DECHOIR, *to decay, to deci ge.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je déchois, *I decay,*
 tu déchois, *thou decayest,*
 il déchoit, *he decays.*

Nous décheyons, *we decay,*
 vous déchoyez, *ye decay,*
 ils déchoient, *they decay.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je déchus, *I decayed,*
 tu déchus, *thou decayedst,*
 il déchut, *he decayed.*

Nous déchûmes, *we decay,*
 vous déchûtes, *ye decayed,*
 ils déchurent, *they decayed.*

FUTURE.

Je décherrai, *I shall decay,*
 tu décherras, *thou shalt decay,*
 il décherra, *he shall decay.*

Nous décherrons, *we sh. decay*
 vous décherez, *ye shall decay,*
 ils décherront, *they shall decay*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je déchoie, *I may*
 tu déchoies, *thou mayest*
 il déchoie, *he may*

Nous déchoyions, *we m.*
 vous déchoyiez, *ye may*
 ils déchoient, *they may*

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 119

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je décherois, <i>I should</i>	} decay.	Nous décherrions, <i>we sh</i>	} decay.
tu décherois, <i>thou sh.</i>		vous décheriez, <i>ye shen</i>	
il décheroit, <i>he should</i>		ils décheroient, <i>they sh.</i>	

PRETERPERFECT.

Je déchusse, <i>I might</i>	} decay.	Nous déchussions, <i>we m.</i>	} decay.
tu déchusses, <i>thou mi.</i>		vous déchussiez, <i>ye might</i>	
il déchût, <i>he might</i>		ils déchussent, <i>they might</i>	

P A R T I C I P L E S.

PRESENT.

PAST.

wanting.

| Déchu, *decayed.*

D I R E, to say or tell.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je dis, <i>I say,</i>		Nous disons, <i>we say,</i>
tu dis, <i>thou sayest,</i>		vous dites, <i>ye say,</i>
il dit, <i>he says,</i>		ils disent, <i>they say.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je disois, <i>I did say,</i>		Nous disions, <i>we did say,</i>
tu disois, <i>thou didst say,</i>		vous disiez, <i>ye did say,</i>
il disoit, <i>he did say,</i>		ils disoient, <i>they did say.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je dis, <i>I said,</i>		Nous dîmes, <i>we said,</i>
tu dis, <i>thou saidst,</i>		vous dites, <i>ye said,</i>
il dit, <i>he said.</i>		ils dirent, <i>they said.</i>

FUTURE.

Je dirai, <i>I shall say,</i>		Nous dirons, <i>we shall say,</i>
tu diras, <i>thou shalt say,</i>		vous direz, <i>ye shall say,</i>
il dira, <i>he shall say.</i>		ils diront, <i>they shall say.</i>

I M P E R A T I V E M O O D.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Dis, <i>say thou,</i>		Disons, <i>let us say,</i>
qu'il dise, <i>let him say.</i>		dites, <i>say ye,</i>
		qu'ils disent, <i>let them say.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je dise, <i>I may say,</i>	Nous disions, <i>we may say,</i>
tu dises, <i>thou mayest say,</i>	vous disiez, <i>ye may say,</i>
il dise, <i>he may say.</i>	ils disent, <i>they may say.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je dirois, <i>I should say,</i>	Nous dirions, <i>we should say,</i>
tu dirois, <i>they shouldst say</i>	vous diriez, <i>ye should say,</i>
il diroit, <i>he should say.</i>	ils direient, <i>they should say.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je disse, <i>I might say,</i>	Nous disions, <i>we might say,</i>
tu disses, <i>thou mightest say,</i>	vous disiez, <i>ye might say,</i>
il dit, <i>he might say.</i>	ils dissent, <i>the might say.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Disant, <i>saying.</i>	Dit, <i>said.</i>
------------------------	-------------------

Redire is conjugated after the same manner.

DISSOUDRE, *to dissolve.*

This verb is conjugated like *absoudre*. The two preter tenses are likewise wanting.

DORMIR, *to sleep.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je dors, <i>I sleep,</i>	Nous dormons, <i>we sleep,</i>
tu dors, <i>thou sleepest,</i>	vous dormez, <i>ye sleep,</i>
il dort, <i>he sleeps.</i>	ils dorment, <i>they sleep.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je dormois, <i>I did sleep,</i>	Nous dormions, <i>we did sleep,</i>
tu dormois, <i>thou didst sleep,</i>	vous dormiez, <i>ye did sleep,</i>
il dormoit, <i>he did sleep.</i>	ils dormoient, <i>they did sleep.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je dormis, <i>I slept,</i>	Nous dormimes, <i>we slept,</i>
tu dormis, <i>thou sleepest,</i>	vous dormîtes, <i>ye slept,</i>
il dormit, <i>he slept.</i>	ils dormirent, <i>they slept.</i>

FUTURE.

SINGULAR. PLURAL.

FUTURE.

Je dormirai, <i>I shall sleep,</i>	Nous dormirons, <i>we shall sleep,</i>
tu dormiras, <i>thou shalt sleep,</i>	vous dormirez, <i>ye shall sleep,</i>
il dormira, <i>he shall sleep.</i>	ils dormiront, <i>they shall sleep.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Dors, <i>sleep thou,</i>	Dormons, <i>let us sleep,</i>
qu'il dorme, <i>let him sleep.</i>	dormez, <i>sleep ye,</i>
	qu'ils dorment, <i>let them sleep.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je dorme, <i>I may sleep,</i>	Nous dormions, <i>we may sleep,</i>
tu dormes, <i>thou mayest sleep,</i>	vous dormiez, <i>ye may sleep,</i>
il dorme, <i>he may sleep.</i>	ils dorment, <i>they may sleep.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je dormirois, <i>I should sleep,</i>	Nous dormirions, <i>we should sleep,</i>
tu dormirois, <i>thou shouldest sleep,</i>	vous dormiriez, <i>ye should sleep,</i>
il dormiroit, <i>he should sleep.</i>	ils dormiroient, <i>they should sleep.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je dormisse, <i>I might sleep,</i>	Nous dormissions, <i>we might sleep,</i>
tu dormisses, <i>thou mightest sleep,</i>	vous dormissiez, <i>ye might sleep,</i>
il dormit, <i>he might sleep.</i>	ils dormissent, <i>they might sleep.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Dormant, <i>sleeping.</i>	Dormi, <i>slept.</i>
---------------------------	----------------------

E.

ECRIRE, *to write.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

J'écris, <i>I write,</i>	Nous écrivons, <i>we write,</i>
tu écris, <i>thou writest,</i>	vous écrivez, <i>ye write,</i>
il écrit, <i>he writes.</i>	ils écrivent, <i>they write.</i>

G

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

J'écrivois, *I did write,*
tu écrivois, *thou didst write,*
il écrivoit, *he did write.*

PLURAL.

Nous écrivions, *we did write*
vous écriviez, *ye did write,*
ils écrivoient, *they did write.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'écrivis, *I wrote,*
tu écrivis, *thou wrotest,*
il écrivit, *he wrote.*

Nous écrivîmes, *we wrote,*
vous écrivîtes, *ye wrote,*
ils écrivirent, *they wrote.*

FUTURE.

J'écrirai, *I shall write,*
tu écriras, *thou shalt write,*
il écrira, *he shall write.*

Nous écrirons, *we shall write*
vous écrirez, *ye shall write,*
ils écriront, *they shall write.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Ecris, *write thou,*
qu'il écrive, *let him write.*

PLURAL.

Ecrivons, *let us write,*
écrivez, *write ye,*
qu'ils écrivent, *let them write,*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

J'écrive, *I may write,*
tu écrives, *thou mayest write,*
il écrive, *he may write.*

PLURAL.

Nous écrivions, *we may write*
vous écriviez, *ye may write,*
ils écrivent, *they may write.*

IMPERFECT.

J'écrirois, *I should write,*
tu écrirois, *thou shouldst write*
il écriroit, *he should write.*

Nous écrivions, *we sh. write,*
vous écririez, *ye should write,*
ils écriroient, *they sh. write.*

PRETERPERFECT.

J'écrivisse, *I might write,*
tu écrivisses, *thou mig. write,*
il écrivit, *he might write.*

Nous écrivissions, *we might*
vous écrivissiez, *ye mig. write,*
ils écrivissent, *they mig. write.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Ecrivant, *writing.*

PAST.

Ecrit, *written.*

ENVOYER,

ENVOYER, *to send.*

This verb is irregular in two tenses only, *viz.*

FUTURE.

SINGULAR.

J'enverrai, *I shall send,*
tu enverras, *thou shalt send,*
il enverra, *he shall send.*

PLURAL.

Nous enverrons, *we shall send*
vous enverrez, *ye shall send,*
ils enverront, *they shall send.*

IMPERFECT of the Subjunctive Mood.

J'enverrois, *I should send,*
tu enverrois, *thou shouldst send*
il enverroit, *he should send.*

Nous enverrions, *we sho. send,*
vous enverriez, *ye should send,*
ils enverroient, *they sho. send.*

The other tenses are regular. It's compound *renvoyer*, to send back, is likewise irregular only in the two former tenses.

EXCLURE, *to exclude.*

This verb is conjugated like *conclure*, except in the participle past, where it is spelled *exclus*.

F.

FAIRE, *to do, or to make.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je fais, *I do,*
tu fais, *thou doest,*
il fait, *he does.*

PLURAL.

Nous faisons, *we do.*
vous faites, *ye do,*
ils font, *they do.*

IMPERFECT.

Je fesois, *I did,*
tu fesois, *thou didst,*
il fesoit, *he did.*

Nous fisions, *we did.*
vous fésiez, *ye did,*
ils fesoient, *they did.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je fis, *I did,*
tu fis, *thou didst,*
il fit, *he did.*

Nous fîmes, *we did,*
vous fîtes, *ye did,*
ils firent, *they did.*

FUTURE.

Je ferai, *I shall do,*
tu feras, *thou shalt do,*
il fera, *he shall do.*

Nous ferons, *we shall do,*
vous ferez, *ye shall do,*
ils feront, *they shall do.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Fais, *do thou,*
qu'il fasse, *let him do.*

Faisons, *let us do,*
faites, *do ye,*
qu'ils fassent, *let them do.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je fasse, *I may do,*
tu fasses, *thou mayest do,*
il fasse, *he may do.*

Nous fassions, *we may do,*
vous fassiez, *ye may do,*
ils fassent, *they may do.*

IMPERFECT.

Je ferois, *I should do,*
tu ferois, *thou shouldest do,*
il feroit, *he should do.*

Nous ferions, *we should do,*
vous feriez, *ye should do,*
ils feroient, *they should do.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je fisse, *I might do,*
tu fisses, *thou mightest do,*
il fit, *he might do.*

Nous fissions, *we might do,*
vous fissiez, *ye might do,*
ils fissent, *they might do.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Faisant, *doing.*

Fait, *done.*

FUIR, *to fly.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je suis, *I fly,*
tu suis, *thou fliest,*
il suit, *he flies.*

Nous fuyons, *we fly,*
vous fuyez, *ye fly,*
ils fuient, *they fly.*

IMPERFECT.

Je fuyois, *I did fly,*
tu fuyois, *thou didst fly,*
il fuyoit, *he did fly.*

Nous fuyions, *we did fly,*
vous fuyiez, *ye did fly,*
ils fuyoient, *they did fly.*

POTURE.

Je fuirai, *I shall fly,*
tu fuiras, *thou shalt fly,*
il fuira, *he shall fly.*

Nous fuirons, *we shall fly,*
vous fuirez, *ye shall fly,*
ils fuiront, *they shall fly.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Fui, *fly thou,*
qu'il fuye, *let him fly.*

PLURAL.

Fuyons, *let us fly,*
fuyez, *fly ye,*
qu'ils fuyent, *let them fly.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je fuye, *I may fly,*
tu fuyes, *thou mayest fly,*
il fuye, *he may fly.*

PLURAL.

Nous fuyions, *we may fly,*
vous fuyiez, *ye may fly,*
ils fuyent, *they may fly.*

IMPERFECT.

Je fuirais, *I should fly,*
tu fuirais, *thou shouldst fly,*
il fuirait, *he should fly.*

Nous fuirions, *we should fly,*
vous fuiriez, *ye should fly,*
ils fuiraient, *they should fly.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Fuyant, *flying.*

PAST.

Fui, *fled.*

This verb is seldom used in the preterperfect tense of the indicative mood, and in the preterperfect tense of the subjunctive mood; instead of it we say, *Je pris la fuite.* *Je prisse la fuite,* . . . when that verb is neuter; and *J'évitai,* *J'évitasse,* when it is active. I would almost advise always to make use of *prendre la fuite,* or *éviter,* in all moods and tenses. At least it is more elegant and harmonious, except in this expression, *fui, fors d'ici, fly, get you gone.*

H.

HAIR, *to hate.*

This verb is regular; its irregularity falls only upon the pronounciation of the first, second, and third person singular of the present tense of the indicative mood, and of the second person of the singular in the imperative mood. Thus we write and pronounce in one syllable *Je hais,* I hate, *tu hais,* thou hatest, *il hait,* he hates, *hais,* hate thou; whereas, in all other tenses, *a* is pronounced

126 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

separately from the following *i*, and makes a syllable by itself; as, *nous haïssons*, we hate, *vous haïssez*, you hate, *ils haïssent*, they hate.

L.

LIRE, *to read.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je lis, *I read,*
tu lis, *thou readest,*
il lit, *he reads.*

Nous lisons, *we read,*
vous lisez, *ye read,*
ils lisent, *they read.*

IMPERFECT.

Je lisois, *I did read,*
tu lisois, *thou didst read,*
il lisoit, *he did read.*

Nous lisions, *we did read,*
vous lisiez, *ye did read,*
ils lisoient, *they did read.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je lus, *I read,*
tu lus, *thou readedst,*
il lut, *he read.*

Nous lûmes, *we read,*
vous lûtes, *ye read,*
ils lurent, *they read.*

FUTURE.

Je lirai, *I shall read,*
tu liras, *thou shalt read,*
il lira, *he shall read.*

Nous lirons, *we shall read,*
vous lirez, *ye shall read,*
ils liront, *they shall read.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Lis, *read thou,*
qu'il lise, *let him read.*

Lisons, *let us read,*
lisez, *read ye,*
qu'ils lisent, *let them read.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je lise, *I may read,*
tu lises, *thou mayest read,*
il lise, *he may read.*

Nous lisions, *we may read,*
vous lisiez, *ye may read,*
ils lisent, *they may read.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je lirois, <i>I should read,</i>	Nous lirions, <i>we should read,</i>
tu lirois, <i>thou shouldst read,</i>	vous liriez, <i>ye should read,</i>
il liroit, <i>he should read.</i>	ils liroient, <i>they should read.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je lusse, <i>I might read,</i>	Nous lussions, <i>we might read,</i>
tu lusses, <i>thou mightest read,</i>	vous lussiez, <i>ye might read,</i>
il lût, <i>he might read.</i>	ils lussent, <i>they might read.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Lisant, <i>reading.</i>	Lu, <i>read.</i>
-------------------------	------------------

M.

MENTIR, *to lie.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je mens, <i>I lie,</i>	Nous mentons, <i>we lie,</i>
tu mens, <i>thou liest,</i>	vous mentez, <i>ye lie,</i>
il ment, <i>he lies.</i>	ils mentent, <i>they lie.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je mentois, <i>I did lie,</i>	Nous mentions, <i>we did lie,</i>
tu mentois, <i>thou didst lie,</i>	vous mentiez, <i>ye did lie.</i>
il mentoit, <i>he did lie.</i>	ils mentoient, <i>they did lie.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je mentis, <i>I lied,</i>	Nous mentîmes, <i>we lied,</i>
tu mentis, <i>thou liedst,</i>	vous mentîtes, <i>ye lied,</i>
il mentit, <i>he lied.</i>	ils mentirent, <i>they lied.</i>

FUTURE.

Je mentirai, <i>I shall lie,</i>	Nous mentirons, <i>we shall lie,</i>
tu mentiras, <i>thou shalt lie,</i>	vous mentirez, <i>ye shall lie,</i>
il mentira, <i>he shall lie.</i>	ils mentiront, <i>they shall lie.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Mens, <i>lie thou,</i>	Mentons, <i>let us lie,</i>
qu'il mente, <i>let him lie.</i>	mentez, <i>lie ye,</i>
	qu'ils mentent, <i>let them lie.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je mente, *I may lie,*
tu mentes, *thou mayest lie,*
il mente, *he may lie.*

PLURAL.

Nous mentions, *we may lie*
vous mentiez, *ye may lie,*
ils mentent, *they may lie.*

IMPERFECT.

Je mentirois, *I should lie,*
tu mentirais, *thou shouldst lie,*
il mentirait, *he should lie.*

Nous mentirions, *we sho. lie,*
vous mentiriez, *ye should lie,*
ils mentiraient, *they sho. lie.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je mentisse, *I might lie,*
tu mentisses, *thou mightest lie,*
il mentît, *he might lie.*

Nous mentissions, *we mig. lie,*
vous mentissiez, *ye might lie,*
ils mentissent, *they might lie.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Menant, *lying.*

PAST.

| Menti, *lied.*

MEDIRE, to slander.

This verb is conjugated like *contredire*.

MAUDIRE, to curse.

This verb is likewise conjugated like *contredire*, except in the second person plural, where it doubles the *s*; as, *vous maudissez*, you curse; also in all the other tenses and persons, and in the participle present.

METTRE, to put.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je mets, *I put,*
tu mets, *thou puttest,*
il met, *he put.*

PLURAL.

Nous mettons, *we put,*
vous mettez, *ye put,*
ils mettent, *they put.*

IMPERFECT.

Je mettois, *I did put,*
tu mettois, *thou didst put,*
il mettoit, *he did put.*

Nous mettions, *we did put,*
vous mettiez, *ye did put,*
ils mettoient, *they did put.*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je mis, *I put,*
tu mis, *thou puttest,*
il mit, *he put.*

Nous mimes, *we put,*
vous mîtes, *ye put,*
ils mirent, *they put.*

FUTURE.

Je mettrai, *I shall put,*
tu mettras, *thou shalt put,*
il mettra, *he shall put.*

Nous mettrons, *we shall put,*
vous mettrez, *ye shall put,*
ils mettront, *they shall put.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Mets, *put thou,*
qu'il mette, *let him put.*

Mettons, *let us put,*
mettez, *put ye,*
qu'ils mettent, *let them put.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je mette, *I may put,*
tu mettes, *thou mayest put,*
il mette, *he may put.*

Nous mettions, *we may put,*
vous mettiez, *ye may put,*
ils mettent, *they may put.*

IMPERFECT.

Je mettrois, *I should put,*
tu mettrois, *thou shouldst put,*
il mettroit, *he should put.*

Nous mettrions, *we should put,*
vous mettriez, *ye should put,*
ils mettroient, *they should put.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je misse, *I might put,*
tu misses, *thou mightest put,*
il mît, *he might put.*

Nous missions, *we might put,*
vous missiez, *ye might put,*
ils missent, *they might put.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Mettant, *putting.*

Mis, *put.*

MOUDRE, *to grind.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je mouds, *I grind,*
tu mouds, *thou grindest,*
il moud, *he grinds.*

Nous moulons, *we grind,*
vous moulez, *ye grind,*
ils moulent, *they grind.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je moulois, *I did grind,*
tu moulois, *thou didst grind,*
il mouloit, *he did grind.*

PLURAL.

Nous mouliions, *we did grind,*
vous mouliez, *ye did grind,*
ils mouloient, *they did grind.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je moulus, *I ground,*
tu moulus, *thou groundedst,*
il moulut, *he ground.*

Nous moulâmes, *we ground,*
vous moulûtes, *ye ground,*
ils moulurent, *they ground.*

FUTURE.

Je moudrai, *I shall grind,*
tu moudras, *thou shalt grind,*
il moudra, *he shall grind.*

Nous moudrons, *we sh. grind,*
vous moudrez, *ye sh. grind,*
ils moudront, *they sh. grind.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Mouls, *grind thou,*
qu'il moule, *let him grind.*

PLURAL.

Moulons, *let us grind,*
moulez, *grind ye,*
qu'ils moulent, *let them grind.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je moule, *I may grind,*
tu moules, *thou mayst grind,*
il moule, *he may grind.*

PLURAL.

Nous mouliions, *we may grind*
vous mouliez, *ye may grind,*
ils moulent, *they may grind.*

IMPERFECT.

Je moudrois, *I should grind,*
tu moudrois, *thou sho. grind,*
il moudroit, *he should grind.*

Nous moudrions, *we should grind,*
vous moudriez, *ye sho. grind,*
ils moudroient, *they sho. grind.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je moulusse, *I might grind,*
tu moulusses, *thou mig. grind,*
il moulût, *he might grind.*

Nous moulussions, *we might grind,*
vous moulussiez, *ye mi. grind,*
ils moulussent, *they mi. grind.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Moulant, *grinding.*

PAST.

Moulu, *ground.*

MOURIR,

MOURIR, to die.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je meurs, *I die,*
tu meurs, *thou diest,*
il meurt, *he dies.*

PLURAL.

Nous mourons, *we die,*
vous mourez, *ye die,*
ils meurent, *they die.*

IMPERFECT.

Je mourais, *I did die,*
tu mourais, *thou didst die,*
il mourait, *he did die.*

Nous mourions, *we did die,*
vous mouriez, *ye did die,*
ils mouraient, *they did die.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je mourus, *I died,*
tu mourus, *thou diedst,*
il mourut, *he died.*

Nous mourûmes, *we died,*
vous mourûtes, *ye died,*
ils moururent, *they died.*

FUTURE.

Je mourrai, *I shall die,*
tu mourras, *thou shalt die,*
il mourra, *he shall die.*

Nous mourrons, *we shall die,*
vous mourrez, *ye shall die,*
ils mourront, *they shall die.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Meurs, *die thou,*
qu'il meure, *let him die.*

PLURAL.

Mourons, *let us die,*
mourez, *die ye,*
qu'ils meurent, *let them die.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je meure, *I may die,*
tu meures, *thou mayest die,*
il meure, *he may die.*

PLURAL.

Nous mourions, *we may die,*
vous mouriez, *ye may die,*
ils meurent, *they may die.*

IMPERFECT.

Je mourrois, *I should die,*
tu mourrois, *thou shouldst die,*
il mourroit, *he should die.*

Nous mourrions, *we sho. die,*
vous mourriez, *ye shou. die,*
ils mourroient, *they shou. die.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je mourusse, *I might die,*
tu mourusses, *thou might. die,*
il mourût, *he might die.*

Nous mourussions, *we mi. die,*
vous mourussiez, *ye might die,*
ils mourussent, *they might die.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.	PAST.
Mourant, <i>dying.</i>	Mort, <i>dead.</i>

MOUVOIR, *to move.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je meus, <i>I move,</i> tu meus, <i>thou movest,</i> il meut, <i>he moves.</i>	Nous mouvons, <i>we move,</i> vous mouvez, <i>ye move,</i> ils meuvent, <i>they move.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je mouvois, <i>I did move,</i> tu mouvois, <i>thou didst move,</i> il mouvoit, <i>he did move.</i>	Nous mouvions, <i>we did move,</i> vous mouviez, <i>ye did move,</i> ils mouvoient, <i>they did move.</i>
--	---

PRETERPERFECT.

Je mus, <i>I moved,</i> tu mus, <i>thou movedst,</i> il mut, <i>he moved.</i>	Nous mûmes, <i>we moved,</i> vous mûtes, <i>ye moved,</i> ils murent, <i>they moved.</i>
---	--

FUTURE.

Je mouvrai, <i>I shall move,</i> tu mouvras, <i>thou shalt move,</i> il mouvra, <i>he shall move.</i>	Nous mouvrons, <i>we sh. move,</i> vous mouvrez, <i>ye shall move,</i> ils mouvront, <i>they shall move.</i>
---	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Meus, <i>move thou,</i> qu'il meuve, <i>let him move.</i>	Mouvons, <i>let us move,</i> mouvez, <i>move ye,</i> qu'ils meuvent, <i>let them move.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je meuve, <i>I may move,</i> tu meuves, <i>thou mayest move,</i> il meuve, <i>he may move.</i>	Nous mouvions, <i>we may move</i> vous mouviez, <i>ye may move,</i> ils meuvent, <i>they may move.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je mouvrois, <i>I should move,</i> tu mouvrois, <i>thou shd. move,</i> il mouvroit, <i>he should move.</i>	Nous mouvriens, <i>we shd. move</i> vous mouvriez, <i>ye shd. move,</i> ils mouvroient, <i>they shd. move.</i>
--	--

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je musse, *I might move,*
tu musses, *thou mightest move,*
il mût, *he might move.*

Nous mussons, *we might move*
vous musseriez, *ye might move,*
ils mussent, *they might move.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Mouvant, *moving.*

Mu, *moved.*

This verb, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, is seldom used; instead of which we make use of *remuer*, or *mettre en mouvement*, *faire aller d'un lieu à un autre*, *faire changer de place.*

N.

NAÎTRE, *to be born.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je nais, *I am born,*
tu nais, *thou art born,*
il naît, *he is born,*

Nous naissons, *we are born,*
vous naissez, *ye are born,*
ils naissent, *they are born.*

IMPERFECT.

Je naissois, *I was born,*
tu naissois, *thou wast born,*
il naissait, *he was born.*

Nous naissons, *we were born,*
vous naisseriez, *ye were born,*
ils naissent, *they were born.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je naquis, *I was born,*
tu naquis, *thou wast born,*
il naquit, *he was born.*

Nous naquimes, *we were born*
vous naquites, *ye were born,*
ils naquirent, *they were born.*

FUTURE.

Je naîtrai, *I shall be born,*
tu naîtras, *thou shalt be born,*
il naîtra, *he shall be born.*

Nous naîtrons, *we shall be born,*
vous naîtrez, *ye shall be born,*
ils naîtront, *they shall be born.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Nais, *be thou born,*
qu'il naisse, *let him be born.*

PLURAL.

Naïssons, *let us be born,*
naïssiez, *be ye born,*
qu'ils naissent, *let th. be born.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je naisse, *I may be born,*
tu naisses, *thou mayest be born,*
il naisse, *he may be born.*

PLURAL.

Nous naissions, *we may be born,*
vous naissiez, *ye may be born,*
ils naissent, *they may be born.*

IMPERFECT.

Je naîtrois, *I should be born,*
tu naîtrois, *thou sho. be born,*
il naîtroit, *he should be born.*

Nous naîtrions, *we should be born,*
vous naîtriez, *ye sho. be born,*
ils naîtroient, *they sho. be born.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je naquisse, *I might be born,*
tu naquisses, *thou mi. be born,*
il naquît, *he might be born.*

Nous naquissions, *we might be born,*
vous naquissiez, *ye mi. be born,*
ils naquissent, *they m. be born.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Naissant, *being born.*

PAST.

Né, *born.*

O.

OUVRIR, *to open.*

OFFRIR, *to offer.*

These two verbs are conjugated like *couvrir*.

OUIR, *to hear.*

This verb is very seldom used, except in the participle past, and before *dire*; as, *Je l'ai ouï dire*, I heard it. In this case it is conjugated by the help of *avoir* through all its tenses. Instead of the verb *ouïr*, we make use of *entendre*.

PARTIR,

P,

PARTIR, *to go away.*

This verb is conjugated like *mentir*.

PAITRE, *to feed.*

This verb is conjugated like *naitre*, but the two pretertenses and the participle past are wanting, whereas *repaitre*, it's compound, though little used, has them all. See R.

PLAIRE, *to please.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je plais, *I please,*
tu plais, *thou pleasest.*
il plaît, *he pleases.*

Nous plaçons, *we please,*
vous plaisez, *ye please,*
ils plaisent, *they please.*

IMPERFECT.

Je plaisois, *I did please,*
tu plaisois, *thou didst please,*
il plaisoit, *he did please.*

Nous plaissions, *we did please,*
vous plaissiez, *ye did please,*
ils plaisoient, *they did please.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je plus, *I pleased,*
tu plus, *thou pleasedst,*
il plut, *he pleased.*

Nous plûmes, *we pleased,*
vous plûtes, *ye pleased,*
ils plurent, *they pleased.*

FUTURE.

Je plairai, *I shall please,*
tu plairas, *thou shalt please,*
il plaira, *he shall please.*

Nous plairons, *we shall please,*
vous plairez, *ye shall please,*
ils plairont, *they shall please.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Plais, *please thou,*
qu'il plaise, *let him please.*

Plaçons, *let us please,*
plaisez, *please ye,*
qu'ils plaisent, *let them please.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je plaise, *I may please,*
tu plaisses, *thou mayest please,*
il plaise, *he may please.*

PLURAL.

Nous plaissions, *we may please,*
vous plussiez, *ye may please,*
ils plaissent, *they may please.*

IMPERFECT.

Je plairois, *I should please,*
tu plairois, *thou shoud. please,*
il plairait, *he should please.*

Nous plairions, *we shd. please,*
vous plairiez, *ye should please,*
ils plairaient, *they shd. please.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je plusse, *I might please,*
tu plusses, *thou mightest please,*
il plût, *he might please.*

Nous plussions, *we mig. please,*
vous plussiez, *ye might please,*
ils plussent, *they might please.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Plaisant, *pleasing.*

PAST.

Plu, *pleased.*

PAROÎTRE, *to appear.*

This verb and it's compound are conjugated like *croître.*

POUVOIR, *to be able.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je puis, *I am able,*
tu peux, *thou art able,*
il peut, *he is able.*

PLURAL.

Nous pouvons, *we are able,*
vous pouvez, *ye are able,*
ils peuvent, *they are able.*

IMPERFECT.

Je pouvois, *I was able,*
tu pouvois, *thou wast able,*
il pouvoit, *he was able.*

Nous pouvions, *we were able,*
vous pouviez, *ye were able,*
ils pouvoient, *they were able.*

* *Je peux* may be used in conversation and in poetry, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY.

PRETERPERFECT.

PRATERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je pus, <i>I was able,</i>	Nous pûmes, <i>we were able,</i>
tu pus, <i>thou wast able,</i>	vous pûtes, <i>ye were able,</i>
il put, <i>he was able.</i>	ils purent, <i>they were able.</i>

FUTURE.

Je pourrai, <i>I shall be able,</i>	Nous pourrons, <i>we sha. be able</i>
tu pourras, <i>thou shalt be able,</i>	vous pourrez, <i>ye shall be able,</i>
il pourra, <i>he shall be able.</i>	ils pourront, <i>they shall be able.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je puisse, <i>I may be able,</i>	Nous puissions, <i>we may be able</i>
tu puisses, <i>thou mayest be able,</i>	vous puissiez, <i>ye may be able,</i>
il puisse, <i>he may be able.</i>	ils puissent, <i>they may be able.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je pourrais, <i>I should be able,</i>	Nous pourrions, <i>we should</i>
tu pourrais, <i>thou shou. be able,</i>	vous pourriez, <i>ye shou. be able,</i>
il pourroit, <i>he should be able.</i>	ils pourraient, <i>they shou. be able.</i>

PRATERPERFECT.

Je pusse, <i>I might be able,</i>	Nous pussions, <i>we might be</i>
tu pussies, <i>thou mightest be able,</i>	vous pussiez, <i>ye might be able,</i>
il pût, <i>he might be able,</i>	ils pussent, <i>they might be able.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Pouvant, <i>being able.</i>	Êtant, <i>been able,</i>
-----------------------------	--------------------------

PREVOIR, *to foresee.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je prévois, <i>I foresee,</i>	Nous prévoyons, <i>we foresee,</i>
tu prévois, <i>thou foreseeest,</i>	vous prévoyez, <i>ye foresee,</i>
il prévoit, <i>he foresees.</i>	ils prévoient, <i>they foresee.</i>

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je prévoyois, *I did foresee,*
tu prévoyois, *thou didst foresee*
il prévoyoit, *he did foresee.*

[*see,*
Nous prévoyions, *we did foresee,*
vous prévoyiez, *ye did foresee,*
ils prévoyaient, *they did foresee.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je prévis, *I foresaw,*
tu prévis, *thou foresawest,*
il prévint, *he foresaw.*

Nous prévîmes, *we foresaw,*
vous prévîtes, *ye foresaw,*
ils prévirent, *they foresaw.*

FUTURE.

Je prévoirai, *I shall foresee,*
tu prévoiras, *thou shalt foresee,*
il prévoira, *he shall foresee.*

[*foresee,*
Nous prévoirons, *we shall*
vous prévoirez, *ye sha. foresee,*
ils prévoiront, *they sha. foresee.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Prévois, *foresee thou,*
qu'il prévoye, *let him foresee.*

Prévoyons, *let us foresee,*
prévoyez, *foresee ye,*
qu'ils prévoyent, *let th. foresee*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je prévoye, *I may foresee,*
tu prévoyes, *thou mayest foresee.*
il prévoye, *he may foresee.*

[*foresee,*
Nous prévoyions, *we may*
vous prévoyiez, *ye may foresee*
ils prévoyent, *they may foresee*

IMPERFECT.

Je prévoirois, *I should foresee,*
tu prévoirois, *thou sho. foresee,*
il prévoirait, *he should foresee.*

[*foresee,*
Nous prévoirions, *we should*
vous prévoiriez, *ye sh. foresee,*
ils prévoiraient, *they sh. foresee*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je prévisse, *I might foresee,*
tu prévisse, *thou mig. foresee,*
il prévint, *he might foresee.*

[*foresee,*
Nous prévissons, *we might*
vous prévisseriez, *ye mi. foresee,*
ils prévissent, *they mi. foresee.*

PARTICIPLES.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Prévoyant, *foreseeing.*

| Prévu, *foreseen.*

POURVOIR, *to provide.*

This verb is conjugated like *prévoir*, except in both the preter tenses, where it makes *Je pourvus . . . Je pourvusse.*

PREDIRE, *to foretell.*

This verb is conjugated like *confire*.

PRENDRE, *to take.*

PRESENT TENSE,

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je prends, *I take,*
tu prends, *thou takest,*
il prend, *he takes.*

| Nous prenons, *we take,*
vous prenez, *ye take,*
ils prennent, *they take.*

IMPERFECT.

Je prenois, *I did take,*
tu prenois, *thou didst take,*
il prenoit, *he did take.*

| Nous prenions, *we did take,*
vous preniez, *ye did take,*
ils prenoient, *they did take.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je pris, *I took,*
tu pris, *thou tookest,*
il prit, *he took.*

| Nous primes, *we took,*
vous prîtes, *ye took,*
ils prirent, *they took.*

FUTURE.

Je prendrai, *I shall take,*
tu prendras, *thou shalt take,*
il prendra, *he shall take.*

| Nous prendrons, *we shall take,*
vous prendrez, *ye shall take,*
ils prendront, *they shall take.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Prends, *take thou,*
qu'il prenne, *let him take,*

| Prenons, *let us take,*
prenez, *take ye,*
qu'ils prennent, *let them take.*

SUBJUNCTIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je prenne, <i>I may take,</i>	Nous prenions, <i>we may take,</i>
tu prennes, <i>thou mayest take,</i>	vous preniez, <i>ye may take,</i>
il prenne, <i>he may take.</i>	ils prennent, <i>they may take.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je prendrais, <i>I should take,</i>	Nous prendrions, <i>we should take,</i>
tu prendrais, <i>thou sho. take,</i>	vous prendriez, <i>ye should take,</i>
il prendrait, <i>he should take.</i>	ils prendraient, <i>they sho. take.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je prisse, <i>I might take,</i>	Nous prissions, <i>we might take,</i>
tu prisses, <i>thou mightest take,</i>	vous prissiez, <i>ye might take,</i>
il prît, <i>he might take.</i>	ils prissent, <i>they might take.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Prenant, <i>taking.</i>	Pris, <i>taken.</i>
-------------------------	---------------------

R.

REPENTIR (SE), *to repent.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je me repens, <i>I repent,</i>	Nous nous repentons, <i>we repent,</i>
tu te repens, <i>thou repentest,</i>	vous vous repentez, <i>ye repent,</i>
il se repent, <i>he repents.</i>	ils se repentent, <i>they repent.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je me repentois, <i>I did repent,</i>	Nous nous repentions, <i>we did repent,</i>
tu te repentois, <i>th. didst repent,</i>	vous vous repentiez, <i>ye did re.</i>
il se repentoit, <i>he did repent.</i>	ils se repentoient, <i>they did re.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je me repentis, <i>I repented,</i>	Nous nous repentîmes, <i>we repented,</i>
tu te repentis, <i>th. repentest,</i>	vous vous repentîtes, <i>ye rep.</i>
il se repentit, <i>he repented.</i>	ils se repentirent, <i>they repented.</i>

FUTURE.

FUTURE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

<i>[repent,]</i> Je me repentirai, <i>I shall re-</i> tu te repentiras, <i>thou sh. rep.</i> il se repentira, <i>he shall rep.</i>	<i>[shall repent,]</i> Nous nous repentirons, <i>we</i> vous vous repentirez, <i>ye sh. re.</i> ils se repentiront, <i>they sh. rep.</i>
---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Repens-toi, <i>repent thou,</i> qu'il se repente, <i>let him repent.</i>	Repentons-nous, <i>let us repent,</i> repentez-vous, <i>repent ye,</i> qu'ils se repentent, <i>let th. rep.</i>
---	---

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

<i>[may repent,]</i> Je me repente, <i>I may repent,</i> tu te repentes, <i>thou mayest rep.</i> il se repente, <i>he may repent.</i>	<i>[may repent,]</i> Nous nous repentions, <i>we</i> vous vous repentiez, <i>ye m. rep.</i> ils se repentent, <i>they may rep.</i>
--	---

IMPERFECT.

<i>[repent,]</i> Je me repentirois, <i>I should</i> tu te repentirois, <i>thou sh. rep.</i> il se repentiroit, <i>he should rep.</i>	<i>[should repent,]</i> Nous nous repentirions, <i>we</i> vous vous repentiriez, <i>ye sh. re.</i> ils se repentiraient, <i>they sh. re.</i>
---	---

PRETERPERFECT.

<i>[repent,]</i> Je me repentisse, <i>I might re-</i> tu te repentisses, <i>thou mi. rep.</i> il se repentit, <i>he might repent.</i>	<i>[might repent,]</i> Nous nous repentissions, <i>we</i> vous vous repentissiez, <i>ye m. re</i> ils se repentissent, <i>they mi. re.</i>
--	---

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Repentant, <i>repenting.</i>	Repenti, <i>repented.</i>
------------------------------	---------------------------

REJETIR,

REVETIR, *to invest.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je revêts, *I invest,*
tu revêts, *thou investest,*
il revêt, *he invests.*

PLURAL.

Nous revêtons, *we invest,*
vous revêtez, *ye invest,*
ils revêtent, *they invest.*

IMPERFECT.

Je revêtois, *I did invest,*
tu revêtois, *thou didst invest,*
il revêtoit, *he did invest.*

Nous revétions, *we did invest,*
vous revétiez, *ye did invest,*
ils revêtoient, *they did invest.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je revêtis, *I invested,*
tu revêtis, *thou investedst,*
il revêtit, *he invested.*

Nous revêtîmes, *we invested,*
vous revêtîtes, *ye invested,*
ils revêtirent, *they invested.*

FUTURE.

Je revêtirai, *I shall invest,*
tu revêtiras, *thou sha. invest,*
il revêtira, *he shall invest.*

[*vest,*
Nous revêtirons, *we shall in-*
vous revêtirez, *ye sha. invest,*
ils revêtiront, *they shall invest.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Revêts, *invest thou,*
qu'il revête, *let him invest.*

PLURAL.

Revêtons, *let us invest,*
revêtez, *invest ye,*
qu'ils revêtent, *let them invest.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je revête, *I may invest,*
tu revêtes, *thou mayest invest,*
il revête, *he may invest.*

PLURAL.

Nous revétions, *we may invest*
vous revétiez, *ye may invest,*
ils revêtent, *they may invest.*

IMPERFECT.

Je revêtrois, *I should invest,*
tu revêtrois, *thou sho. invest,*
il revêtiroit, *he should invest.*

Nous revêtrions, *we sh. invest*
vous revêtriez, *ye sho. invest,*
ils revêtiroient, *they sh. invest.*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je revêtisse, *I might invest,*
tu revêtisses, *thou mig. invest,*
il revêtît, *he might invest.*

[*invest,*
Nous revêtissions, *we might*
vous revêtissiez, *ye mig. invest,*
il revêtissent, *they mig. invest.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Revêtant, *investing.*

| Revêtu, *invested.*

REPAITRE, *to feed,*

This verb is conjugated like *naitre*, except in both the preter tenses and in the participle past, wherein it makes *Je repus . . . Je repusse . . . repu.*

RESOUDRE, *to resolve.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je résous, *I resolve,*
tu résous, *thou resolvest,*
il résout, *he resolves.*

| Nous résolvons, *we resolve,*
vous résolvez, *ye resolve,*
ils résolvent, *they resolves.*

IMPERFECT.

Je résolvois, *I did resolve,*
tu résolvois, *thou didst resolve,*
il résolvait, *he did resolve.*

[*solve,*
Nous résolvisions, *we did re-*
vous résolviez, *ye did resolve,*
ils résolvoient, *they did resolve.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je résolus, *I resolved,*
tu résolus, *thou resolvedst,*
il résolut, *he resolved.*

| Nous résolûmes, *we resolved,*
vous résolûtes, *ye resolved,*
ils résolurent, *they resolved.*

FUTURE.

Je résoudrai, *I shall resolve,*
tu résoudras, *thou shalt resolve,*
il résoudra, *he shall resolve.*

[*resolve,*
Nous résoudrons, *we shall*
vous résoudrez, *ye sha. resolve,*
ils résoudront, *they sha. resolve.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Résous, *resolve thou,*
qu'il résolve, *let him resolve.*

PLURAL.

Résolvons, *let us resolve,*
résolvez, *resolve ye,*
qu'ils résolvent, *let th. resolve.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je résolve, *I may resolve,*
tu résolves, *thou mayest resolve,*
il résolve, *he may resolve.*

PLURAL.

[*resolve,*
Nous résolvions, *we may re-*
vous résolviez, *ye may resolve,*
ils résolvent, *they may resolve.*

IMPERFECT.

Je résoudrois, *I should resolve,*
tu résoudrois, *thou sho. resolve*
il résoudroit, *he should resolve.*

[*resolve,*
Nous résoudrions, *we should*
vous résoudriez, *ye sho. resolve*
ils résoudroient, *they sho. reso.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je résolusse, *I might resolve,*
tu résolusses, *thou mig. resolve,*
il résolût, *he might resolve.*

[*resolve,*
Nous résolussions, *we might*
vous résolussiez, *ye mi. resolve*
ils résolussent, *they mi. resolve.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Résolvant, *resolving.*

PAST.

Résolu, *resolved.*

* We say likewise *résous*, speaking of things which may be resolved into others. It is never used in the feminine gender according to the FRENCH ACADEMY; thus we say, *un brouillard résous en pluie*, a fog resolved into rain.

ROMPRE, to break.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je romps, *I break,*
tu romps, *thou breakest,*
il rompt, *he breaks.*

PLURAL.

Nous rompons, *we break,*
vous rompez, *ye break,*
ils rompent, *they break.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je rompois, *I did break,*
tu rompois, *thou didst break,*
il rompoit, *he did break.*

PLURAL.

Nous rompions, *we did break,*
vous rompiez, *ye did break,*
ils rompoient, *they did break.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je rompis, *I broke,*
tu rompis, *thou brokest,*
il rompit, *he broke.*

Nous rompîmes, *we broke,*
vous rompîtes, *ye broke,*
ils rompirent, *they broke.*

FUTURE.

Je romprai, *I shall break,*
tu rompras, *thou shalt break,*
il rompra, *he shall break.*

Nous romprons, *we shall break,*
vous romprez, *ye shall break,*
ils rompront, *they shall break.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Rompe, *break thou,*
qu'il rompe, *let him break.*

PLURAL.

Rompons, *let us break,*
rompez, *break ye,*
qu'ils rompent, *let them break.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je rompe, *I may break,*
tu rompes, *thou mayest break,*
il rompe, *he may break.*

PLURAL.

Nous romptions, *we may break,*
vous rompiez, *ye may break,*
ils rompent, *they may break.*

IMPERFECT.

Je romprois, *I should break,*
tu romprois, *thou should break,*
il romproit, *he should break.*

Nous romprions, *we should break,*
vous rompriez, *ye should break,*
ils romproient, *they should break.*

PRÆTERPERFECT.

Je rompisſe, *I might break,*
tu rompisſes, *thou might break,*
il rompit, *he might break.*

[*break,*
Nous rompiſſions, *we might break,*
vous rompiſſiez, *ye might break,*
ils rompiſſent, *they might break.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Rompant, *breaking.*

PAST.

Rompû, *broken.*

H

RIRE,

R I R E, to laugh.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je ris, *I laugh,*
tu ris, *thou laughest,*
il rit, *he laughs.*

PLURAL.

Nous rions, *we laugh,*
vous riez, *ye laugh,*
ils rient, *they laugh.*

IMPERFECT.

Je riois, *I did laugh,*
tu riois, *thou didst laugh,*
il rioit, *he did laugh.*

Nous riions, *we did laugh,*
vous riez, *ye did laugh,*
ils rioient, *they did laugh.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je ris, *I laugh'd,*
tu ris, *thou laugh'dst,*
il rit, *he laugh'd.*

Nous rîmes, *we laugh'd*
vous rîtes, *ye laugh'd,*
ils rirent, *they laugh'd.*

FUTURE.

Je rirai, *I shall laugh.*
tu riras, *thou shalt laugh,*
il rira, *he shall laugh.*

Nous rirons, *we shall laugh,*
vous rirez, *ye shall laugh,*
ils riront, *they shall laugh.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Ris, *laugh thou,*
qu'il rie, *let him laugh.*

PLURAL.

Rions, *let us laugh,*
riez, *laugh ye,*
qu'ils rient, *let them laugh.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je rie, *I may laugh,*
tu ries, *thou mayest laugh,*
il rie, *he may laugh.*

PLURAL.

Nous rions, *we may laugh,*
vous riez, *ye may laugh,*
ils rient, *they may laugh.*

IMPERFECT.

Je rirois, *I should laugh,*
tu rirois, *thou shouldst laugh,*
il riroit, *he should laugh.*

Nous ririons, *we should laugh,*
vous ririez, *ye should laugh,*
ils riroient, *they should laugh.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je rîsse, *I might laugh,*
tu rîsses, *thou mightest laugh,*
il rît, *he might laugh.*

Nous rîssions, *we might laugh,*
vous rîssiez, *ye might laugh,*
ils rîssent, *they might laugh.*

PARTICIPLES.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.	PAST.
Riant, <i>laughing.</i>	Ri, <i>laughed.</i>

S.

S A V O I R, *to know.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je fais*, <i>I know,</i> tu fais, <i>thou knowest,</i> il sait, <i>he knows.</i>	Nous savons, <i>we know,</i> vous savez, <i>ye know.</i> ils savent, <i>they know.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je savois, <i>I did know,</i> tu savois, <i>thou didst know,</i> il savoit, <i>he did know.</i>	Nous savions, <i>we did know,</i> vous saviez, <i>ye did know,</i> ils savoient, <i>they did know.</i>
---	--

PRETERPERFECT.

Je sus, <i>I knew,</i> tu sus, <i>thou knewest,</i> il fut, <i>he knew.</i>	Nous sûmes, <i>we knew,</i> vous sûtes, <i>ye knew,</i> ils surent, <i>they knew.</i>
---	---

FUTURE.

Je saurai, <i>I shall know,</i> tu sauras, <i>thou shalt know,</i> il saura, <i>he shall know.</i>	Nous saurons, <i>we shall know,</i> vous saurez, <i>ye shall know,</i> ils sauront, <i>they shall know.</i>
--	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Sache, <i>know thou,</i> qu'il sache, <i>let him know.</i>	Sachons, <i>let us know,</i> sachez, <i>know ye,</i> qu'ils sachent, <i>let them know.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je sache, <i>I may know,</i> tu saches, <i>thou mayest know,</i> il sache, <i>he may know.</i>	Nous sachions, <i>we may know,</i> vous sachiez, <i>ye may know,</i> ils sachent, <i>they may know.</i>

* Or *Je sai.*

H s

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je saurois, *I should know,*
 tu saurois, *thou shouldst know,*
 il sauroit, *he should know.*

PLURAL.

Nous saurions, *we sho. know,*
 vous sauriez, *ye should know,*
 ils sauroient, *they sho. know.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je fusse, *I might know,*
 tu fusses, *thou mightest know,*
 il fût, *he might know.*

Nous fussions, *we mig. know,*
 vous fussiez, *ye might know,*
 ils fussent, *they might know.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Sachant, *knowing.*

PAST.

| Su, *known.*

SENTIR, *to feel.*

SORTIR, *to go out.*

These two verbs are conjugated like *mentir*. See page 127.

SERVIR, *to serve.*

Je sers, tu sers, il sert, imperative mood second person singular, *sers . . . ir*, in other tenses follows the same variations as *ir* in *mentir*.

SOUFFRIR, *to suffer.*

This verb is conjugated like *couvrir*. See page 112.

SUFFIRE, *to suffice.*

This verb is conjugated like *lire*, except in the two preter tenses and the participle past, where it makes *Je suffis, . . . Je suffisse, . . . suffi*.

SUIVRE, *to follow.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je suis, *I follow,*
 tu suis, *thou followest,*
 il suit, *he follows.*

PLURAL.

Nous suivons, *we follow,*
 vous suivez, *ye follow,*
 ils suivent, *they follow.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je suivois, <i>I did follow,</i>	Nous suivions, <i>we did follow,</i>
tu suivois, <i>thou didst follow,</i>	vous suiviez, <i>ye did follow,</i>
il suivoit, <i>he did follow.</i>	ils suivoient, <i>they did follow.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je suivis, <i>I followed,</i>	Nous suivîmes, <i>we followed,</i>
tu suivis, <i>thou followedst,</i>	vous suivîtes, <i>ye followed,</i>
il suivit, <i>he followed.</i>	ils suivirent, <i>they followed.</i>

FUTURE.

Je suivrai, <i>I shall follow,</i>	Nous suivrons, <i>we sha. follow</i>
tu suivras, <i>thou shalt follow,</i>	vous suivrez, <i>ye shall follow,</i>
il suivra, <i>he shall follow.</i>	ils suivront, <i>they shall follow.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Suis, <i>follow thou,</i>	Suivons, <i>let us follow,</i>
qu'il suive, <i>let him follow.</i>	suivez, <i>follow ye,</i>
	qu'ils suivent, <i>let them follow.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je suive, <i>I may follow,</i>	Nous suivions, <i>we may follow,</i>
tu suives, <i>thou mayest follow,</i>	vous suiviez, <i>ye may follow,</i>
il suive, <i>he may follow.</i>	ils suivent, <i>they may follow.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je suivrois, <i>I should follow,</i>	Nous suivrions, <i>we sho. follow</i>
tu suivrois, <i>thou sho. follow,</i>	vous suivriez, <i>ye sho. follow,</i>
il suivroit, <i>he should follow.</i>	ils suivroient, <i>they sho. follow.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je suivisse, <i>I might follow,</i>	Nous suivissions, <i>we might follow,</i>
tu suivisses, <i>thou mig. follow,</i>	vous suivissiez, <i>ye mig. follow,</i>
il suivît, <i>he might follow.</i>	ils suivissent, <i>they mig. follow.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Suivant, <i>following.</i>	Suivi, <i>followed.</i>
----------------------------	-------------------------

T.

T E N I R, *to hold.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je tiens, *I hold,*
tu tiens, *thou holdest,*
il tient, *he holds.*

Nous tenons, *we hold,*
vous tenez, *ye hold,*
ils tiennent, *they hold.*

IMPERFECT.

Je tenois, *I did hold,*
tu tenois, *thou didst hold,*
il tenoit, *he did hold.*

Nous tenions, *we did hold,*
vous teniez, *ye did hold,*
ils tenoient, *they did hold.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je tins, *I held,*
tu tins, *thou heldest,*
il tint, *he held.*

Nous tinmes, *we held,*
vous tintes, *ye held,*
ils tinrent, *they held.*

FUTURE.

Je tiendrai, *I shall hold,*
tu tiendras, *thou shalt hold,*
il tiendra, *he shall hold.*

Nous tiendrons, *we shall hold,*
vous tiendrez, *ye shall hold,*
ils tiendront, *they shall hold.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Tiens, *hold thou,*
qu'il tienne, *let him hold.*

Tenons, *let us hold,*
tenez, *hold ye,*
qu'ils tiennent, *let them hold.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je tienne, *I may hold,*
tu tiennes, *thou mayest hold,*
il tienne, *he may hold.*

Nous tenions, *we may hold,*
vous teniez, *ye may hold,*
ils tiennent, *they may hold.*

IMPERFECT.

Je tiendrois, *I should hold,*
tu tiendrois, *thou should hold,*
il tiendrait, *he should hold.*

Nous tiendrions, *we should hold,*
vous tiendriez, *ye should hold,*
ils tiendraient, *they should hold.*

PRETERPERFECT.

PRETERPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je tinſſe *, <i>I might bold,</i>	Nous tinſſions, <i>we might bold,</i>
tu tinſſes, <i>thou mighteſt bold,</i>	vous tinſſiez, <i>ye might bold,</i>
il tint, <i>he might bold.</i>	ils tinſſent, <i>they might bold.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Tenant, <i>holding.</i>	Tenu, <i>beld.</i>
-------------------------	--------------------

* The FRENCH ACADEMY ſpell it in that manner.

T A I R E (S E) *to hold one's tongue.*

This verb is conjugated like *plaire*. See page 135.

T R A I R E, *to milk.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je trais, <i>I milk,</i>	Nous trayons, <i>we milk,</i>
tu trais, <i>thou milkeſt,</i>	vous trayez, <i>ye milk,</i>
il trait, <i>he milks.</i>	ils traient, <i>they milk.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je trayois, <i>I did milk,</i>	Nous trayions, <i>we did milk,</i>
tu trayois, <i>thou diſt milk,</i>	vous trayiez, <i>ye did milk,</i>
il trayoit, <i>he did milk.</i>	ils trayoient, <i>they did milk.</i>

FUTURE.

Je trairai, <i>I ſhall milk,</i>	Nous trairons, <i>we ſhall milk,</i>
tu trairas, <i>thou ſhalt milk,</i>	vous trairez, <i>ye ſhall milk,</i>
il traira, <i>he ſhall milk.</i>	ils trairont, <i>they ſhall milk.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Trais, <i>milk thou,</i>	Trayons, <i>let us milk.</i>
qu'il traye, <i>let him milk.</i>	trayez, <i>milk ye,</i>
	qu'ils trayent, <i>let them milk.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je traye, *I may milk,*
tu trazes, *thou mayest milk,*
il traye, *he may milk.*

Nous trayons, *we may milk,*
vous trayiez, *ye may milk,*
ils trayent, *they may milk.*

IMPERFECT.

Je traïrois, *I should milk,*
tu traïrois, *thou shouldst milk,*
il traïroit, *he should milk.*

Nous traïrions, *we sho. milk.*
vous traïriez, *ye should milk,*
ils traïroient, *they sho. milk.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Trayant, *milking.*

Trait, *milked.*

TRESSAILLIR, *to start.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je tressaille, *I start,*
tu tressailles, *thou startest,*
il tressaille, *he starts.*

Nous tressaillons, *we start,*
vous tressaillez, *ye start,*
ils tressaillent, *they start.*

IMPERFECT.

Je tressaillois, *I did start,*
tu tressaillois, *thou didst start,*
il tressailloit, *he did start.*

Nous tressaillions, *we did start.*
vous tressaillez, *ye did start,*
ils tressailloient, *they did start.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je tressaillis, *I started,*
tu tressaillis, *thou startedst,*
il tressaillit, *he started.*

Nous tressaillîmes, *we started*
vous tressaillîtes, *ye started,*
ils tressaillirent, *they started.*

FUTURE.

Je tressaillirai, *I shall start,*
tu tressailliras, *thou shalt start*
il tressaillira, *he shall start.*

Nous tressaillirons, *we shall start,*
vous tressaillirez, *ye sh. start,*
ils tressailliront, *they sh. start.*

IMPERATIVE

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je tressaille, *I may start,*
tu tressailles, *thou mayest start,*
il tressaille, *he may start.*

[*start,*
Nous tressaillions, *we may*
vous tressailliez, *ye may start,*
ils tressaillent, *they may start.*

IMPERFECT.

Je tressaillirois, *I should start,*
tu tressaillirois, *thou sh. start,*
il tressailliroit, *he should start.*

[*start,*
Nous tressaillirions, *we should*
vous tressailliriez, *ye sh. start,*
ils tressailliroient, *they sh. start*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je tressaillisse, *I might start,*
tu tressaillisses, *thou mi. start,*
il tressaillît, *he might start.*

[*start,*
Nous tressaillissions, *we might*
vous tressaillissiez, *ye m. start,*
ils tressaillissent, *they mi. start*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Tressaillant, *starting.*

| Tressailli, *started.*

N. B. The FRENCH ACADEMY say *tressaillir de peur, de crainte*, to start out of fear: *tressaillir de joie*, to leap for joy.

V.

VENIR, *to come.*

This verb is conjugated like *tenir*. See page 150.

VOIR, *to see.*

This verb is conjugated like *prévoir*, except in the future and in the preterperfect tenses of the subjunctive mood, where it makes *Je verrai, Je verrois*.

VALOIR, to be worth.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je vauz, *I am worth,*
tu vauz, *thou art worth,*
il vaut, *he is worth.*

Nous valons, *we are worth,*
vous valez, *ye are worth,*
ils valent, *they are worth.*

IMPERFECT.

Je valois, *I was worth,*
tu valois, *thou wast worth,*
il valoit, *he was worth.*

Nous valions, *we were worth,*
vous valiez, *ye were worth,*
ils valaient, *they were worth.*

PASTERPERFECT.

Je valus, *I was worth,*
tu valus, *thou wast worth,*
il valut, *he was worth.*

Nous valûmes, *we were worth,*
vous valûtes, *ye were worth,*
ils valurent, *they were worth.*

FUTURE.

Je vaudrai, *I shall be worth,*
tu vaudras, *thou sh. be worth,*
il vaudra, *he shall be worth.*

Nous vaudrons, *we shall be worth,*
vous vaudrez, *ye sh. be worth,*
ils vaudront, *they sh. be worth.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Vauz, *be thou worth.*
qu'il vaille, *let him be worth.*

Valons, *let us be worth,*
valez, *be ye worth,*
qu'ils vaillent, *let th. be worth.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je vaille, *I may be worth,*
tu vailles, *thou mayest be worth,*
il vaille, *he may be worth.*

Nous valions, *we may be worth,*
vous valiez, *ye may be worth,*
ils valent, *they may be worth.*

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je vaudrois, <i>I sh. be worth,</i>	Nous vaudrions, <i>[worth, we should be</i>
tu vaudrois, <i>thou sh. be worth,</i>	vous vaudriez, <i>ye sh. be worth,</i>
il vaudroit, <i>he should be worth.</i>	ils vaudroient, <i>they sh. be worth.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je valusse, <i>I might be worth,</i>	Nous valussions, <i>[worth, we might be</i>
tu valusses, <i>thou mi. be worth,</i>	vous valussiez, <i>ye mi. be worth,</i>
il valût, <i>he might be worth.</i>	ils valussent, <i>they mi. be worth,</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Valant, *being worth.*

| Valu, *been worth.*

Prévaloir, to prevail, is conjugated in the same manner, except that in the third person singular of the imperative mood it makes *prévale*, and in the present tense of the subjunctive mood it makes, in the singular, *Je prévale, tu prévalues, il prévale.*

VOULOIR, to be willing.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je veux, <i>I am willing,</i>	Nous voulons, <i>we are willing</i>
tu veux, <i>thou art willing,</i>	vous voulez, <i>ye are willing,</i>
il veut, <i>he is willing.</i>	ils veulent, <i>they are willing.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je voulois, <i>I was willing,</i>	Nous voulions, <i>[ling. we were willing</i>
tu voulois, <i>thou wast willing,</i>	vous vouliez, <i>ye were willing,</i>
il vouloit, <i>he was willing.</i>	ils vouloient, <i>they were will.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je voulus, <i>I was willing,</i>	Nous voulûmes, <i>[ling. we were willing</i>
tu voulus, <i>thou wast willing,</i>	vous voulûtes, <i>ye were willing</i>
il voulut, <i>he was willing.</i>	ils voulurent, <i>they were will.</i>

156 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

FUTURE,

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je voudrai, <i>I shall be willing,</i>	[willing,
tu voudras, <i>thou sha. be willing</i>	Nous voudrons, <i>we shall be</i>
il vaudra, <i>he shall be willing.</i>	vous voudrez, <i>ye sha. be will.</i>
	ils voudront, <i>they sh. be willing</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je veuille, <i>I may be willing,</i>	[willing,
tu veuilles, <i>thou ma. be willing</i>	Nous voulions, <i>we may be</i>
il veuille, <i>he may be willing.</i>	vous vouliez, <i>ye m. be willing,</i>
	ils vueillent, <i>they m. be willing</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je voudrais, <i>I should be wil-</i>	[ling,
tu voudrais, <i>th. sho. be willing</i>	Nous voudrions, <i>we should be</i>
il voudrait, <i>he sho. be willing.</i>	vous voudriez, <i>ye sh. be willing</i>
	ils voudroient, <i>they sho. be wil.</i>

PRETERPERFECT.

Je voulusse, <i>I might be wil-</i>	[ling,
tu voulusses, <i>thou mig. be will.</i>	Nous voulussions, <i>we might be</i>
il voulût, <i>he mig. be willing.</i>	vous voulussiez, <i>ye mi. be will,</i>
	ils voulussent, <i>they mi. be will.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

Voulant, <i>being willing.</i>	Voulu, <i>been willing.</i>
--------------------------------	-----------------------------

V I V R E, *to live.*

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je vis, <i>I live,</i>	Nous vivons, <i>we live,</i>
tu vis, <i>thou livest,</i>	vous vivez, <i>ye live,</i>
il vit, <i>he lives.</i>	ils vivent, <i>they live.</i>

IMPERFECT.

SINGULAR.

Je vivois, *I did live,*
tu vivois, *thou didst live,*
il vivoit, *he did live.*

PLURAL.

Nous vivions, *we did live,*
vous viviez, *ye did live,*
ils vivoient, *they did live.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je vécus, *I lived,*
tu vécus, *thou livedst,*
il vécut, *he lived.*

Nous vécûmes, *we lived,*
vous vécûtes, *ye lived,*
ils vécurent, *they lived.*

FUTURE.

Je vivrai, *I shall live,*
tu vivras, *thou shalt live,*
il vivra, *he shall live.*

Nous vivrons, *we shall live,*
vous vivrez, *ye shall live,*
ils vivront, *they shall live.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

Vis, *live thou,*
qu'il vive, *let him live.*

PLURAL.

Vivons, *let us live,*
vivez, *live ye,*
qu'ils vivent, *let them live.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

Je vive, *I may live,*
tu vives, *thou mayest live,*
il vive, *he may live.*

PLURAL.

Nous vivions, *we may live,*
vous viviez, *ye may live,*
ils vivent, *they may live.*

IMPERFECT.

Je vivrois, *I should live,*
tu vivrois, *thou shouldest live,*
il vivroit, *he should live.*

Nous vivrions, *we should live,*
vous vivriez, *ye should live.*
ils vivroient, *they should live.*

PRETERPERFECT.

Je vécusse, *I might live,*
tu vécusses, *thou mightest live,*
il vécût, *he might live.*

Nous vécussions, *we might live,*
vous vécussiez, *ye might live,*
ils vécussent, *they might live.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Vivant, *living.*

PAST.

Vécu, *lived.*

VAINCRE,

VAINCRE, to vanquish.

This verb is conjugated like *convaincre*, but it is seldom used in some tenses, never in the singular of the present tense of the indicative mood. Instead of this verb, we often make use of *triompher*, *surmonter*, *être victorieux*.

Particular Observations upon some Verbs, chiefly Defective, and their Manner of being conjugated and used, in an alphabetical Order.

ASSORTIR, to suit, to match : this verb is regular, and conjugated like *punir* : so is *ressortir*, when it signifies to be under the jurisdiction of a court : but, when it signifies to go out again, it is irregular, and conjugated like *partir*.

BRAIRE, to bray : this verb is used only in the following tenses, *il brait*, *il braira*, *il brairait*.

BRUIRE, to bluster : this verb is used only in the infinitive, and in the third person of the imperfect tense, indicative mood, both singular and plural, *il bruioit*, *ils bruioient* ; as, *les vents bruioient*, the winds blustered. *Bruyant*, having both genders and numbers, is, by no means, the participle of this verb, but an adjective ; as, *les vots bruyans*, the blustering waves.

CHOIR, to fall : this verb is hardly used, but in the infinitive mood and in the participle past *chu*. Instead of the feminine *chue*, we formerly made use of *chute*, which is still used in these proverbial manners of speaking, *chercher chute-chute*, *trouver chute-chute*, to look for, to find some occasion to make an advantage of the negligence or misfortune of somebody.

CLORE, to close : this verb is used only in the three persons singular of the present tense, indicative mood, *je clos*, *tu clos*, *il clôt* ; in the future, *je clorrai* ; in the imperfect tense of the subjunctive mood, *je clorrois*, and in the participle past, *clos*. This verb is sometimes neuter in the third person singular ; as, *la porte ne clôt pas bien*, *il y faut mettre de la lisière*, *elle clorra mieux* ; the door does not shut well, you must put some list to it, it will shut better.

DEFAILLIR,

DEFAILLIR, *to decay, to grow faint and weak*: this verb is used only in the plural number of the indicative mood, present tense, *nous défaillons, vous défaillez, ils défaillent*; in the imperfect and preterperfect tenses, both singular and plural, of the same mood, *je défaisallois, &c. je défaisillis, &c.* in all it's compound tenses, *j'ai défaisilli, &c.* and in the infinitive mood. Instead of this verb, it is always better to make use of *tomber en défaillance*. This verb likewise signifies to fail, to want; as, *toutes choses commencent à leur défaiiller*, they begin to want every thing; but in this sense it grows obsolete, and has no participle active in either sense.

DEMOUVOIR, *to make desist*, (a law term :) this verb is used only in the infinitive mood; as, *rien ne l'a pu dénouvoir de ses prétensions*, nothing could make him give up his pretensions.

ECHOIR, *to fall out, to chance*: this verb is conjugated like *déchoir*, see page 118; but it is used only in the third person singular of the indicative mood present tense, in the preterperfect and future tenses of the same mood, in the imperfect and preterperfect tenses of the subjunctive mood, in the participle past, and in the participle of the present wherein it makes *échéant*.

ECLORÉ, *to be hatched*: this verb is used only in the third person singular and plural of the present tense, indicative mood, *il éclôt, ils éclosent*; in the future, *il éclorait, ils écloront*; in the present tense, subjunctive mood, *il éclosse, ils éclosent*; in the imperfect tense of the same mood, *il écloroit, ils écloroient*, and in the participle past, wherein it makes *éclos*. This verb, in it's compound tenses, is conjugated with the auxiliary verb *être*, and is sometimes used in a figurative sense, speaking of one's thoughts, designs, &c. which begin to be discovered, after having been some time hidden; as, *ses desseins écloront quelque jour*, his designs will one day come to light.

EMOUVOIR, *to stir up, to move*: this verb is conjugated like *mouvoir*, see page 132: it is used both in a proper and figurative sense; in the first, it is said of the most subtle parts of the body, as humours, vapours, blood, &c. as, *le soleil émeut les vapeurs*, the sun stirs up the vapours; in the second, it is applied to whatever may excite or cause a motion, excite a passion, &c. as, *c'est un homme que rien n'émeut*, he is a man whom nothing moves. This verb is likewise

wife used in a reflective sense; as, *il s'émut une grande tempête*, there arose a great tempest.

ENCLORRE, *to enclose*, is conjugated like *clorre*, and used in the same tenses.

ENSUIVRE (*s'en*), *to ensue, to follow*: this verb is conjugated like *suivre*, in all it's tenses and moods only in the third person singular and plural. See page 148.

FAILLIR, *to fail*: this verb is conjugated in the present tense, indicative mood, *je faux, tu faux, il faut, nous faillons, vous failliez, il faillent*; in the preterperfect tense of the same mood, *je faillis, &c.* and in the participle active, *faillant*; as, *arriver à jour faillant*, to arrive at the break of day. This verb is seldom used; however, we still make use of the participle past; as, *s'il a failli, il faut qu'il soit puni*; if he has done amiss, he must be punished. We likewise say in conversation, *le cœur me faut*, I am fainting.

FALLOIR sometimes signifies to want, to come short, to to be far from; as, *il s'en faut beaucoup*, there wants a great deal, it comes infinitely short: in this sense, it is preceded by *s'en* and conjugated only in the third person singular, both in it's simple and compound tenses; as, *il s'en faut, falloir, fallut, faudra, faillie, faudroit, fallût; il s'en est fallu, &c.*

FERIR, *to strike*: this verb is used in the infinitive mood, only in this phrase, *sans coup férir*, without striking a blow. The participle past *feru* is still used in the two following expressions, speaking in a jest; as, *il est feru contre un tel*, he is indisposed against such a one; *il est feru de cette femme*, he is smitten with this woman.

FRIRE, *to fry*: this verb is used only in the three persons singular of the present tense, indicative mood, *je fris, tu fris, il frit*: in the future tense singular and plural, *je frirai, &c.* in the imperative mood second person singular, *fris*: in the imperfect tense, subjunctive mood,

• The authors of the Dictionary of Trevoux have *je faillirai* in the future tense; they seem to be in the right: however, we say, *son ami ne lui faudra pas au besoin*, his friend will not be wanting to him in time of need; "but then it is rather the future of the verb *falloir*; which, though different from the verb *faillir*, has sometimes the same signification." DICTIONNAIRE DE TREVOUX.

singular

singular and plural, *je ferois*, &c. and in the participle past *fut*.

GESIR, *to lie*: this verb is quite obsolete, even in the infinitive mood; however, we still say *gît*, *nous gisons*, *ils gisent*, *il gisoit*; as, *tout gît en cela*, the whole business lies in that point; *ci-gît*, here lies.

LUIRE, *to shine*: this verb is conjugated like *traduire*, see page 96, except in the participle past, where it makes *lui*; and so is it's compound *reluire*: moreover these two verbs want the preterperfect tense of the indicative and subjunctive moods.

NUIRE, *to hurt*: this verb, in all it's tenses and moods, is conjugated like *traduire*, except in the participle past, where it makes *nui*.

PLEUVOIR, *to rain*: this verb wants the participle of the present, and is used only in the third person singular, and sometimes in the plural, see page 266, — *il pleut*, *il pleuvoit*, *il plut*, *il pleuvra*, *il pleuve*, *il pleuvroit*, *il plût*, *plu*.

PROMOUVOIR, *to promote*: this verb is used only in the infinitive mood, and in the participle past *promu*.

QUERIR, *to fetch*: this verb is used only in the infinitive mood, with the verbs *aller*, *venir*, and *envoyer*; as, *allez querir*, go and fetch.

RAVOIR, *to have again*: this verb is used only in the infinitive mood.

REPARTIR: when this verb signifies either to go away again, to set out again, or to reply, it takes no accent upon the first syllable, is irregular, and conjugated like *partir*; but, when it signifies to share, to divide, it takes an acute accent upon the first syllable, is regular, conjugated like *punir*, and scarce used, but in a few expressions speaking of an estate, money, &c. as, *répartir une somme d'argent*, to divide a sum of money.

SAILLIR: when this verb signifies to gush out, it is regular, and conjugated like *punir*; but, when it signifies to jut out, it is irregular, wants the participle past, is used only in the infinitive mood, and in the third person of some tenses; as, *ce balcon, cette corniche saille trop*, *saillera trop*, *sailleroit trop*. In this sense, it likewise wants the participle of the present, though we say in fortification *angle saillant*, and in architecture *corniche saillante*, but then it is an adjective.

SEoir,

162 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

SEoir, *to sit well, to become* : this verb is never used in the infinitive mood, but only in the third person singular and plural of the following tenses, *il sied, ils sient ; il seyoit, ils seyoient ; il siéra, ils siéront ; il siéroit, ils siéroient*. This verb is still used in the participle of the present ; as, *cette couleur vous seyant si bien, vous auriez tort d'en porter d'autre*, since this colour becomes you so well, you should be in the wrong to wear any other ; but it is better to avoid it. This verb is sometimes impersonally used ; as, *il sied mal à un homme de . . .*, it does not become a man to . . . This verb, in the sense of to sit down, is obsolete ; however, in chancery or law, we still make use of the participle of the present *séant*, and the participle of the past *sis* : the former is applied to a person or persons who are sitting or residing ; as, *le roi séant en son lit de justice*, the king sitting on his throne ; *le parlement est séant*, the parliament is sitting ; the latter signifies situated ; as, *un héritage sis à . . .*, an estate situated at . . . ; *une maison sise rue St. Paul*, an house situated in St. Paul's street.

SORTIR : when this verb is used in law and signifies to get, to obtain, it is regular, and conjugated like *punir* ; but it is used in a few tenses ; as, *cette sentence sortira son plein & entier effet*, the sentence will take effect ; *j'entends que cette clause sortisse son plein & entier effet*, I expect this clause should take effect.

SOUDRE (*une question*) *to solve or resolve* (a question) and not, as in Chambaud's Grammar, to solder, which is *souder*, a regular verb, and conjugated like *aimer*. The verb *soudre* is used only in the infinitive mood, but it is obsolete, and we make use of *résoudre*.

SURSEoir, *to supersede, to put off* : this verb is only used in law, and conjugated in the following manner ; *je sursois, tu sursois, il sursoit, nous sursoyons, vous sursoyez, ils sursoient. Je sursoyois, &c. Je sursis, &c. Je surseoirai, &c. Je surseoirois, &c. Je sursisse, &c. Sursoyant. Sursis*. The imperative mood, and the present tense of the subjunctive mood, are not used.

P A R T III.

T H E

THEORY joined to PRACTICE,

THE FIRST CONTAINS THE
RULES of the FRENCH SYNTAX;

W I T H

Many NEW OBSERVATIONS.

THE SECOND CONTAINS THE

RULES and OBSERVATIONS exemplified
SEPARATELY,

F O R T H E

SCHOLAR'S PRACTICE, after each
PART of SPEECH.

C H A P. I.

Rules and Observations upon Articles.

1. **T**HE definite article is used before the common nouns, denoting an individual distinction, or a totality of objects: as, the spring is an agreeable season, *le printemps est une saison agréable*; men are mortal, *les hommes sont mortels*.

2. The indefinite article is used before nouns taken in an indefinite and indeterminate sense, or in a sense which
does

164 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

does not denote either an individual distinction, or a specific totality ; as, learned people have approved of his work, *des savans ont approuvé son ouvrage.*

3. All common nouns of substances take the definite article ; also names of kingdoms, rivers, provinces, mountains, &c. unless they signify the remaining in, going to, or coming from ; in this case we make use of the prepositions *en* and *de* ; as, I am going to France, *je vais en France.* He is arrived from Flanders, *il est arrivé de Flandre.* They live in Italy, *ils demeurent en Italie.*

4. Proper names in the plural take the definite article, though they have none in the singular ; as, *les Homères, les Virgiles, &c.*

5. When a superlative follows immediately it's substantive, the definite article is always put before the superlative in the first case, and agrees with the substantive in gender and number ; as, he is the most learned man, *c'est l'homme le plus savant.* You speak of the most learned man, *vous parlez de l'homme le plus savant.*

Except when *un* or *une* are followed by a substantive ; in this case the definite article is commonly used in the second case plural ; as, he is one of the most learned men, *c'est un homme des plus savans, or, c'est un des hommes des plus savans.*

6. Adjectives used substantively take the article ; as, idle people are despised, *les paresseux sont méprisés.* Also nouns of measure, weight, &c. of things bought or sold take the definite article, rendered in English by a or an ; as, a crown a bushel, *un écu le boisseau.*

7. When a substantive, having the definite article before it, is preceded by *tout*, the article is kept, in the first case, through all the cases of *tout* ; as, all the world, *tout le monde* ; of all the world, *de tout le monde* ; to all the world, *à tout le monde.*

8. Some adverbs or prepositions, used substantively, require the article ; as, the inside, *le dedans* ; the outside, *le dehors* ; the upper part, *le dessus* ; the under part, *le dessous.*

9. The definite article is put before the names of the Italian authors according to their syntax ; as, *Tasse, le Tasse* ;

* L'Abbé Girard, *Vrais Principes de la Langue Françoisé*, Page 372, &c.

except

except *Raphaël, Michel-Ange, Pétrarque, Boccace, Sannazar, &c.* and those who have written in Latin, as, *Sadolet, Manuce, Baronius, &c.*

10. After the verb *jouer*, to play, we make use of the definite article in the second case, speaking of musical instruments; as, *jouer du violon, de la guitare*; and speaking of games of cards, or of some bodily exercises, we make use of the same article in the third case; as, *jouer aux cartes, à la paume*; and after *joueur*, a player, we make use of the preposition *de* in both instances; as, *un joueur de violon, de guitare, de cartes, de paume*.

11. The adverb *bien*, taken for *beaucoup*, much, takes after it the definite article in the second case; as, he has much money, *il a bien de l'argent*; whereas *beaucoup* takes the preposition *de*; as, *il a beaucoup d'argent*; unless it be determined and specified by a relative pronoun that follows it, as, *il a dépensé beaucoup de l'argent que vous lui aviez donné*, he has spent a great deal of the money that you gave him.

12. Some names of countries, contrary to the exceptions of the third rule, retain their article, even when they signify the remaining in, coming to, or going from. These nouns are particularly those of remote countries, viz. of America, Asia, or Africa, to which we may join *la Marche, le Perche, le Maine, &c.* provinces in France: *le Mans, le Catelet, la Fère, la Ferté, le Havre de Grace, la Rochelle, le Quenoy, &c.* cities in France: *le Mantouan, le Milanois, le Parmesan, &c.* divisions of Italy: to which add *la Haye*, the Hague.

13. No article is used before cardinal numbers; except first, when the nouns to which they are joined have a fixed number, either by themselves; as, *les quatre saisons*, the four seasons; or by a relation to something else expressed by the circumstances of the discourse; as, *les deux lettres que je vous ai écrites*, the two letters which I wrote to you. Secondly, speaking of cards, or the days of the month; as, *le dix, le neuf . . de Janvier, de Février, . . de cœur, de pique, &c.*

14. No article is used before proper names, particular places, towns, or villages, &c.

Except some nouns, when they denote an individual distinction, or a particular appellation; as, *l'Albatre de*

RACINE,

RACINE, *la Mérope* de VOLTAIRE, speaking of two plays of these two authors.

15. No article is used before nouns immediately following certain verbs, or prepositions, with which they form a kind of adverb ; as, *avec amitié*, with friendship ; *sans didain*, without disdain ; *par dépit*, through spite ; *avoir envie*, to have a mind to.

Except, first, when these nouns are followed by the relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *lequel*, &c. Secondly, by a superlative. Thirdly, by a noun in the second case.

16. No article is used after the preposition *en*, except in a very few cases, which shall be taken notice of in the observations about prepositions ; whereas *dans* always requires an article after it, unless it be followed by a conjunctive possessive pronoun ; as, *dans ma chambre*, in my room.

17. No article is used before a noun which follows immediately a name of a particular place, to which it belongs ; as, I was born in London, the capital city of England ; *Je suis né à Londres, ville capitale d'Angleterre*. Neither is the article used after the verb *être* ; as, *Je suis médecin*, I am a physician, and not *Je suis un médecin* ; unless in the exception of the 15th observation, and unless that verb be preceded by *ce* ; as, *c'est un médecin*.

18. The indefinite articles *des*, *de*, *du*, *de la*, *à du*, *à des*, *à de*, *à de la*, are used according to the second observation, and answer to some, either expressed or understood, before a substantive.

19. When the adjective goes before it's substantive, instead of the foregoing indefinite articles, we make use of *de* for the first case, *à de* for the third case ; as, *voilà de bon pain*, there is good bread ; *voilà de belles dames*, there are fine ladies ; and not, *du bon pain* ; *des belles dames*.

N. B. There are some substantives in the plural, though preceded by their adjectives, where we make use of *des*, and not *de* : it happens when the adjective and substantive make but one idea, and the adjective is only used to render the signification of the substantive complete ; such are *belles-lettres*, *beaux esprits*, *grands seigneurs*, which signify *belles-lettres*, men of learning, people of great quality.

20. The articles *un, une*, are used when they signify only a kind of indeterminate individuality, or an individuality in an indeterminate manner; as, a king ought to be the father of his people, *un roi doit être le père de son peuple*. However, these articles may sometimes be resolved into the definite article: as, a wise man ought to rule his passions, *un homme sage doit régler ses passions*, or *l'homme sage*, &c. The articles *un* and *une* are expressed in English by a or an.

21. Articles are repeated before each substantive though synonymous; as, *les faveurs & les grâces que nous recevons du ciel*, the favours and kindnesses which we receive from heaven.

22. When two adjectives, positively used, are joined together by a conjunction, and have the same substantive, the article is only put before the first of them, if they are synonymous, or very near alike; as, *les riches & magnifiques présens*, the rich and magnificent presents. If they are not synonymous, the article must be repeated; as, *les riches & les pauvres*, the rich and the poor.

Rules and Observations upon Articles exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

There are nine parts of speech: <i>the</i> * article, <i>the</i> noun, <i>the</i> pronoun, <i>the</i> verb, <i>the</i> participle, <i>the</i> adverb, <i>the</i> preposition, <i>the</i> conjunction, <i>the</i> interjection.	Il y a neuf parties d'oraison: l'* article, <i>le</i> nom, <i>le</i> pronom, <i>le</i> verbe, <i>le</i> participe, <i>l'</i> adverbe, <i>la</i> préposition, <i>la</i> conjonction, <i>l'</i> interjection.
--	---

<i>The</i> article shews <i>the</i> object or thing.	<i>L'</i> article montre <i>l'</i> objet ou <i>la</i> chose.
--	--

<i>The</i> noun names <i>the</i> thing.	<i>Le</i> nom nomme <i>la</i> chose.
---	--------------------------------------

<i>The</i> pronoun supplies <i>the</i> place of <i>the</i> noun.	<i>Le</i> pronom tient <i>la</i> place du nom.
--	--

<i>The</i> verb shews <i>the</i> action or passion of <i>the</i> object.	<i>Le</i> verbe montre <i>l'</i> action, ou <i>la</i> passion de <i>l'</i> objet.
--	---

* The words which are the objects of the rules are printed in Italic, both in the French and English examples; if there be any expressed in the last, throughout the rules and observations exemplified, to the end of the FRENCH SYNTAX.

<i>The</i> participle partakes of the nature of the verb and noun: it serves for the conjugation of passive verbs, and for that of the compound tenses of the other verbs.	Le participe tient de la nature du verbe & du nom: il sert à la conjugaison des verbes passifs, & à celle des temps composés des autres verbes.
<i>The</i> adverb marks the difference and circumstances of the action or passion.	L'adverbe marque la différence & les circonstances de l'action ou de la passion.
<i>The</i> preposition is an indeclinable word, placed before the nouns, pronouns, and verbs which it governs.	La préposition est un mot indéclinable, placé devant les noms, les pronoms & les verbes qu'elle régit.
<i>The</i> conjunction joins the words and phrases.	La conjonction joint les mots & les phrases.
<i>The</i> interjection expresses the motions or passions of the soul.	L'interjection exprime les mouvemens ou les passions de l'ame.
<i>The</i> summer is an agreeable season.	L'été est une saison agréable.
Idleness is despicable.	La paresse est méprisable.
Shut the door.	Fermez la porte.
Open the window.	Ouvrez la fenêtre.
Draw the curtains.	Tirez les rideaux.
Bring the mustard.	Apportez la moutarde.
Give me the loaf.	Donnez-moi le pain.
Cut the meat.	Coupez la viande.
Emulation is a noble passion.	L'émulation est une noble passion.
Virtue and beauty are estimable.	La vertu & la beauté sont estimables.
Virtue is preferable to riches.	La vertu est préférable aux richesses.
<i>The</i> heart often betrays the mind.	Le cœur trompe souvent l'esprit.
I like fruit.	J'aime le fruit.
France is a large kingdom.	La France est un grand royaume.
I speak of France.	Je parle de la France.
Let us speak of England.	Parlons de l'Angleterre.

He only talks of Holland.	Il ne parle que de la Hollande.
Touraine is the garden of France.	La Touraine est le jardin de la France.
The Thames is a fine river.	La Tamise est une belle rivière.
The Rhine is a rapid river.	Le Rhin est une rivière rapide.
Parnassus, Pindus, and Helicon are the mountains of poets.	Le Parnasse, le Pinde, & l'Hélicon sont les montagnes des poètes.
My brother is come from the Indies.	Mon frère est arrivé des Indes.
My sister lives in France.	Ma sœur demeure en France.
I will go to Italy next spring.	J'irai en Italie au printemps prochain.
I go to Spain.	Je vais en Espagne.
I come from Portugal.	Je viens de Portugal.
He lives in England.	Il demeure en Angleterre.
It is the custom of the most barbarous people.	C'est la coutume des peuples les plus barbares.
He speaks of the most unhappy man.	Il parle de l'homme le plus malheureux.
He is the best educated child.	C'est l'enfant le mieux élevé.
He is the most presumptuous man.	C'est l'homme le plus présomptueux.
She is the most beautiful and amiable lady.	C'est la demoiselle la plus belle & la plus aimable.
I am writing upon the nicest matter, though the least shining.	J'écris sur la matière la plus délicate, quoique la moins brillante.
* It is one of the most barbarous customs.	C'est une des coutumes des plus barbares.
He speaks of one of the most unhappy men.	Il parle d'un des hommes des plus malheureux.
He is one of the best educated children.	C'est un des enfans des mieux élevés.

* I make use, on purpose, of the same six foregoing examples, to make the exception to the fifth observation more sensible to the learner. In this last example the article immediately following *un*, or *une*, may be omitted: in this case the substantive is put in the singular; as, *C'est une coutume des plus barbares*; *Je parle d'un homme des plus malheureux*.

He is one of the most presumptuous men.	C'est un des hommes des plus présomptueux.
She is one of the most beautiful and amiable ladies.	C'est une des demoiselles des plus belles & des plus aimables.
I am writing upon one of the nicest matters, though the least shining.	J'écris sur une des matières des plus délicates, quoique la moins brillante.
Coals sell for a shilling a bushel.	Les charbons se vendent un chelin le boisseau.
Eggs have been sold for one pound a hundred; it is more than four shillings a quarter.	Les œufs se sont vendus une livre sterling le cent; c'est plus de quatre chelins le quarteron.
Candles are sold for eight-pence a pound.	Les chandelles se vendent huit sous la livre.
Butter sells for ten-pence a pound.	Le beurre se vend dix sous la livre.
This lace costs one guinea a yard.	Cette dentelle coûte une guinée la verge.
Every body knows it.	Tout le monde le sait.
It is every body's custom.	C'est la coutume de tout le monde.
He tells the same story to every body.	Il raconte la même histoire à tout le monde.
She speaks ill of all men.	Elle parle mal de tous les hommes.
All men are not lyars.	Tous les hommes ne sont pas menteurs.
All women are not proud.	Toutes les femmes ne sont pas fières.
He slanders all women.	Il médit de toutes les femmes.
He paid all the expences.	Il paya tous les dépens.
They will never be able to pay all their debts.	Ils ne pourront jamais payer toutes leurs dettes.
I learn every day.	J'apprends tous les jours.
It is the report of the whole city.	C'est le bruit de toute la ville.
The inside of the house is very fine.	Le dedans de la maison est fort beau.
The outside of the church is majestic.	Le dehors de l'église est majestique.

The

<i>The upper part is quite spoiled.</i>	<i>Le dessus est tout gâté.</i>
<i>My sister plays upon the guitar, and my brother upon the fiddle.</i>	<i>Ma sœur joue de la guitare, & mon frère du violon.</i>
<i>He is good player at billiards, at tennis, &c.</i>	<i>C'est un bon joueur de billards, de paume, &c.</i>
<i>We played yesterday at piquet.</i>	<i>Nous jouâmes hier au piquet.</i>
<i>One ought, in learned works, to join profit to pleasure.</i>	<i>On doit, dans les ouvrages d'esprit, joindre l'utile à l'agréable.</i>
<i>The politicians dissemble.</i>	<i>Les politiques dissimulent.</i>
<i>The ambitious sacrifice every thing to fortune.</i>	<i>Les ambitieux sacrifient tout à la fortune.</i>
<i>He has much money.</i>	<i>Il a bien de l'argent, ou beaucoup d'argent.</i>
<i>I have read many books.</i>	<i>J'ai lu bien des livres, ou beaucoup de livres.</i>
<i>She has many friends.</i>	<i>Elle a bien des amis, ou beaucoup d'amis.</i>
<i>You take a great deal of pains.</i>	<i>Vous prenez bien de la peine, ou beaucoup de peine.</i>
<i>They give themselves much trouble.</i>	<i>Ils se donnent bien de la peine, ou beaucoup de peine.</i>
<i>He has spent a great deal of money.</i>	<i>Il a dépensé bien de l'argent, ou beaucoup d'argent.</i>
<i>I will go to China next year.</i>	<i>J'irai à la Chine l'année prochaine.</i>
<i>He is arrived at Mexico.</i>	<i>Il est arrivé au Mexique.</i>
<i>He is come back from Japan, Mogul, the Indies, Florida, Canada, &c.</i>	<i>Il est revenu du Japon, du Mogol, des Indes, de la Floride, du Canada, &c.</i>
<i>He lives at the Hague.</i>	<i>Il demeure à la Haye.</i>
<i>Here are the two roses you gave me to-day.</i>	<i>Voici les deux roses que vous m'avez données aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>Of the four seasons of the year, the summer pleases me more than the three others.</i>	<i>Des quatre saisons de l'année l'été me plaît plus que les trois autres.</i>
<i>I lost the two letters you wrote to me.</i>	<i>J'ai perdu les deux lettres que vous m'avez écrites.</i>

I come from London, Greenwich, Chelsea, Kensington, &c.

Athalie is famous in sacred history; *Merope* in profane history.

Racine's *Athalie* and Voltaire's *Merope* are dramatic master-pieces.

Milton's *Paradise Lost* is a fine poem.

She received me kindly.

He did it through spite.

Speak to him without disdain.

I have a mind to go thither.

She received me with the greatest friendship.

He did it through the spite he had for her.

She spoke to him with the contempt he deserved.

He submitted to it with the greatest patience.

You will find it in the box.

Is there some ink in the bottle?

Here is some in the ink-horn.

Paris is the capital city of France.

He lives in Paris, the capital city of France.

London is the capital city of England.

He was born in London, the capital city of England.

George III, king of England and elector of Hanover, grand-son to George II, has married the princess

Je viens de Londres, de Greenwich, de Chelsea, de Kensington, &c.

Athalie est fameuse dans l'histoire sacrée; *Méropé* dans l'histoire profane.

L'*Athalie* de Racine & la *Méropé* de Voltaire sont des chef-d'œuvres dramatiques.

Le *Paradis perdu* de Milton est un beau poëme.

Elle me reçut avec amitié.

Il le fit par dépit.

Parlez-lui sans dédain.

J'ai envie d'y aller.

Elle me reçut avec la plus grande amitié.

Il le fit par le dépit qu'il avoit pour elle.

Elle lui parla avec le mépris qu'il méritoit.

Il s'y soumit avec la plus grande patience.

Vous le trouverez dans la boîte.

Y a-t-il de l'encre dans la bouteille.

En voici dans l'écritoire.

Paris est la ville capitale de France.

Il demeure à Paris, ville capitale de France.

Londres est la ville capitale d'Angleterre.

Il est né à Londres, ville capitale d'Angleterre.

George trois, roi d'Angleterre & électeur d'Hanovre, petit-fils de George second, a épousé la prin-

Charlotte,

Charlotte, <i>daughter to the prince of Mecklenburg-Strelitz.</i>	cesse Charlotte, <i>fille du prince de Mecklenbourg-Strelitz.</i>
He <i>is</i> a merchant.	Il <i>est</i> marchand, ou <i>c'est</i> un marchand.
He <i>is</i> a physician.	Il <i>est</i> médecin, ou <i>c'est</i> un médecin.
She <i>is</i> a milliner.	Elle <i>est</i> coiffeuse, ou <i>c'est</i> une coiffeuse.
He <i>is the</i> merchant <i>whom</i> you look for.	Il <i>est</i> le marchand <i>que</i> vous cherchez.
He <i>is the</i> physician <i>whom</i> you ask for.	Il <i>est</i> le médecin <i>que</i> vous demandez.
She <i>is the</i> milliner <i>whom</i> you want.	Elle <i>est</i> la coiffeuse <i>qu'il</i> vous faut.
He <i>is the</i> most upright merchant.	Il <i>est</i> le marchand le plus intègre.
He <i>is the</i> skilfullest physician.	Il <i>est</i> le médecin le plus expert.
She <i>is the</i> most customed milliner.	Elle <i>est</i> la coiffeuse la plus achalandée.
Give me bread, meat, wine, beer, &c.	Donnez-moi du pain, de la viande, du vin, de la bière, &c.
Bring salt, pepper, mustard, &c.	Apportez du sel, du poivre, de la moutarde, &c.
There is wine and water.	Voilà du vin & de l'eau.
Do you chuse beer or cyder?	Souhaitez-vous de la bière, ou du cidre ?
Bread and water are sufficient for him.	Du pain & de l'eau lui suffisent.
You must lay this fruit in straw.	Il faut mettre ce fruit dans de la paille.
Lend me paper and ink.	Prêtez-moi du papier & de l'encre.
Have you thread or silk ?	Avez-vous du fil, ou de la soie ?
Mend my stockings with cotton.	Raccommodez mes bas avec du coton.
I spent my money in ware.	J'ai employé mon argent à de la marchandise.
This thread is like silk.	Ce fil ressemble à de la soie.

He compares this stuff to velvet.	Il compare cette étoffe à du velours.
She will not trust such corrupted men.	Elle ne veut pas se fier à des hommes si corrompus.
This cyder is like wine.	Ce cidre ressemble à du vin.
A fine discourse often displeases ignorant people.	Un beau discours déplaît souvent à des ignorans.
Give me some apples, pears, oranges, nuts, &c.	Donnez-moi des pommes, des poires, des oranges, des noix, &c.
There are very fine flowers.	Voilà de fort belles fleurs.
I have bought fine lace.	J'ai acheté de belle dentelle.
To write well, one must make use of good paper, ink, and pens.	Pour bien écrire, il faut se servir de bon papier, de bonne encre, & de bonnes plumes.
Here are fine ladies.	Voici de belles demoiselles.
There are fine houses and streets in London.	Il y a de belles maisons & de belles rues dans Londres.
This lord has fine lands and gardens.	Ce seigneur a de belles terres & de beaux jardins.
That lady has a great estate.	Cette dame a de grands biens.
This writing-master makes fine letters.	Ce maître à écrire forme de belles lettres.
Frederic II, king of Prussia, took a particular delight in having tall soldiers.	Frederic second, roi de Prusse, prenoit un plaisir particulier d'avoir de grands soldats.
His brother applies himself to the belles lettres.	Son frère s'applique aux belles-lettres.
I know people of wit.	Je connois des beaux esprits.
I saw last week great lords in the Park.	Je vis la semaine passée des grands seigneurs dans le Parc.
A child ought to obey his father and mother.	Un enfant doit obéir à son père & à sa mère.
A king ought to be the father of his people.	Un roi doit être le père de son peuple.
It is a thing unheard.	C'est une chose inouïe.
It is an uncommon friendship.	C'est une rare amitié.

A prudent man ought to know how to keep a secret. | *Un homme prudent, ou l'homme prudent, doit savoir garder un secret.*

The two last observations have sufficiently been exemplified in all the foregoing examples.

CHAP. II.

Rules and Observations upon Nouns.

1. **T**WO substantives coming together in English, and signifying different things, without a comma between them, that expressed by *of* in English is put in the second case in French; as, the top of the mountain, *le sommet de la montagne*.

When *of* is not expressed, the last must be the first case in French, and placed at the beginning; as, my father's house, *la maison de mon père*. Likewise, in the English compounded words, the first in English is commonly the second in French; as, a sea-compass, *un compas de mer*.

2. Adjectives follow the same gender and number as their substantives; as, a good book, *un bon livre*; a good pen, *une bonne plume*; good books, *de bons livres*; good pens, *de bonnes plumes*.

Except, first, *feu*, late, deceased, before the article or pronoun; *nu*, bare, before *tête*, *pieds*, *jambes*, &c. *deux*, half, before it's substantive. Secondly, *tout* followed by an article, or by an adjective, ending with an *e* mute in it's masculine gender, before the word *gens*, which is feminine; as, all people of probity, *tous les gens de probité*; all honest people, *tous les honnêtes gens*. But if the word *tout* be either immediately followed by *gens*, or if *gens* be preceded by an adjective, not ending with an *e* mute in it's masculine, then the word *tout* follows the rule, and is put in the feminine*; as, all old people, *toutes les vieilles gens*. Thirdly, adjectives following *gens*; as, they are polite people, *ce sont des gens polis*.

* THE FRENCH ACADEMY.

3. When two or more substantives of different genders, and not separated by a disjunction, are the first case of the verb *être*, the adjective, or participle that follows, ought to be in the masculine plural; as, the trunk, the closet, and the room are open, *le coffre, le cabinet, & la chambre sont ouverts*.

4. Two or more substantives of different genders, immediately followed by an adjective or participle, require commonly that the adjective, or participle, should agree in gender and number with the last substantive; as, she found the trunk, the closet, and the room open, *elle trouva le coffre, le cabinet, & la chambre ouverte*.

Except when an adjective, or a participle past, implies an union, or a collection; such as, *joint, uni, réuni*; as, the children, father, and mother united or joined together; *les enfans, le père, & la mère réunis, ou joints ensemble*.

5. Adjectives of number are placed before their substantives; likewise those of order; as, the first day of the second week, *le premier jour de la seconde semaine*.

Except when they are used as a surname without an article; as, Charles *premier*, Jâques *second*, GEORGE *trois*.

6. Besides those, there are some others, as, *jeune, bon, méchant, grand, gros, petit, mauvais, &c.* which are commonly put before their substantives. When several come together, they are generally put after the substantive; as, bad and unwholesome weather, *un temps mauvais & mal-fain*.

7. Adjectives which are put after their substantives are the following: 1st, adjectives of colours: 2dly, such as express the names of nations: 3dly, participles adjectively used: 4thly, adjectives of figure: 5thly, adjectives expressing some elementary or physical quality: 6thly, adjectives ending in *...ique, ...f, ...esque, ...ile, ...ule*. Those ending in *...able, ...ible*, and some others, are sometimes indifferently put before or after their substantives. There are some other adjectives which are to be placed sometimes before, and sometimes after, their substantives. See page 25.

8: Some adjectives govern the following noun in the second case, and require the preposition *de* before it: Such are adjectives signifying *desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance,*

ignorance, forgetting, care, fear, guilt, fulness, emptiness, plenty, want, &c.

9. Some adjectives govern the following noun in the third case, and require the preposition *à* before it; such are adjectives signifying *submission, relation, pleasure or displeasure, due, resistance, difficulty, likeness, inclination, aptness, fitness, advantage, profit, &c.*

10. Adjectives signifying dimension, as, *long, thick, high, deep, big, wide, or broad*, which come after the word of measure in English, come before it in French, and are followed by the preposition *de*; as, a window three feet broad, *une fenêtre large de trois pieds*. Or, which is more generally used, the adjective is turned into it's substantive with the word of measure before it; in this case the word of the measure or dimension is preceded by the preposition *de*; as, *une fenêtre de trois pieds de largeur*. When in this construction the verb *to be* happens to precede the word of measure or dimension, it is commonly changed into the verb *avoir*, and the preposition *de*, which is before the quantity of measure, is left out; as, *une fenêtre, qui a trois pieds de largeur*, a window which is three feet broad.

Rules and Observations upon Nouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

The love of life is natural to men.	L'amour de la vie est naturel aux hommes.
The study of languages is very entertaining.	L'étude des langues est fort amusante.
Here is my father's house.	Voici la maison de mon père.
I saw the king's horses.	J'ai vu les chevaux du roi.
Have you not seen the king's palace?	N'avez-vous pas vu le palais du roi?
The queen's apartments are very fine.	Les appartemens de la reine sont fort beaux.
It is my brother's book.	C'est le livre de mon frère.
She wears a straw hat with a silk ribbon.	Elle porte un chapeau de paille avec un ruban de soie.
Is the chamber door shut?	La porte de la chambre est-elle fermée?
We passed over London bridge	Nous passâmes sur le pont de

to go to Greenwich.	<i>Londres, pour aller à Greenwich.</i>
I bought a fine <i>silver tankard</i> .	<i>J'ai acheté un beau pot d'argent.</i>
He is gone to his <i>country-house</i> .	<i>Il est allé à sa maison de campagne.</i>
He spoke to her <i>bare-headed</i> .	<i>Il lui parla nu-tête, ou tête nue.</i>
He goes <i>bare-footed, bare-legged</i> .	<i>Il va nu-pieds, nu-jambes, ou il va les pieds nus, les jambes nues.</i>
The <i>late</i> queen was an accomplished woman.	<i>Peu la reine, ou la feu reine, étoit une femme accomplie.</i>
I will go out in <i>half an hour</i> .	<i>Je sortirai dans une demi-heure.</i>
It is <i>half an hour</i> past one.	<i>Il est une heure & demie.</i>
All people of honour.	<i>Tous les gens d'honneur.</i>
It is the opinion of all people of probity.	<i>C'est l'opinion de tous les gens de probité.</i>
All honest people have blamed him.	<i>Tous les honnêtes gens l'ont blâmé.</i>
Almost all young people like play.	<i>Presque tous les jeunes gens aiment le jeu.</i>
All sorts of folks do for him.	<i>Il s'accommode de toutes gens.</i>
All old folks disapproved of it.	<i>Toutes les vieilles gens l'ont désapprouvé.</i>
He withdrew from all the bad people of his neighbourhood.	<i>Il se retira de toutes les mauvaises gens de son voisinage.</i>
They are <i>polite</i> people.	<i>Ce sont des gens polis.</i>
They are <i>prudent</i> people.	<i>Ce sont des gens prudents.</i>
You must not trust <i>indiscreet</i> people.	<i>Il ne faut pas vous fier à des gens indiscrets.</i>
Our maid and man-servant are very <i>diligent</i> .	<i>Notre servante & notre valet sont fort diligents.</i>
His brother and cousin are very <i>idle</i> .	<i>Son frère & son cousin sont fort paresseux.</i>
The window and the door are <i>open</i> .	<i>La fenêtre & la porte sont ouvertes.</i>
My father and mother are <i>sick</i> .	<i>Mon père & ma mère sont malades.</i>

My brother and sister have <i>catched cold.</i>	Mon frère & ma sœur sont <i>enrhumés.</i>
Her body and mind are well <i>framed.</i>	Elle a le corps & l'esprit bien <i>fait.</i>
Her eyes, mouth, and neck are very <i>pretty.</i>	Elle a les yeux, la bouche, & la gorge fort <i>belle.</i>
She sings with a charming and delicate air.	Elle chante avec un goût & une délicatesse <i>charmante.</i>
Why do you leave the win- dows and the door <i>open</i> ?	Pourquoi laissez vous les fe- nêtres & la porte <i>ouverte</i> ?
He had his eyes and mouth <i>open.</i>	Il avoit les yeux & la bouche <i>ouverte.</i>
It is <i>exceeding</i> hot and foggy in that country.	Il fait dans ce pays-là des cha- leurs & des brouillards <i>ex- cessifs.</i>
He found beauty, youth, riches, wisdom, and even virtue <i>united</i> in her per- son.	Il trouva la beauté, la jeu- nesse, les richesses, la sa- gesse, & même la vertu ré- unies dans sa personne.
The children, father, and mother <i>united.</i>	Les enfans, le père, & la mère <i>réunis.</i>
Health, honours, and for- tune, <i>joined</i> together, are not able to satisfy the heart of man.	La santé, les honneurs, & la fortune <i>jointes</i> ensemble ne peuvent satisfaire le cœur de l'homme.
The <i>first</i> man was the <i>first</i> sinner.	Le <i>premier</i> homme fut le <i>pre- mier</i> pécheur.
George III. reigns in Eng- land, and Lewis XV. in France.	George <i>trois</i> règne en An- gleterre, & Louis <i>quinze</i> en France.
He is a <i>naughty</i> boy.	C'est un <i>méchant</i> garçon.
<i>Bad</i> weather is tiresome to me.	Le <i>mauvais</i> temps m'ennuye.
He dwells in a <i>large</i> house.	Il demeure dans une <i>grande</i> maison.
I have a <i>green</i> snuff-box.	J'ai une tabatière <i>verte.</i>
The <i>English</i> tongue is <i>copi- ous, strong, and harmoni- ous.</i>	La langue <i>Angloise</i> est <i>copieuse, forte, & harmonieuse.</i>
The <i>French</i> tongue is very <i>smooth.</i>	La langue <i>Françoise</i> est fort <i>douce.</i>
She is a <i>handsome, rich, and virtuous</i> woman.	C'est une femme <i>belle, riche, & vertueuse.</i>

180 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

London is a *fine* city.

He is a man of *distinguished*
merit.

He is a *tall fair* man.

Give me my *clean* shirt.

A *black* hat, a *green* suit,
white stockings, *red* shoes.

There is a very *fine* coach.

He follows the *English* fash-
ion.

Sing an *Italian* air.

People enjoy *pure* air in
France.

Why do not you wear your
black stockings?

She is a *charming* woman.

She reprimanded him se-
verely.

I am contented *with* my
condition.

It is a praise-worthy action.

He is unworthy *of* your
friendship.

She is incapable *of* a lye.

Few people are satisfied *with*
their fortune.

I am *free* from fear and dan-
ger.

He is too much addicted *to*
study.

She is unfit *for* any thing.

You are insensible *to* all
the remonstrances of your
friends.

I was overjoyed *at* that news.

She is not contented *with*
her maid.

Londres est une *belle* ville.

C'est un *grand-homme*.

C'est un *grand* homme *blond*.

Donnez-moi ma chemise
blanche.

Un chapeau *noir*, un habit
vert, des bas *blancs*, des
souliers *rouges*.

Voilà un carrosse *magnifique*.

Il suit la mode *Angloise*.

Chantez un air *Italian*.

On jouit d'un air *pur* en
France.

Pourquoi ne portez-vous pas
vos bas *noirs*?

C'est une femme *charmante*,
ou *charmante* femme.

Elle lui a fait de *sévères* ré-
primandes, ou des répri-
mandes *sévères*.

Je suis content *de* ma condi-
tion.

C'est une action digne *de* lou-
anges.

Il est indigne *de* votre amitié.

Elle est incapable *de* men-
songe.

Peu de gens sont contents *de*
leur fortune.

Je suis exempt *de* crainte &
de danger.

Il est trop adonné *à* l'étude.

Elle n'est propre *à* rien.

Vous êtes insensible *à* toutes
les remonstrances de vos
amis.

Je fus ravi *de* cette nouvelle.

Elle n'est pas contente *de* sa
servante.

He

He is discontented <i>with</i> his wife.	Il est mécontent <i>de</i> sa femme.
He is accused <i>of</i> murder.	Il est accusé <i>de</i> meurtre.
He was loaded <i>with</i> praises.	Il fut comblé <i>de</i> louanges.
They are greedy <i>of</i> glory and riches.	Ils sont avides <i>de</i> gloire & <i>de</i> richesses.
I am tired <i>with</i> your discourses.	Je suis las <i>de</i> vos discours.
They are enraged <i>at</i> his success.	Ils sont enragés <i>de</i> son succès.
He is deep <i>in</i> debt.	Il est chargé <i>de</i> dettes.
That is good <i>for</i> something.	Cela est bon <i>à</i> quelque chose.
It is a fruit hurtful <i>to</i> health.	C'est un fruit nuisible <i>à</i> la santé.
He is fit <i>for</i> any thing.	Il est propre <i>à</i> tout.
She is not to compare <i>with</i> you.	Elle n'est pas comparable <i>à</i> vous.
That is conformable <i>to</i> truth.	Cela est conforme <i>à</i> la vérité.
Yours is like mine.	Le vôtre est semblable <i>au</i> mien.
I am ready <i>for</i> your orders.	Je suis prêt <i>à</i> vos ordres.
I am very sensible <i>of</i> cold.	Je suis fort sensible <i>au</i> froid.
That cloth is like yours.	Ce drap est pareil <i>au</i> vôtre.
A carpet six yards long and two wide.	Un tapis long <i>de</i> six verges, & large <i>de</i> deux ; ou un tapis <i>de</i> six verges <i>de</i> longueur, & <i>de</i> deux <i>de</i> largeur.
Our house is forty fathoms high, and the foundation is two fathoms deep.	Notre maison <i>a</i> quarante toises <i>de</i> hauteur, & les fondemens <i>ont</i> deux toises <i>de</i> profondeur.
This lawn is a yard wide.	Ce linon <i>a</i> une verge <i>de</i> largeur.
A wall two feet thick.	Une muraille épaisse <i>de</i> deux pieds, ou une muraille <i>de</i> deux pieds <i>d'épaisseur</i> .
A street ten fathoms wide.	Une rue large <i>de</i> dix toises, ou une rue <i>de</i> dix toises <i>de</i> largeur.
Our garden is a hundred feet long.	Notre jardin <i>a</i> cent pieds <i>de</i> longueur.

That

That river is forty feet deep.	Cette rivière a quarante pieds de profondeur.
A well forty feet deep.	Un puits de quarante pieds de profondeur.
There are fine walks in St. James's Park; they are at least four hundred fathoms long.	Il y a de belles promenades dans le Parc de St. James; elles ont au moins quatre cents toises de longueur.
Have you ever seen a man eight feet high?	Avez-vous jamais vu un homme de huit pieds de hauteur?
A book two inches thick.	Un livre de deux pouces d'épaisseur.

C H A P. III.

Rules and Observations upon Pronouns.

SECTION I.

Personal Pronouns.

1. **A** CONJUNCTIVE personal pronoun, in the first case, must always be put before a verb which has no other noun, or pronoun, for a first case; as, *I speak, je parle, &c.*

Except the second person singular and the first and second person plural of the imperative mood, which are used without a pronoun personal, unless the verb be reflected.

2. There are some cases where the personal pronoun is put after the verb, when in the middle of a sentence they are joined, like a parenthesis, with these seven verbs: *dire*, to say; *répondre*, to answer; *répliquer*, to reply; *repartir*, to answer again; *continuer*, to continue; *poursuivre*, to pursue; and *s'écrier*, to cry out; as, *I have none, answered he, je n'en ai point, répondit-il.*

Except when one of these verbs is preceded by the conjunction *mais*, and some others followed by *que* signifying *that*; as, *but you say, that you are sick; mais vous dites, que vous êtes malade.* But, when *que* signifies *what*, then the pronoun takes again its place after the verb; as, *but you say, what avail riches without health? mais dites vous, que servent les richesses sans santé?*

3. The personal pronoun must be put after these words, *duffiez-vous*, though you should; *fuffiez-vous*, though you were; *puiffiez*, or *puffiez-vous*, may you; or after any other such expressions, which express what grammarians call the optative mood; as, though you were rich, *fuffiez-vous riches*: though you should write to him, *duffiez-vous lui écrire*: may you see him in good health, *puiffiez-vous le voir en bonne santé*.

4. It is more elegant to put the personal pronoun, even followed by *que* signifying *that*, after the verb preceded by one of these conjunctions: *auffi*, but then; *peut-être*, perhaps; *du moins*, *au moins*, at least; *en vain*, in vain; *à peine*, scarcely, &c. as, but then he received his reward, *auffi reçut-il fa récompense*.

5. The personal pronoun is always put after the verb in simple tenses, in an interrogation, either affirmative or negative; as, do you eat, *mangez-vous*? do you not write, *n'écrivez-vous pas*? In compound tenses, it is put immediately after the auxiliary, either in an affirmative or negative question; as, did you eat? *avez-vous mangé*? did not you write? *n'avez-vous pas écrit*?

6. When, in an interrogation, we make use of a verb of the first conjugation, as the verb, in such a case, ending with an *e* mute, would make a harsh sound with the following pronoun *je*, we put a grave accent upon the last *e* of the verb; as, do I speak? *parlè-je*? and not *parle-je*?

However, in this instance, I would advise to make use of the easy way of asking a question by these words, *est-ce que*, as it must be done for some other verbs: as, do I sleep? *est-ce que je dors*? In this case the pronoun is put before the verb †.

† *Chambaud* spends more than a whole page, to observe that in asking a question by these words, *est-ce que*, we shew a surprise, or fear; and that, by the other manner of asking a question, we want only to be informed what we ask for. This we may call a pure trifle, *lana caprina*; the tone of the voice, or some gesture, makes all the difference. The one may signify a surprise as well as the other; so, according to his own example, and contrary to his reasons, by this question, *est-ce qu'il a du jugement*? I may shew that I want only to be informed, whether he has any judgment, or not; and by this other, *a-t-il du jugement*? I may intimate, that I know very well, that he has no judgment.

7. When a verb, interrogatively used, ends with a vowel, we always put a *t* between the verb and the pronoun; as in the following examples, does he eat? *mange-t-il?* has she eaten? *a-t-elle mangé?*

8. What we have said, in the second rule, must be said, likewise, when after those verbs comes another noun instead of a pronoun; as, all men are fools, says Boileau, *tous les hommes sont fous, dit Boileau.*

The same is to be said, when *autre* is joined to *chose* to shew the mere difference between two objects; as, to understand French is another thing than to speak it, *autre chose est de comprendre le François, autre chose est de le parler.*

Likewise after these pronouns, *se, que, le, ce que*, it is sometimes more elegant to put the noun after the verb; as, at first a large parlour presented itself before your eyes, *d'abord se presenta devant nous un grand salon.* What reason dictates, is not always true, *ce que dit la raison, n'est pas toujours vrai.* It is thus the parliament would have it, *C'est ainsi que le voulut le parlement.*

9. A conjunctive personal pronoun is superfluous, when any noun whatsoever is the first case of a verb; as, George III. is a good king, *George III. est un bon roi.* But in an interrogation, besides the noun, we put the pronoun after the verb; as, does your brother write? *votre frère écrit-il?*

Except, when in asking a question we make use of this idiom, *est-ce que*, in this case the pronoun is left out, as in the foregoing example, *est-ce que votre frère écrit?*

10. Personal pronouns of the first and second person plural are commonly put before the verb, if the verb has for it's nominative several personal pronouns, or only one personal pronoun, in the first or second person of either number, joined with one or more nouns; as, you and I are idle, *vous & moi nous sommes paresseux*: your brother and I were present, *votre frère & moi nous étions présents.*

Except, when there is a noun substantive joined with *lui* or *elle*, the personal pronoun is left out, and the verb is put in the third person plural; as, your brother and he are idle, *votre frère & lui sont paresseux.*

11. Conjunctive personal pronouns, in their oblique cases, are put before the verb in French, though after it in English; as, he told to me, *il me dit.* Foreigners should attend

attend to this rule, against which they are very apt to offend.

Except, 1st, in the second person singular, and first and second plural of the imperative; in an affirmation; as, tell me, *dites-moi* . . . Observe, that *me* is always put instead of *moi*, when it comes before the verb, unless it be separated from the verb by a conjunction; as, it is to me he gives it, *c'est à moi qu'il le donne*: 2dly, after the verb *être*, when it signifies *to belong to*; and after the verb *fiar*, to trust; as, you trust to me, *vous vous fiez à moi*; this house belongs to me, *cette maison est à moi*: 3dly, after the verbs *songer*, *penser*, *parler*, when the last signifies *to direct one's discourse to*, and a very few others.

12. The supplying pronouns *le*, *la*, and *les*, are always put before *lui* and *leur*; as, you give them to him, *vous les lui donnez*: whereas they are put after the other personal pronouns; as, I give it to you, *je vous le donne*; except in the imperative mood in the affirmative sentence; as, give it me, *donnez-le-moi*.

13. The supplying pronouns *en* and *y* are put after all other personal pronouns, and *en* after *y*; as, I have sent some to them thither, *je leur y en ai envoyé*.

Except, when *y* and *moi* meet together in the second person of the imperative mood affirmatively used, *y* is put before *moi*; as, carry me thither, *menez-y-moi*.

N. B. The three last observations, with their exceptions, are fully exemplified in their proper places, and in the supplying pronouns.

14. *Il*, which some wrongly call a personal pronoun, in the following examples, is commonly used before adjectives, where the word *thing* is understood; as, it is glorious to die for one's country, *il est glorieux de mourir pour sa patrie*. If the adjective makes a complete sense, *ce* is commonly used; as, it is true, *c'est vrai*.

Il is likewise used when we speak of the time and hour; as, it is eleven o'clock, *il est onze heures*; it is bad weather, *il fait mauvais temps*.

Except, when a question is asked with *ce*, as, *quelle heure est cela?* the answer is, *c'est une heure*. *Ce* is commonly used in the beginning of a sentence, before a substantive; as, it is a pity, *c'est dommage*.

15. *Il*, *elle*, singular, *ils*, *elles*, plural, or *ce*, are indifferently used: 1st, before substantives expressing the sex,

184 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

7. When a verb, interrogatively used, ends with a vowel, we always put a *t* between the verb and the pronoun; as in the following examples, does he eat? *mange-t-il?* has she eaten? *a-t-elle mangé?*

8. What we have said, in the second rule, must be said, likewise, when after those verbs comes another noun instead of a pronoun; as, all men are fools, says Boileau, *tous les hommes sont fous, dit Boileau.*

The same is to be said, when *autre* is joined to *chose* to shew the mere difference between two objects; as, to understand French is another thing than to speak it, *autre chose est de comprendre le François, autre chose est de le parler.*

Likewise after these pronouns, *se, que, le, ce qui,* it is sometimes more elegant to put the noun after the verb; as, at first a large parlour presented itself before your eyes, *d'abord se presenta devant nous un grand salon.* What reason dictates, is not always true, *ce que dicte la raison, n'est pas toujours vrai.* It is thus the parliament would have it, *C'est ainsi que le voulut le parlement.*

9. A conjunctive personal pronoun is superfluous, when any noun whatsoever is the first case of a verb; as, George III. is a good king, *George III. est un bon roi.* But in an interrogation, besides the noun, we put the pronoun after the verb; as, does your brother write? *votre frère écrit-il?*

Except, when in asking a question we make use of this idiom, *est-ce que,* in this case the pronoun is left out, as in the foregoing example, *est-ce que votre frère écrit?*

10. Personal pronouns of the first and second person plural are commonly put before the verb, if the verb has for it's nominative several personal pronouns, or only one personal pronoun, in the first or second person of either number, joined with one or more nouns; as, you and I are idle, *vous & moi nous sommes paresseux:* your brother and I were present, *votre frère & moi nous étions présents.*

Except, when there is a noun substantive joined with *lui* or *elle*, the personal pronoun is left out, and the verb is put in the third person plural; as, your brother and he are idle, *votre frère & lui sont paresseux.*

11. Conjunctive personal pronouns, in their oblique cases, are put before the verb in French, though after it in English; as, he told to me, *il me dit.* Foreigners should attend

attend to this rule, against which they are very apt to offend.

Except, 1st, in the second person singular, and first and second plural of the imperative, in an affirmation; as, tell me, *dites-moi* . . . Observe, that *me* is always put instead of *moi*, when it comes before the verb, unless it be separated from the verb by a conjunction; as, it is to me he gives it, *c'est à moi qu'il le donne*: 2dly, after the verb *être*, when it signifies *to belong to*; and after the verb *fiar*, to trust; as, you trust to me, *vous vous fiez à moi*; this house belongs to me, *cette maison est à moi*: 3dly, after the verbs *songer*, *penfer*, *parler*, when the last signifies *to direct one's discourse to*, and a very few others.

12. The supplying pronouns *le*, *la*, and *les*, are always put before *lui* and *leur*; as, you give them to him, *vous les lui donnez*: whereas they are put after the other personal pronouns; as, I give it to you, *je vous le donne*; except in the imperative mood in the affirmative sentence; as, give it me, *donnez-le-moi*.

13. The supplying pronouns *en* and *y* are put after all other personal pronouns, and *en* after *y*; as, I have sent some to them thither, *je leur y en ai envoyé*.

Except, when *y* and *moi* meet together in the second person of the imperative mood affirmatively used, *y* is put before *moi*; as, carry me thither, *menez-y-moi*.

N. B. The three last observations, with their exceptions, are fully exemplified in their proper places, and in the supplying pronouns.

14. *Il*, which some wrongly call a personal pronoun, in the following examples, is commonly used before adjectives, where the word *thing* is understood; as, it is glorious to die for one's country, *il est glorieux de mourir pour sa patrie*. If the adjective makes a complete sense, *ce* is commonly used; as, it is true, *c'est vrai*.

Il is likewise used when we speak of the time and hour; as, it is eleven o'clock, *il est onze heures*; it is bad weather, *il fait mauvais temps*.

Except, when a question is asked with *ce*, as, *quelle heure est cela?* the answer is, *c'est une heure*. *Ce* is commonly used in the beginning of a sentence, before a substantive; as, it is a pity, *c'est dommage*.

15. *Il*, *elle*, singular, *ils*, *elles*, plural, or *ce*, are indifferently used: 1st, before substantives expressing the sex,

sex, quality, profession, or trade of a person ; as, he is a merchant, *il est marchand*, or *c'est un marchand* : 2dly, before names of nations ; as, they are Frenchmen, *ils sont François*, or, *ce sont des François*. Observe, that, in these two foregoing instances, no article is put before the substantive after the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, &c.*

16. Personal pronouns, whether conjunctive or disjunctive, in their oblique cases, are always to be repeated ; as, I say and declare to you, *je vous dis & vous déclare* ; take the books, and read them, *prenez les livres, & les lisez*, or *lisez-les*.

17. Personal pronouns are repeated before each verb, 1st, when they are followed by verbs in different tenses ; as, I say, and shall always say ; *je dis, & je dirai toujours* : 2dly, when we pass from a negation to an affirmation, or from an affirmation to a negation : 3dly, after the conjunctions *mais, même, cependant, néanmoins, nonobstant, malgré tout cela, aussi, ainsi, ou, &c.* but, when the personal pronouns belong to the same tense and person, they are commonly not repeated ; as, I say and declare, *je dis & déclare*. Observe here, that the pronoun *on* is always repeated ; as, people speak and act, *on parle & on agit*.

18. The pronouns *lui, eux, elle, elles, leur*, are used at the end of a sentence, only when we are speaking of persons ; as, is it your brother ? It is. *Est-ce votre frère ? C'est lui*. When we are speaking of inanimate things, we make use of the pronouns *le, la, les* ; as, is it your hat ? Yes, it is. *Est-ce votre chapeau ? Oui, ce l'est*, and not, *c'est lui* †.

19. The foregoing pronouns *lui, eux, elle, elles, leur*, when we are speaking of inanimate things, are sometimes used in the middle of a sentence ‡, sometimes not : there is no other rule for it than custom, and this can be learnt only by use ; for, speaking of a sword, I may say, *je lui dois la vie*, I am indebted to it for my life ; and yet we

† See the third observation upon supplying pronouns, and the examples thereon.

‡ When things are personified, or deified ; as, *glory, victory, virtue, &c.* or when we make use of personal phrases, *i. e.* which are applied only to persons. RESTAUT.

cannot say, speaking of the same sword, *pendez-lui cette cerise*, hang that cherry to it; but we must say, *pendez-y cette cerise*.

20. *Il, ils, elle, elles*, in the beginning of a sentence, are used, speaking even of inanimate things; as, when, in speaking of a house, I say, *elle est belle*.

21. *Lui, leur, elle, &c.* governed by a preposition, are never used, speaking of irrational and inanimate things; as, you see that house, he lives over-against it; *vous voyez cette maison, il demeure vis-à-vis*, and not *vis-à-vis d'elle*. In this case the prepositions become adverbs; but observe that some prepositions never, or very seldom, become adverbs; as, *avec*, with; *sans*, without, &c. therefore in this, or the like expressions [*I cannot do without it; he came with it;*] give another turn to the sentence, *je ne puis m'en passer, il l'a apporté*.

It may be observed, that *après* and *avec* are sometimes followed by *lui, eux, elle, or elles*; as, when that river overflows, it carries every thing away with it, *lorsque cette rivière se déborde, elle entraîne tout après elle*: but as such sentences are as good without *avec elle*, and *après elle*, as with it; and it very often happens, that we cannot make use of these expressions; it is best to avoid them by omitting them absolutely, as in the foregoing example, where *lorsque cette rivière se déborde, elle entraîne tout*, is as good French without *après elle*, as with it.

22. *Lui, elle, and soi*, at the end of a sentence, are not to be used indifferently. *Soi* is very seldom used in the plural. When we speak of things of the masculine gender, *soi* is used; as, the loadstone attracts iron, *l'aimant attire le fer à soi*. *Elle-même* may be used in the feminine; as, virtue is lovely by itself, *la vertu est aimable en elle-même*.

Speaking of persons in general, *soi* is to be used; as, one ought not to speak of *one's self*, but with great modesty; *on ne doit parler de soi, qu'avec beaucoup de modestie*. When we speak of a particular person, *lui* and *elle* are used instead of *soi*; as, that man speaks of nobody but himself, *cet homme ne parle que de lui*.

N. B. *Même* is often elegantly put after *lui, elle, eux, soi, &c.* and even it must be put after, when it follows a reflected verb.

Personal Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

<i>I</i> learn my lesson.	<i>J'</i> apprends ma leçon.
<i>He</i> writes his exercise.	<i>Il</i> écrit son thème.
<i>She</i> embroiders.	<i>Elle</i> brode.
<i>We</i> have a holiday.	<i>Nous</i> avons congé.
<i>You</i> are lazy.	<i>Vous</i> êtes paresseux.
<i>They</i> make a noise.	<i>Ils</i> font du bruit.
<i>My mother</i> is in the country.	<i>Ma mère</i> est à la campagne.
Is your sister at home ?	Votre sœur est-elle au logis ?
<i>She</i> is gone out.	<i>Elle</i> est sortie.
Does your brother improve in the French tongue ?	Votre frère fait-il des pro- grès dans le François ?
Is your sister sick ?	Votre sœur est-elle malade ?
Have you learnt your lesson ?	Avez-vous appris votre leçon ?
Has <i>he</i> not been angry with me ?	N'a-t-il pas été fâché contre moi ?
Has <i>she</i> not been in the coun- try ?	N'a-t-elle pas été à la cam- pagne ?
You and I are good friends.	Vous & moi <i>nous</i> sommes bons amis.
She and I went together to the Park.	<i>Elle</i> & moi <i>nous</i> allâmes en- semble au Parc.
My brother and I go to the play to-night.	Mon frère & moi <i>nous</i> allons à la comédie cette nuit.
<i>He</i> and my brother are part- ners.	<i>Lui</i> & mon frère sont asso- ciés.
<i>She</i> and her sister learn French.	<i>Elle</i> & sa sœur apprennent le François.
I have none, said <i>he</i> .	Je n'en ai point, dit-il.
But <i>he</i> answered, that he had not seen it.	Mais <i>il</i> répondit, qu'il ne l'avoit pas vu.
But <i>she</i> replied, what do you meddle with ?	Mais repliqua-t-elle de quoi vous mêlez-vous ?
Though you should blame me.	Dussiez-vous me blâmer.
Though you was still more surprised.	Fussiez-vous encore plus sur- pris.
Perhaps <i>he</i> will say, that he found it.	Peut-être dira-t-il qu'il l'a trouvé.
Do I tell a lye ?	Est-ce que je mens ?

Does

Does <i>she</i> embroider?	Brode-t-elle?
She told <i>me</i> , that she had written to <i>him</i> .	Elle m'a dit, qu'elle lui avoit écrit.
Do not fall violently upon <i>them</i> .	Né leur faites pas de violence.
I gave <i>him</i> the book which you sent <i>me</i> .	Je lui ai donné le livre que vous m'avez envoyé.
I will tell <i>him</i> .	Je lui dirai.
Have you promised <i>him</i> ?	Lui avez-vous promis?
I have not promised <i>her</i> .	Je ne lui ai pas promis.
When will you send to <i>him</i> ?	Quand lui enverrez-vous?
Give <i>me</i> .	Donnez-moi.
Bring <i>me</i> .	Apportez moi.
Forgive <i>him</i> .	Pardonnez-lui.
Speak to <i>her</i> .	Parlez-lui.
It is to <i>me</i> that he has promised it.	C'est à moi qu'il l'a promis.
Do not confide in <i>him</i> .	Ne vous fiez pas à lui.
You may confide in <i>me</i> .	Vous pouvez vous fier à moi.
This book is <i>mine</i> .	Ce livre est à moi.
This thimble is not <i>yours</i> .	Ce dé n'est pas à vous.
Do not think of <i>him</i> any more.	Ne songez plus à lui.
It is to <i>him</i> I am speaking, and not to you.	C'est à lui que je parle, & non pas à vous.
Will you give it to <i>him</i> ?	Le lui donnerez-vous?
There are fine oranges; will you sell <i>them</i> to <i>her</i> ?	Voilà de belles oranges; les lui vendrez-vous?
Shew <i>me</i> your letter; when will you send it to <i>her</i> ?	Montrez-moi votre lettre; quand la lui enverrez-vous?
There is a fine book; I gave it to <i>her</i> .	Voilà un beau livre; je le lui ai donné.
You gave it to <i>me</i> .	Vous me l'avez donné.
When will you give it to <i>us</i> ?	Quand nous le donnerez-vous?
You had promised it to <i>me</i> .	Vous me l'aviez promis.
Give it to <i>him</i> .	Donnez-le-lui.
Bring it to <i>me</i> .	Apportez le-moi.
Shew it to <i>her</i> .	Montrez-le lui.
Will you carry <i>some</i> to <i>them</i> thither?	Leur y en porterez-vous?

I have sent <i>some</i> to <i>them</i> <i>thither</i> .	Je leur y en ai envoyé.
I will send <i>some</i> to <i>you</i> <i>thither</i> .	Je vous y en enverrai.
When did you send <i>some</i> to <i>him</i> <i>thither</i> ?	Quand lui y en avez-vous envoyé ?
Why have you not carried <i>some</i> to <i>her</i> <i>thither</i> ?	Pourquoi ne lui y en avez-vous pas porté ?
Carry <i>me</i> <i>thither</i> .	Menez-y-moi.
Give <i>me</i> <i>some</i> .	Donnez-m'en.
Do not carry <i>me</i> <i>thither</i> .	Ne m'y menez pas.
What o'clock is <i>it</i> ?	Quelle heure est-il ?
<i>It</i> is two o'clock.	Il est deux heures.
<i>It</i> is a quarter past two.	Il est deux heures & un quart.
<i>It</i> is half an hour past two.	Il est deux heures & demie.
<i>It</i> is three quarters past two.	Il est trois heures moins un quart.
<i>It</i> is very fine weather.	Il fait fort beau temps.
<i>It</i> is gloomy.	Il fait sombre.
<i>It</i> is rainy weather.	Il fait un temps pluvieux.
<i>It</i> is hot ; <i>it</i> is cold.	Il fait chaud ; il fait froid.
He is a learned man.	Il est savant, ou c'est un savant homme.
<i>It</i> is a pity.	C'est dommage.
He is a merchant.	Il est marchand, ou c'est un marchand.
<i>It</i> is a fine house.	C'est une belle maison.
<i>It</i> is time to rise.	Il est temps de se lever.
<i>It</i> is my book.	C'est mon livre.
<i>It</i> is my handkerchief.	C'est mon mouchoir.
<i>They</i> are your pens.	Ce sont vos plumes.
<i>They</i> are young ladies.	Ce sont de jeunes demoiselles.
<i>They</i> are idle.	Ils sont paresseux, ou ce sont des paresseux.
<i>They</i> are strange people.	Ce sont d'étranges gens.
<i>It</i> is enough.	C'est assez.
<i>It</i> is not too much.	Ce n'est pas trop.
<i>It</i> was without a design.	Ce fut sans dessein.
<i>It</i> is in spite of him.	C'est malgré lui.
He is a doctor.	Il est docteur, ou c'est un docteur.
He is a goldsmith.	Il est orfèvre, ou c'est un orfèvre.

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 191

They are Englishmen, Frenchmen.

Ils sont Anglois, François, ou *ce* sont des Anglois, des François.

He loves and has a regard *for me*.

Il m'aime & me confidère.

I have taken and kept it.

Je l'ai pris & l'ai gardé.

I know and see *her* very often.

Je la connois & la vois fort souvent.

He esteems and honours *you*.

Il vous estime & vous honore.

I saw and spoke to *her*.

Je l'ai vu & lui ai parlé.

They say and assure that . . .

On dit & on assure que . . .

You have seen and will always see.

Vous avez vu & vous verrez toujours.

He made his exercise; *but he* did not read his rules.

Il a fait son thème ; mais il n'a pas lu ses règles.

She speaks to him, *however she* does not like him.

Elle lui parle, cependant elle ne l'aime pas.

Self-love blinds us, it is the cause of the greatest part of our misfortunes.

L'amour propre nous aveugle, c'est *lui* qui est la cause de la plupart de nos malheurs.

There are flowers which want water; give *them* some.

Voilà des fleurs qui ont besoin d'eau; donnez-*leur* en.

I saw a fine garden; *it* is enamelled with a thousand fine flowers.

J'ai vu un beau jardin; *il* est émaillé de mille belles fleurs.

These shoes are too narrow; *they* hurt me.

Ces souliers sont trop étroits; *ils* me blessent.

Do you know where the Exchange is? He lives *over-against it*.

Savez-vous où est la Bourse? Il demeure *vis-à-vis*.

Give me my book; I cannot do *without it*.

Donnez-moi mon livre; je ne saurois m'*en* passer.

A wise man is master of *himself*.

Le sage est maître de *soi*.

We make our own happiness.

On fait sa félicité *soi-même*.

A wise man trusts *himself*.

Le sage se méfie de *lui-même*.

She is too much conceited of *herself*.

Elle a trop bonne opinion d'*elle-même*.

We ought not to flatter *ourselves*.

On ne doit pas se flatter *soi-même*.

He only loves *himself*.

Il n'aime que lui-même.

Falshood

Fallhood is odious in <i>itself</i> .	La fausseté est odieuse en <i>elle-même</i> .
The loadstone attracts iron.	L'aimant attire le fer à <i>soi</i> .
One ought not to speak of <i>one's self</i> , but with great modesty.	On ne doit parler de <i>soi</i> , qu'avec beaucoup de modestie.
That man speaks of nobody but <i>himself</i> .	Cet homme ne parle que de <i>lui</i> .
I will do it <i>myself</i> .	Je le veux faire <i>moi-même</i> .
She relies too much on <i>her-self</i> .	Elle se fie trop à <i>elle-même</i> .
They betray <i>themselves</i> .	Ils se trahissent <i>eux-mêmes</i> .
You hurt nobody but <i>yourself</i> .	Vous ne faites du tort qu'à <i>vous-même</i> .

SECTION II.

Possessive Pronouns.

1. The conjunctive possessive pronouns come always before the nouns to which they are joined, as, it is my snuff-box, c'est *ma* tabatière. In this case *mon*, *ton*, *son*, are used instead of *ma*, *ta*, *sa*, before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute, for the sweetness of sound; as, my sword, *mon épée*; thy soul, *ton âme*; his friendship, *son amitié*. Absolute possessive pronouns are put after the noun with the definite article *le*, *la*, *les*; as, *le mien*, *la mienne*.

2. When *sake* signifies amour in French, the English possessive pronoun is to be rendered in French by the disjunctive personal pronoun; as, for your sake, *pour l'amour de vous*, and not *pour votre amour*.

3. When the verb *être* signifies *to belong to*, the English possessive pronoun is rendered in French by the disjunctive personal pronoun; as, that house is *mine*, *cette maison est à moi*, and not *est la mienne*. But, when the particle *ce* is joined to the verb *être*, the possessive pronoun is commonly used; as, this is my house, *c'est ma maison*; it is his book and not yours, *c'est son livre, &c. non pas le vôtre*.

4. The gender of possessive pronouns does not follow that of the person who speaks, or is spoken of, but agrees with the particular gender of every noun it is joined to; as, *her father is dead*, *son père est mort*.

5. The

5. The possessive conjunctive pronoun is always repeated before a substantive, and after a conjunction; as, my brothers and sisters, *mes frères & mes sœurs*; his father and mother, *son père & sa mère*.

6. *Le mien, le tien, le sien, &c.* in the masculine gender and singular number, sometimes signify one's due; as, we must give every one his due, *il faut rendre à chacun le sien*. In the plural number and masculine gender they sometimes signify one's relations; as, your and his relations, *les vôtres & les siens*.

7. His, it's, their, &c. are commonly rendered into French by *son, sa, ses, leurs*; as plants have their properties, *les plantes ont leurs propriétés*. But, when it, it's, or their, belong to a substantive preceding, they are commonly rendered into French by the supplying pronoun *en*; as, these plants are good, I know their qualities; *ces plantes sont bonnes, j'en connois les qualités*. This happens when the pronoun may be resolved into the substantive which it has a relation to, as in the foregoing example, these plants are good, I know the qualities of these plants.

8. The conjunctive possessive pronoun, with the particle *de* before it, is used instead of the absolute possessive pronoun on all such occasions; as, an acquaintance of his, *un de ses connoissances*; a friend of mine, *un de mes amis*.

9. The conjunctive possessive pronoun is used when we call or answer to friends, relations, &c. as, come daughter, *venez ma fille*; yes, brother, *oui, mon frère*.

10. Conjunctive possessive pronouns coming in English, after some verbs not signifying a distemper, are resolved into the conjunctive personal pronoun, and, instead of the possessive pronoun, we put the definite article; as, I have pared my nails, *je me suis rogné les ongles*; he has cut my hair, *il m'a coupé les cheveux**.

11. Generally, when in a sentence a noun, or a personal pronoun, sufficiently denotes whose thing it is you are speaking of, the possessive pronoun is omitted as useless, and resolved into the definite article; as, I have a pain in my teeth, in my stomach, in my head, in my eyes, &c. *j'ai mal aux dents, à l'estomac, à la tête, aux yeux, &c.* However, when a pain or distemper continues for some time upon us, we may say, speaking to a person acquainted

* There are some exceptions, which will be taken notice of in the rules exemplified, p. 196.

194 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

with it, *ma jambe ne guérit pas* ; my leg does not heal ;
mon bras me fait toujours mal ; my arm pains me still.
 This may likewise happen in a few other instances. Generally the two last rules take place, when there is a sort of equivocation, or amphibology.

Possessive Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

Do it for <i>my</i> sake.	Faites le pour l'amour de <i>moi</i> .
I will do it for <i>your</i> sake.	Je le ferai pour l'amour de <i>vous</i> .
For <i>her</i> sake.	Pour l'amour d' <i>elle</i> .
For <i>his</i> sake.	Pour l'amour de <i>lui</i> .
<i>My</i> house is larger than <i>his</i> .	<i>Ma</i> maison est plus grande que <i>la sienne</i> .
Have you seen <i>my</i> garden ?	Avez-vous vu <i>mon</i> jardin ?
Come and see <i>my</i> flowers.	Venez voir <i>mes</i> fleurs.
Where is <i>your</i> book ?	Où est <i>votre</i> livre ?
Shew me <i>your</i> books.	Montrez-moi <i>vos</i> livres.
Lend me <i>your</i> penknife.	Prêtez-moi <i>votre</i> canif.
<i>Our</i> school-fellows are playing in the street.	<i>Nos</i> compagnons d'école jouent dans la rue.
<i>Her</i> apron is quite black.	<i>Son</i> tablier est tout noir.
<i>Her</i> fan is broken.	<i>Son</i> éventail est rompu.
Give me <i>my</i> shoes, <i>my</i> stockings, <i>my</i> handkerchief, <i>my</i> shirt, and <i>my</i> hat.	Donnez-moi <i>mes</i> souliers, <i>mes</i> bas, <i>mon</i> mouchoir, <i>ma</i> chemise, & <i>mon</i> chapeau.
<i>Your</i> stockings have holes in them.	<i>Vos</i> bas sont troués.
What is become of <i>his</i> pens ?	Que sont devenues <i>ses</i> plumes ?
How does <i>your</i> sister do ?	Comment se porte <i>votre</i> sœur ?
You have <i>my</i> needle.	Vous avez <i>mon</i> aiguille.
<i>My</i> father and mother are sick.	<i>Mon</i> père & <i>ma</i> mère sont malades.
<i>His</i> brother and sister are in the country.	<i>Son</i> frère & <i>sa</i> sœur sont à la campagne.
<i>Your</i> brother and <i>my</i> cousin are very good friends.	<i>Votre</i> frère & <i>mon</i> cousin sont très-bons amis.
<i>Her</i> mother and aunt are against it.	<i>Sa</i> mère & <i>sa</i> tante s'y opposent.
Brother, lend me <i>your</i> pen.	<i>Mon</i> frère, prêtez-moi <i>votre</i> plume.

Sister,

Sister, I cannot ; I am writing <i>my</i> exercise.	Je ne saurois, <i>ma</i> sœur : j'écris <i>mon</i> thème.
This pen is not <i>yours</i> ; it is <i>mine</i> .	Cette plume n'est pas à <i>vous</i> ; elle est à <i>moi</i> .
Whose book is this ? It is not <i>mine</i> ; it is <i>his</i> , or <i>her's</i> .	A qui est ce livre ? Il n'est pas à <i>moi</i> ; il est à <i>lui</i> , ou à <i>elle</i> .
It is <i>your</i> knife, and not <i>his</i> .	C'est <i>votre</i> couteau, & non pas <i>le sien</i> .
It is <i>my</i> opinion and <i>her's</i> .	C'est <i>mon</i> sentiment & <i>le sien</i> .
It is <i>his</i> brother.	C'est <i>son</i> frère.
It is <i>his</i> sister.	C'est <i>sa</i> sœur.
Is it <i>your</i> hat ?	Est-ce <i>votre</i> chapeau ?
Is this <i>your</i> needle ?	Cette aiguille est-elle à <i>vous</i> ?
It is <i>my</i> paper, and not <i>your's</i> .	Ce papier est à <i>moi</i> , & non pas à <i>vous</i> .
Put <i>your</i> books in <i>their</i> places again.	Remettez <i>vos</i> livres dans <i>leurs</i> places.
<i>Their</i> reasons are bad.	<i>Leurs</i> raisons sont mauvaises.
I know <i>your</i> sentiments ; and I am no stranger to <i>your's</i> .	Je connois <i>vos</i> sentimens ; & moi, je n'ignore pas <i>les vôtres</i> .
The Thames got out of <i>it's</i> channel.	La Tamise est sortie de <i>son</i> lit.
The horse broke <i>his</i> bridle and halter.	Le cheval a rompu <i>sa</i> bride & <i>son</i> licou.
My horse carries <i>his</i> head well.	Mon cheval porte bien <i>sa</i> tête.
<i>Your</i> horse has lost <i>his</i> shoes.	<i>Votre</i> cheval a perdu <i>ses</i> fers.
I saw the chimney of <i>his</i> chamber ; <i>it's</i> mantle-piece is of marble.	J'ai vu la cheminée de <i>sa</i> chambre ; le manteau <i>en</i> est de marbre.
You have bought an elbow-chair ; <i>it's</i> arms are too high.	Vous avez acheté un fauteuil ; les bras <i>en</i> son trop hauts.
<i>Your</i> stick is not easy ; <i>it's</i> end is too sharp.	<i>Votre</i> bâton n'est pas com mode ; le bout <i>en</i> est trop pointu.
He has bought a sword ; <i>it's</i> hilt is of silver.	Il a acheté une épée ; la garde <i>en</i> est d'argent.
Have you read <i>my</i> book ?	Avez-vous lu <i>mon</i> livre ?
Is not the letter <i>thereof</i> very beautiful ?	Le caractère n' <i>en</i> est-il pas bien beau ?

He ordered *his* country-house to be rebuilt : *it's* rooms and situation are very fine. Il a fait rebâtir *sa* maison de campagne ; les chambres & la situation *en* sont belles.

There is a very large garden behind *his* house ; the trees *of it* are very well planted, *their* fruit is excellent. Il y a un fort grand jardin derrière *sa* maison ; les arbres *en* sont fort bien plantés, les fruits *en* sont excellens.

Where have you bought this book ? *It's* binding is very good. Où avez-vous acheté ce livre ? La reliure *en* est fort bonne.

Every state has *it's* advantages and troubles. Chaque état a *ses* agrémens & *ses* peines.

He is pleased in *his* situation ; he knows all *it's* pleasures. Il se plaît dans *sa* situation ; il *en* connoît tous les plaisirs.

The art of war has *it's* dangers. L'art de la guerre a *ses* dangers.

He is not pleased in *his* situation ; he sees all *it's* dangers. Il ne se plaît pas dans *sa* situation ; il *en* voit tous les dangers.

It is a small house which has *it's* conveniencies. C'est une petite maison qui a *ses* commodités.

There is a tree which spreads *it's* branches very far. Voilà un arbre qui étend *ses* branches bien loin.

He laughs from *his* teeth outward. Il ne rit que du bout *des* lèvres.

I will not in the least meddle with it. Je ne veux pas y toucher du bout *du* doigt.

He does not know which way to turn himself. Il ne sait où donner *de* la tête.

The wine flew up into *his* head. Le vin lui a donné *à* la tête.

I would take my oath of it. J'en mettrois *la* main au feu.

He waited on the lady to her coach. Il donna *la* main à la dame & la conduisit à son carrosse.

Why do not you speak ? Are you dumb ? Pourquoi ne parlez-vous pas ? Avez-vous perdu *la* voix ?

He cannot stand upon his legs. Il ne sauroit se tenir sur *ses* jambes.

She gave me *her* word for it. Elle m'en donna *sa* parole.

I will forfeit *my* head, if . . . Je donne *ma* tête à couper, si . . . She

She gave him <i>her</i> hand to kiss.	Elle lui donna <i>sa</i> main à baiser.
He stands on tip-toe.	Il se tient sur le bout <i>des</i> pieds.
He gave <i>his</i> arm to the surgeon who was to bleed him.	Il donna <i>son</i> bras au chirurgien qui devoit le saigner.
The patient lost all <i>his</i> blood.	Le malade perdit tout <i>son</i> sang.
He ran him through.	Il lui passa l'épée au travers <i>du</i> corps.
He raised <i>his</i> voice.	Il éleva <i>sa</i> voix, ou <i>la</i> voix.
She stretched out <i>her</i> arms.	Elle étendit <i>ses</i> bras, ou <i>les</i> bras.
He makes a shift to live by hard labour.	Il vit du travail de <i>ses</i> mains.
You hurted <i>my</i> foot.	Vous m'avez fait mal <i>au</i> pied.
He got <i>his</i> hair cut.	Il s'est fait couper <i>les</i> cheveux.
You split <i>my</i> head.	Vous me fendez <i>la</i> tête.
You hurt <i>my</i> finger.	Vous me faites mal <i>au</i> doigt.
Have you never had the tooth-ach? No: but I have very often a pain in <i>my</i> stomach.	N'avez vous jamais eu mal <i>aux</i> dents? Non: mais j'ai fort souvent mal <i>à</i> l'estomac.
He fell from <i>his</i> horse, and broke <i>his</i> leg.	Il tomba de <i>son</i> cheval & se cassa <i>la</i> cuisse.
They have cut off <i>his</i> leg.	On lui a coupé <i>la</i> cuisse.
He cannot walk out; the gout has swelled <i>his</i> feet.	Il ne sauroit sortir; la goutte lui a enflé <i>les</i> pieds.
<i>My</i> heart akes.	J'ai mal <i>au</i> cœur.
<i>His</i> mind is undisturbed.	Il a l'esprit en repos, ou <i>son</i> esprit est en repos.
<i>Her</i> mind is agitated with a thousand fears.	Elle a l'esprit agité de mille craintes, ou <i>son</i> esprit est agité de mille craintes.
Wash <i>your</i> hands, mouth, and face.	Lavez <i>vos</i> mains, <i>votre</i> bouche & <i>votre</i> visage.
I pricked <i>my</i> finger with <i>my</i> needle.	Je me suis piqué <i>le</i> doigt avec mon aiguille.
<i>My</i> finger is not yet healed.	<i>Mon</i> doigt n'est pas encore guéri.

SECTION III.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

1. *Ce, cet, cette, and ces* are joined to and go before a substantive; as, this book, this man, this pen, these houses, *ce livre, cet homme, cette plume, ces maisons. Celui, celle, ceux, celles*, ought to be followed by a second case; as, that of you, *celui de vous*, or the relative pronoun *qui* or *que*; as, he who loves, *celui qui aime*; he whom you love, *celui que vous aimez*.

2. *Ce* is used before a noun masculine beginning with a consonant; but if the noun begins with a vowel, or an *h* mute, *cet* must be used. It is likewise used before *qui* or *que*: in this case it is said of inanimate things only, and signifies what, or the thing which; as, what you look for is not here; *ce que vous cherchez n'est pas ici*; or the thing you look for is not here.

3. The particles *ci*, and *là**, are sometimes joined by a hyphen to a substantive; as, this man, that woman, *cet homme-ci, cette femme-là*. They are likewise joined in the same manner to the demonstrative pronouns.

4. He who, he that, she who, they who, such as, &c. in the sense of that, even governed of the verb substantive to be, are rendered into French by *celui qui, celle qui, ceux qui*, which are never separated, unless the particle *là* be joined to *celui, celle, celles, ceux*; as, he does not know the human heart, who trusts the vain promises of men; *celui-là ne connoît pas le cœur humain, qui se fie aux vaines promesses des hommes*. Such as are enemies to virtue do not know it, *ceux-là ne connoissent pas la vertu, qui lui sont ennemis*. This way of speaking is seldom used, at least in common conversation; we say rather, *celui qui se fie aux vaines promesses des hommes ne connoît pas le cœur humain. Ceux qui sont ennemis de la vertu ne la connoissent pas*.

5. He who, he that, &c. whether or no they be separated in English, are sometimes elegantly rendered into French by the impersonal *c'est* or *c'est ne pas*, according as the sentence is affirmative or negative, with an infinitive followed by *que de* before a second infinitive; as in the foregoing example I may likewise say, *C'est ne pas*

* *Ci* denotes an object near or present, and *là* a distant one.

connoître cœur le humain que de se fier aux vaines promesses des hommes.

I say *sometimes*, because, first, if one of the English verbs be in the future tense, it is by no means to be used. Secondly, there are many cases in which it is never used; as, they were punished who did it, *ceux qui l'ont fait ont été punis*; to put the two verbs in the infinitive mood would be nonsense.

6. The English possessive pronouns, his, her, their, before a substantive in the sense of of him, of her, of those, who, or that, are rendered into French, after the substantive to which they relate, by *de celui qui, de celle qui, de ceux qui, de celles qui*; as, every one should praise their endeavours who seek to be useful to the public, *chacun devoit louer les efforts de ceux qui cherchent à être utiles au public*.

7. *Ce qui, ce que*, what, beginning a sentence of two parts, is commonly followed, after the first part, by *ce*, before *être*, and the verb *être* is followed by a substantive; as, what I am saying to you is the truth, *ce que je vous dis, c'est la vérité*. Sometimes the verb *être* is followed by the preposition *de* with an infinitive; as, what grieves him, is not to have succeeded; *ce qui le fâche, c'est de n'avoir pas réussi*. Sometimes by *que*, if it comes before another mood; as, *ce qui le fâche, c'est qu'il n'a pas réussi*. *Ce qui* is used before neuter verbs; as, *ce qui me plaît*, what pleases me; and before active verbs, when it is the nominative of the verb. In other cases *ce que* is used.

8. *Ce* is not repeated in the beforementioned case before an adjective, or participle past; as, what I am saying to you is true, *ce que je vous dis est vrai*.

9. *Ceci, this, cela, that*, are sometimes relative to a single noun; as, *donnez-moi ceci, ou cela*, give me this, or that, speaking of any single thing whatever. Sometimes they are not relative to a single noun, but to an intire action: in this case *cela* generally signifies the action before spoken of; as, we often speak ill of absent people, which is unworthy; *on parle souvent mal des absens, cela est indigne*. *Ceci* generally signifies the action which is going to be mentioned; as, this is like to surprise you, a man who died a hundred and ten years old; *ceci va vous surprendre, un homme qui mourut âgé de cent dix ans*.

200 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*
Demonstrative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

Shew me <i>that</i> book.	Montrez-moi <i>ce</i> livre.
Give me <i>that</i> pen.	Donnez-moi <i>cette</i> plume.
<i>These</i> houses are very fine.	<i>Ces</i> maisons sont fort belles.
<i>These</i> ladies have a great deal of wit.	<i>Ces</i> dames sont fort spirituelles.
<i>That</i> man is very fantastical.	<i>Cet</i> homme est fort fantasque.
<i>That</i> child is very amiable.	<i>Cet</i> enfant est fort aimable.
<i>That</i> man makes himself beloved by all men.	<i>Cet</i> homme-là se fait aimer de tout le monde.
<i>These</i> people are in the right.	<i>Ces</i> gens-ci ont raison.
<i>These</i> women are very capricious.	<i>Ces</i> femmes-là sont fort capricieuses.
<i>That</i> man is in the wrong.	<i>Cet</i> homme-là a tort.
<i>These</i> apples are good for nothing.	<i>Ces</i> pommes-là ne valent rien.
Give me some of <i>those</i> pears.	Donnez-moi de <i>ces</i> poires-là.
Do you know <i>what</i> has befallen to him, or to her?	Savez-vous <i>ce</i> qui lui est arrivé?
Has she shewn you <i>what</i> was given her?	Vous a-t-elle montré <i>ce</i> qu'on lui a donné?
You will never guess <i>what</i> was said of you.	Vous ne devinerez jamais <i>ce</i> qu'on a dit de vous.
Guess <i>what</i> they are about.	Devinez <i>ce</i> qu'ils font.
I know <i>what</i> you say.	Je sais <i>ce</i> que vous dites.
I know <i>what</i> makes you angry.	Je sais <i>ce</i> qui vous fâche.
He knows not <i>what</i> you wrote.	Il ne sait pas <i>ce</i> que vous avez écrit.
He <i>who</i> betrays his friend is unworthy of friendship.	<i>Celui-là</i> est indigne d'amitié qui trahit son ami; ou <i>celui</i> qui trahit son ami est indigne d'amitié; ou <i>c'est être</i> indigne d'amitié <i>que</i> de trahir son ami.
<i>They who</i> despise learning do not know the value of it.	<i>Ceux qui</i> méprisent la science n'en connoissent pas le prix; ou <i>ceux-là</i> ne connoissent pas le prix de la science qui la méprisent; ou <i>c'est ne</i> pas connoître le prix de la science <i>que</i> de la mépriser.

He who shuns company is a stranger to the charms of society.

Celui qui évite la compagnie ne connoît pas les charmes de la société ; ou celui-là ne connoît pas les charmes de la société qui évite la compagnie ; ou c'est ne pas connoître les charmes de la société que d'éviter la compagnie.

She who loves nobody does not taste the pleasures of friendship.

Celle qui n'aime personne ne goûte pas les plaisirs de l'amitié ; ou celle-là ne goûte pas les plaisirs de l'amitié, qui n'aime personne ; ou c'est ne pas goûter les plaisirs de l'amitié, que de n'aimer personne.

Such as are enemies to virtue, are strangers to it.

Ceux qui sont ennemis de la vertu ne la connoissent pas ; ou ceux-là ne connoissent pas la vertu qui lui sont ennemis ; ou c'est ne pas connoître la vertu que de lui être ennemi.

Such as are idle do not know the value of time.

Ceux qui sont paresseux ne connoissent pas la valeur du temps ; ou ceux-là ne connoissent pas la valeur du temps qui sont paresseux ; ou c'est ne pas connoître la valeur du temps que d'être paresseux.

Such as are contented with their lot are happy.

Ceux qui sont contents de leur sort sont heureux ; ou ceux-là sont heureux qui sont contents de leur sort ; ou c'est être heureux que d'être content de son sort.

He who does not study will never be learned.

*Celui qui n'étudie pas ne sera jamais savant *.*

He was punished who did it.

Celui qui a fait cela a été puni.

* See the exception to the fifth rule.

They have been rewarded, *who* have done their exercises. *Ceux qui ont fait leurs thèmes ont été récompensés.*

They are not always happy *who* seem to be so. *Ceux qui paroissent être heureux ne le sont pas toujours.*

We should always remember *their* cares by *whom* we were brought up. *Nous devrions toujours nous souvenir du soin de ceux par qui nous avons été élevés.*

We ought to encourage *their* endeavours, *who* apply themselves to arts and sciences. *On doit encourager les efforts de ceux qui s'appliquent aux arts & aux sciences.*

What makes him angry *is* her bad humour. *Ce qui le fâche c'est sa mauvaise humeur.*

What an honest man ought to bewail *is* the loss of time. *Ce qu'un honnête homme doit regretter c'est la perte du temps.*

What grieves him *is* not to have succeeded. *Ce qui le fâche c'est de n'avoir pas réussi, ou c'est qu'il n'a pas réussi.*

What rejoices me *is* to have seen you and your family in good health. *Ce qui me réjouit c'est de vous avoir vu & toute votre famille en bonne santé, ou c'est que je vous ai vu & toute votre famille en bonne santé.*

What I say to you *is* true. *Ce que je vous dis est vrai.*

What she said to you *is* false. *Ce qu'elle vous a dit est faux.*

What you have told *is* surprising. *Ce que vous avez dit est surprenant.*

Does *this* please you? *Ceci vous plaît-il?*

Does *that* make you angry? *Cela vous fâche-t-il?*

That surprises me. *Cela me surprend.*

What do you think of *it*? *Que pensez vous de cela.*

I did never think of *it*. *Je n'ai jamais pensé à cela.*

Keep *this*, and give me *that*. *Gardez ceci, & donnez-moi cela.*

Did you write *that*? *Avez-vous écrit cela?*

I do not like *that*. *Je n'aime pas cela.*

That is wonderful. *Cela est admirable.*

SECTION IV.

Relative Pronouns.

1. The relative pronoun *qui* is the nominative, and *que* the accusative, in speaking of all sorts of objects; as, the stone which is here, *la pierre qui est ici*; the house that you see, *la maison que vous voyez*. Except that *qui* is used even in the accusative instead of *que*, when it signifies what person; as, *je sais qui vous aimez*, I know whom you love, or what person you love; and when it is governed by prepositions; as, *en qui*, *sur qui*, *avec qui*, &c. In this last case *lequel*, &c. may likewise be used.

2. When *qui* is in the second case, or comes after any preposition whatever, it is applied only to persons, or objects used as persons; and therefore it would be a fault to say, *c'est la maison de qui je vous ai parlé*, it is the house which I have spoken to you of. In this case we make use of *duquel*, *de laquelle*, &c. or *dont*, which is used equally for all objects, and often more properly than *de qui*, or *duquel*, *de la quelle*, &c. as, *c'est la maison dont je vous ai parlé*.

3. *A qui* is sometimes used in speaking of animate objects, though they are not persons, or objects used as persons; but, as we can never err by making use of *auquel*, *à laquelle*, &c. I would advise to do so.

4. Whom, which, that, though not expressed in English, must always be expressed in French by *qui*, or *que*; as, the man you see, *l'homme que vous voyez*.

5. *Lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. are to be used instead of *qui*, 1st, when *qui* is equivocal: 2dly, when the relative pronoun is in the second case after a substantive; as, a courier has been sent to court, at whose return . . . *on a envoyé un courrier à la cour, au retour duquel* . . . 3dly, when the relative pronoun expresses a choice; as, which will you see? *lequel*, or *laquelle*, *voulez-vous voir*?

6. Speaking of things, in which, in what, to which, at which, at what, in the sense of where, or wherein, are rendered into French by *où* instead of *dans lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. as, the house in which, or where he lives, *la maison où il demeure*; the end at which, or whereat, he aims, *le but où il tend*. From which, from what, are rendered by *d'où* instead of *duquel*, *de laquelle*, &c. as the country from

which I come, *le pays d'où je viens*. Through which, by which, are rendered by *par où*, or *par lequel*, &c.

7. The relative pronoun *quoi* is used only in speaking of inanimate objects. It may be used in the third case instead of *aucel*, *à laquelle*, &c. as, it is a reason which I did not think of, *c'est une raison à quoi je ne pensois pas*.

However, in most circumstances *aucel*, *à laquelle*, &c. may be used equally; of which the ear must be the judge.

8. *A quoi* must always be used when it has for it's antecedent *ce* and the verb *être*, or *rien*; and is followed by a noun, or a verb governing the third case; as, it is to that I apply myself, *c'est à quoi je m'applique*; there is nothing which I am not disposed to, *il n'y a rien à quoi je ne sois disposé*.

9. *De quoi* is used when it follows immediately *ce* and the verb *être*, and is followed by a noun, or a verb governing the second case; as, it is that I complain of, *c'est de quoi je me plains*. But, after *rien*, we make use of *dont*; at least it is a great deal better; as, there is nothing in the world which God is not the author of, *il n'y a rien au monde dont Dieu ne soit auteur*.

10. *Quoi* may likewise be used instead of *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. after prepositions governing it, such as *sur*, *en*, *après*, *avec*, &c. as, the reason I rely upon, *la raison sur quoi je me fonde*.

11. *Que* is used instead of *de qui* and *à qui*. It happens not only when there comes immediately before it the second or third case of a personal pronoun*, but likewise after any other noun, when the sentence begins with *ce* and *être*; as, it is to you that I speak, *c'est à vous que je parle*; it is to happiness that I aspire, *c'est au bonheur que*

* It is not true what Chambaud says, "that *que* is used instead of *de qui* and *à qui*, whenever there comes immediately before it the second or third relation of a pronoun personal;" as, for example, he complains of you, from whom he received so many benefits; of you to whom he should be so indebted; *il se plaint de vous de qui il a reçu tant de bienfaits*; *de vous, à qui il devoit avoir tant d'obligations*. To put *que* instead of *de qui* would signify quite the contrary, viz. he complains of you that he has received so many benefits; and instead of *à qui* it would be downright nonsense.

aspire; it is from the public, that I expect the approbation, *c'est du public que j'attends l'approbation.*

The true mark to know it is when *que* has the signification of *that*, as you may see by the foregoing examples; by this rule there is no danger of being mistaken. Hence it may appear, that in such cases *que* is to be looked upon as a conjunction rather than a relative pronoun.

Relative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

It is the lady <i>who</i> spoke to you.	C'est la dame <i>qui</i> vous a parlé.
Speak to this gentleman <i>who</i> is here.	Parlez à ce monsieur <i>qui</i> est ici.
Is this the new hat <i>which</i> you bought?	Est-ce là le chapeau neuf <i>que</i> vous avez acheté?
The book <i>which</i> you lent me, is very well written.	Le livre <i>que</i> vous m'avez prêté, est fort bien écrit.
I know <i>whom</i> you mean.	Je sais <i>qui</i> vous voulez dire.
You do not know <i>who</i> it is.	Vous ne savez pas <i>qui</i> c'est.
Do you know <i>whom</i> I love?	Savez vous <i>qui</i> j'aime?
I know <i>whom</i> she loves.	Je sais <i>qui</i> elle aime.
It is a friend <i>in whom</i> I put my confidence.	C'est un ami <i>en qui</i> je mets ma confiance.
It is a person <i>in whom</i> one may confide.	C'est une personne à <i>qui</i> on peut se fier.
It is a lady <i>against whom</i> nothing can be said with truth.	C'est une demoiselle <i>contre qui</i> on ne peut mal parler avec vérité.
I know the person you talked with.	Je connois la personne <i>avec qui</i> vous avez parlé.
It is the man <i>of whom</i> I spoke to you.	C'est l'homme <i>de qui</i> , ou <i>dont</i> , je vous ai parlé.
It is the horse <i>of which</i> he spoke to you.	C'est le cheval <i>duquel</i> , ou <i>dont</i> , il vous a parlé.
It is a woman <i>in whose</i> behaviour there is nothing to censure.	C'est une femme sur la conduite <i>de laquelle</i> il n'y a rien à redire.
It is a merchant <i>of whose</i> honour and probity there can be no doubt.	C'est un négociant sur l'honneur & la probité <i>duquel</i> il ne sauroit y avoir de doute.

206 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

The circumstances <i>in which</i> you are.	Les circonstances où vous êtes.
The danger <i>in which</i> he finds himself.	Le danger où il se trouve.
The end <i>whereat</i> she aims.	Le but où elle vise.
The house <i>where</i> she lives in.	La maison où elle demeure.
He has got the same frame of mind and sentiments <i>in which</i> he has always been.	Il est dans la même disposition d'esprit, & dans les mêmes sentimens où il a toujours été.
I know the place <i>whence</i> you come.	Je fais la place d'où vous venez.
These are the reasons <i>from which</i> I conclude.	Voilà les raisons d'où je conclus.
These are his discourses <i>by which</i> he insinuates.	Voilà ses discours par où il insinue.
That is the city <i>through which</i> I have passed.	Voilà la ville par où j'ai passé.
I know the means <i>by which</i> he gained his point.	Je fais les moyens par où il parvint à sa fin.
That is the matter in question.	Voilà de quoi il s'agit.
It is <i>to that</i> I think.	C'est à quoi je pense.
It is <i>what</i> he complains of.	C'est de quoi il se plaint.
It was <i>that</i> he applied himself to.	C'étoit à quoi il s'appliquoit.
It was <i>to that</i> she exhorted him.	C'étoit à quoi elle l'exhortoit.
It is <i>that</i> I am sorry for.	C'est de quoi je suis fâché.
It is <i>that</i> I assure you.	C'est de quoi je vous assure.
It is <i>that</i> I will think of.	C'est à quoi je penserai.
There is nothing <i>in which</i> I am not ready to oblige you.	Il n'y a rien à quoi je ne sois disposé pour vous obliger.
I do not see <i>upon what</i> his discourse may be grounded.	Je ne vois pas sur quoi son discours puisse être fondé.
It is <i>that</i> you may rely upon.	C'est sur quoi vous pouvez compter.
It is an argument <i>to which</i> there is no answer.	C'est un raisonnement à quoi, ou auquel, il n'y a point de réponse.

Death is an evil <i>to which</i> there is no remedy.	La mort est un mal à <i>quoi</i> , ou <i>auquel</i> , il n'y a point de remède.
Idleness is a vice <i>to which</i> young people are much inclined.	La paresse est un vice à <i>quoi</i> , ou <i>auquel</i> , les jeunes gens sont fort enclins.]
This is the reason <i>upon which</i> I am grounded.	C'est la raison <i>sur quoi</i> , ou <i>sur laquelle</i> , je suis fondé.
It is the happiness <i>to which</i> I aspire.	C'est le bonheur <i>après quoi</i> , ou <i>après lequel</i> , j'aspire.
These are the reasons <i>by</i> <i>which</i> I convinced him.	Ce sont les raisons <i>avec quoi</i> , ou <i>avec lesquelles</i> , je l'ai convaincu.
There is nothing <i>for which</i> I am more sorry.	Il n'y a rien <i>dont</i> je sois plus fâché.
There is nothing <i>of which</i> he more complains.	Il n'y a rien <i>dont</i> il se plaigne davantage.
There is nothing <i>that</i> he is not capable of.	Il n'y a rien <i>dont</i> il ne soit capable.
It is to you <i>that</i> I shall speak.	C'est à vous <i>que</i> je parlerai.
It is to her <i>that</i> I had pro- mised it.	C'est à elle <i>que</i> je l'avois pro- mis.
It is from his friend <i>that</i> he has received so many fa- vours.	C'est de son ami <i>qu'il</i> a reçu tant d'amitiés.
It is his brother <i>that</i> he complains of.	C'est de son frère <i>qu'il</i> se plaint.
It was by my friend <i>that</i> I was betrayed.	Ce fut par mon ami <i>que</i> je fus trahi.
It is to England <i>that</i> the king of Prussia is much indebted.	C'est à l'Angleterre <i>que</i> le roi de Prusse a beaucoup d'obligation.
It is to my sister <i>that</i> you have given it.	C'est à ma sœur <i>que</i> vous l'avez donné.
It is to her <i>that</i> you have spoken.	C'est à elle <i>que</i> vous avez parlé.
It is from her <i>that</i> I expect that favour.	C'est d'elle <i>que</i> j'attends cette grace.
It is to trade <i>that</i> he applies himself.	C'est au commerce <i>qu'ils</i> s'ap- pliquent.
It is to the protection of his friends <i>that</i> he owes his fortune.	C'est à la protection de ses amis <i>qu'il</i> doit sa fortune.

It is by the public *that* he is approved of. | *C'est du public qu'il est approuvé.*

SECTION V.

Interrogative Pronouns.

1. *Que*, as interrogative, is applied only to things, and *qui*, when persons are spoken of; as, what do you say? *que dites-vous?* whom do you look for? *qui cherchez-vous?* Both are used in all their cases as above.

2. *Quoi*, interrogative, is used after a preposition, or after the particles *de* or *à*; as, what are you grounded upon? *sur quoi vous fondez-vous?* about what do you busy yourself? *de quoi vous mêlez-vous?*

3. If *quoi* be not immediately followed by a verb, it may be sometimes used in the first case; as, what is there greater? *quoi de plus grand?* It sometimes expresses only an emotion of mind; as, how! you are angry? *quoi! vous êtes fâché?*

4. *Quel, quelle, &c.* are said of persons and things. It is to be observed, that *quel* is always followed by it's substantive; as, what man is it? *quel homme est-ce?* Except when the noun was expressed before; as, this is my opinion; what is yours? *voilà mon sentiment; quel est le vôtre?*

5. *Lequel, &c.* is also said of persons and things; it is always followed by a genitive expressed, or understood; as, which of the two will you have? *lequel des deux voulez-vous?*—*Que* answers to what; *lequel* to which.

6. Whose, signifying to whom a thing belongs, is translated in French by the dative, *à qui*; as, whose house is that? *à qui est cette maison?*

Interrogative Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

What do you mutter there? | *Que marmotez-vous là?*
What do you want? | *Que souhaitez-vous?*

* Observe here, that, instead of *que*, we often make use of *qu'est-ce que*, or *qu'est-ce que c'est que*. In both cases the pronoun comes before the verb.

What

<i>What do you ask for ?</i>	<i>Que demandez-vous ?</i>
<i>What do you fear ?</i>	<i>Que craignez-vous ?</i>
<i>What is the matter ?</i>	<i>Qu'est-ce que-c'est ?</i>
<i>What do riches avail without health ?</i>	<i>Que servent les richesses sans la santé ?</i>
<i>What shall we do ?</i>	<i>Que ferons-nous ?</i>
<i>Do you remember what you talked of to me ?</i>	<i>Vous souvenez-vous de ce que vous m'avez parlé ?</i>
<i>Is that like what you have been told of ?</i>	<i>Cela est-il conforme à ce que vous avez entendu dire ?</i>
<i>Whom do you look for ?</i>	<i>Qui * cherchez-vous ?</i>
<i>Who has done that ?</i>	<i>Qui a fait cela ?</i>
<i>Who spoke to you ?</i>	<i>Qui est-ce qui vous a parlé ?</i>
<i>Whom do you suspect ?</i>	<i>Qui est-ce que vous soupçonnez ?</i>
<i>Whom have you that news from ?</i>	<i>De qui tenez-vous cette nouvelle ?</i>
<i>Who is come ?</i>	<i>Qui est-ce qui est venu ?</i>
<i>To whom do you give the preference ?</i>	<i>À qui donnez-vous la préférence ?</i>
<i>What do you meddle with ?</i>	<i>De quoi vous mêlez-vous ?</i>
<i>What does she complain of ?</i>	<i>De quoi se plaint-elle ?</i>
<i>What is the matter ?</i>	<i>De quoi s'agit-il ?</i>
<i>Why so much ado ?</i>	<i>À quoi bon tant de façons ?</i>
<i>What do you apply yourself to ?</i>	<i>À quoi vous appliquez-vous ?</i>
<i>How do you spend your time ?</i>	<i>À quoi passez-vous le temps ?</i>
<i>What can she expect ?</i>	<i>À quoi peut-elle s'attendre ?</i>
<i>What does he talk of ?</i>	<i>De quoi parle-t-il ?</i>
<i>What is she so angry for ?</i>	<i>De quoi est-elle si fâchée ?</i>
<i>What are they so jealous of ?</i>	<i>De quoi sont-ils si jaloux ?</i>
<i>What do you impute the fault to ?</i>	<i>À quoi attribuez-vous la faute ?</i>
<i>How shall we spend our time ?</i>	<i>À quoi nous amuserons-nous ?</i>
<i>What man spoke to you ?</i>	<i>Quel homme vous a parlé ?</i>
<i>What woman have you seen ?</i>	<i>Quelle femme avez-vous vue ?</i>
<i>What lace has she bought ?</i>	<i>Quelle dentelle a-t-elle achetée ?</i>

* Instead of *qui*, in such or the like interrogations, we make equally well use of *qui est-ce qui* in the nominative, and *qui est-ce que* in the accusative ; in this case the personal pronoun is put before the verb.

What

210 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>What books have you read ?</i>	<i>Quels livres avez-vous lus ?</i>
<i>What sort of shirts does he wear ?</i>	<i>Quelles chemises porte-t-il ?</i>
<i>That is my opinion ; what is his ?</i>	<i>Voilà mon opinion ; quelle est la sienne ?</i>
<i>That is your advice ; what is her's ?</i>	<i>Voilà votre avis ; quel est le sien ?</i>
<i>It was her sentiment ; what was yours ?</i>	<i>C'étoit son sentiment ; quel étoit le vôtre ?</i>
<i>What grammar do you read ?</i>	<i>Quelle grammaire lisez-vous ?</i>
<i>Of all the grammars which have been printed, to which do you give the preference ?</i>	<i>De toutes les grammaires qui ont été imprimées, à laquelle donnez-vous la préférence ?</i>
<i>There are apples and pears ; which do you like best ?</i>	<i>Voilà des pommes & des poires ; lesquelles aimez-vous le mieux ?</i>
<i>Which of these two oranges will you have ?</i>	<i>Laquelle de ces deux oranges voulez-vous ?</i>
<i>Which of these two ladies do you think the handsomest ?</i>	<i>Laquelle de ces deux dames trouvez-vous la plus belle ?</i>
<i>Which of all the grammarians has written most clearly and precisely ?</i>	<i>Lequel de tous les grammairiens a écrit le plus clairement, & avec le plus de précision ?</i>
<i>Which of the books you have read, do you think the most useful ?</i>	<i>Des livres que vous avez lus, lesquels trouvez-vous les plus utiles ?</i>
<i>Whose penknife is this ?</i>	<i>A qui est ce canif ?</i>
<i>Whose pen is this ?</i>	<i>A qui est cette plume ?</i>
<i>Whose hat is this ?</i>	<i>A qui est ce chapeau ?</i>
<i>Whose garden is this ?</i>	<i>A qui est ce jardin ?</i>

SECTION VI.

Indefinite or Indeterminate Pronouns.

1. *Pas un, aucun, nul*, are three negative pronouns, having the signification of no person or thing, and require the particle *ne* before the verb ; as, nobody spoke of it, *aucun, or pas un, or nul, n'en a pas parlé* ; nobody knows it, *aucun, or pas un, or nul, ne le sait*. *Nul* is never used in

an interrogation, or with a negation before it; for we do not say, *nul ne le fait-il ?*

2. *Aucun* is sometimes used without a negation in phrases of interrogation or doubt. In such a case it may be rendered by *quelqu'un*; as, of all those who know my reasons, is there any one who has blamed me? *de tous ceux qui savent mes raisons, y en a-t-il aucun qui m'ait blâmé ?*

3. When *aucun* and *nul* are followed by a second case, or a substantive either expressed or understood, they must be in the same gender as that second case or substantive, but not in the same number; as, none of them has been there, *aucun d'eux*, speaking of men, or *aucune d'elles*, speaking of women, *n'y a été*. These three pronouns, used as pronouns, have no plural.

4. *Nul* and *aucun* are sometimes to be looked upon as adjectives; this happens, when they are joined to a substantive; as, he yields to no reason, *il ne se rend à aucune raison*; she has no pleasure, *elle n'a aucun plaisir*. *Aucun* in such a case is a great deal better.

5. *Nul* sometimes signifies void, that does not stand good in law; in such a case it has a plural, if the noun be in the plural; as, the proceedings are void, *les procédures sont nulles*.

6. *Chacun* signifies every person or thing, each, has no plural, is indifferently applied to persons and things, and follows the gender of the noun to which it is joined, or relates; as, each of these women has seen it, *chacune de ces deux femmes l'a vu*. If the noun be a collective one, and cannot be divided by one or two, *chacun* is put in the masculine gender, though the collective noun be feminine; as, the commons withdrew, each of them to their own home; *les communes se retirèrent, chacun chez soi*.

N. B. Custom, now-a-days, does not allow to say *un chacun* instead of *chacun*.

7. *Personne* signifies nobody, has no plural, is always of the masculine gender, and attended by the particle *ne*, before the verb; as, nobody saw it, *personne ne l'a vu*.

8. When *personne* signifies any body, and is not preceded by an adverb of denial, such as not, never, &c. the particle *ne* must be omitted; as, did ever any body find the philosopher's stone? *personne a-t-il jamais trouvé la pierre philosophale ?* This way of speaking insinuates, that you do not believe the thing concerning which you inquire.

Take

Take notice not to confound this pronoun with the noun substantive, a person, *une personne*, the person, *la personne*, which is always feminine.

9. *Tout* has many significations : it sometimes signifies all, every, or the whole. When it is joined to a substantive, it requires the definite article before the following noun, notwithstanding it's having before it *de* or *à* ; as, the whole house, *toute la maison* ; of the whole house, *de toute la maison* ; to the whole house, *à toute la maison*.

10. The pronoun *tout*, used by itself, is always put in the masculine singular ; as, every thing almost is uncertain in the world, *presque tout est incertain dans le monde*. Sometimes it has the signification of *chaque* ; as, every day, *tous les jours* ; every moment, *à tout moment*, &c. But we say, *à chaque instant*, *à chaque minute*, every instant, every minute.

11. *Tout* sometimes signifies although, followed by a word denoting the quality, office, dignity, trade, calling, circumstance, &c. of the subject ; in such a case, the word denoting such quality, &c. which is placed after the verb in English, must be placed in French immediately after *tout*, and the word denoting such quality must be followed by *que* ; as, though he be learned, he mistakes sometimes ; *tout savant qu'il est, il se trompe quelquefois*. When *tout* is rendered by *bien que*, or *quoique*, the verb must be put in the subjunctive ; as, *bien que*, or *quoiqu'il soit savant, &c.*

12. When the word which is after the verb does not denote the quality of the subject, then for all, or although, must be rendered into French by *bien que*, or *quoique* ; as, although you make use of his physician, *bien que*, or *quoique, vous vous serviez de son médecin*.

13. *Tout*, in the sense of although, is indeclinable, except before a noun feminine beginning with a consonant.

14. *Tout* sometimes signifies quite, intirely ; as, she is quite lovely, *elle est tout aimable*. In this sense it is likewise declinable only before a noun feminine beginning with a consonant.

15. When *rien* signifies nothing, or not any thing, the particle *ne* must be placed before the verb ; as, I have seen nothing prettier, *je n'ai rien vu de plus beau*.

But, when it signifies any thing not preceded by an adverb of denial, the particle *ne* is omitted ; as, have you ever

ever seen any thing so beautiful? *avez-vous jamais rien vu de si beau?*

16. *Plusieurs* signifies many, or several. It is always plural; as, several have believed that the world was eternal, *plusieurs ont cru le monde éternel*. It is sometimes an adjective; as, many friends, *plusieurs amis*. It is declined with the indefinite articles *de* and *à*.

17. *Autre*, other, is sometimes an adjective; as, another book, *un autre livre*: Sometimes a substantive, when it is preceded by *en*, to which it hath a relation; as, *j'en connois un autre*, I know another: Sometimes a pronoun; as, another than you, *un autre que vous*.—*Autrui*, one's neighbour, others, or other people, is used only in the second and third cases; as, of others, to others, *d'autrui, à autrui*.—*Ni l'un ni l'autre*, neither the one nor the other, will have the verb in the singular, if the verb comes after it; as, *ni l'un ni l'autre n'en sait la raison*, neither the one, nor the other, knows the reason of it; and in the plural, if it comes before; as, *ils n'en savent la raison ni l'un ni l'autre*.—*L'un, l'autre*, one, the other, one another, is used to express the mutual action of two objects on each other, and consequently it is always reciprocal; as, they love one another, *ils s'aiment l'un l'autre*. The first is always in the first case.—*L'un & l'autre*, one and the other, or both, has a different meaning; it signifies the union of two objects already mentioned; as, both are in the wrong, *ils ont tort l'un & l'autre*, or *l'un & l'autre ont tort*; it governs always the plural. Both of these two words are declined with the definite article.

Take notice, that *l'un l'autre* comes always after the verb; *ni l'un ni l'autre*, and *l'un & l'autre*, in the first case, go indifferently before or after with this difference, that, when they are put after, the personal pronoun goes always before the verb, though not expressed in English; and, when they are before the verb, the personal pronoun is omitted, though expressed in English; as, they are both in the wrong, or both are in the wrong, *ils ont tort l'un & l'autre, or l'un & l'autre ont tort*.

18. *Quelque*, some, signifies in the singular, that the object is taken indeterminately; as, he is always reading some good book, *il lit toujours quelque bon livre*. In the plural, it expresses an indeterminate number of objects; as, he is addicted to some vices, *il est adonné à quelques vices*.

19. Sometimes

19. Sometimes *quelque* signifies not the indeterminate number, but the indeterminate quality or quantity of things, and answers these English expressions, whatever, whatsoever, although, with ever so much, &c. as, although they are learned, *quelque savans qu'ils soient*. *Quelque*, taken in this sense, has no plural before adjectives, unless they be immediately followed by their substantives; as, though they seem ever so rich, *quelque riches qu'ils paroissent*; though he has done ever so fine actions, *quelques belles actions, qu'il ait faites*. Hence it appears, how much an author mistakes who says, that *quelque* can never happen to come before an adjective but with *être*.

Observe, that *quelque* in this sense is always followed by *que*, or *qui*, which govern the following verb in the subjunctive mood.

20. When whatever, &c. signifying *quelque* in French, is followed immediately by a verb, or by a first case of a personal pronoun, it must be separated into two words, and then *quel* has both numbers and genders, and *que* or *qui* are not repeated in the following part of the sentence; as, whatever his intentions are, *quelles que soient ses intentions*; whatever I am, *quel que je sois*; whatever they may be, (speaking of women) *quelles qu'elles puissent être*.

21. *Quelqu'un*, in the sense of somebody, or any body, is used in all it's cases, in the singular masculine only; as, somebody has told it to me, *quelqu'un me l'a dit*; I know it from somebody, *je le sais de quelqu'un*; I have given it to somebody, *je l'ai donné à quelqu'un*. However, *quelques-uns* is used as the nominative of the verb; as, some persons have said it, *quelques-uns l'ont dit*. In the other cases we make use of *quelques personnes*, and not *quelques-uns*.

22. *Quelqu'un* sometimes signifies an indeterminate part of a number, and is then joined with the second case of some other noun expressed, or sufficiently understood; or with the particle *en*, instead of the second case; in this sense, *quelqu'un* is used in all genders, numbers, and cases; as, has any of those gentlemen heard any thing of it? *quelqu'un, or quelques-uns, de ces messieurs en auroit-il*, or, *auroient-ils, entendu parler?* There are fine flowers, give me some; *voilà de belles fleurs, donnez m'en quelques-unes*.

23. When

23. When whatever, or whatsoever, has no relation either to an adjective or substantive, it must be rendered by *quoi que, tout ce qui, tout ce que*; as, whatever happens, *quoi qu'il arrive*; whatever you please, *tout ce qu'il vous plaira*. — *Quoi que* is used only in the first case, whereas *tout ce qui, tout ce que*, are used in all their cases. Observe, that *quoi que ce soit* (whatever, or whatsoever it may be) is likewise used in all it's cases; as, of whatever he may speak, *de quoi que ce soit qu'il parle*; to whatsoever he may apply himself, *à quoi que ce soit qu'il s'applique*: this last pronoun, when followed by a verb, requires that verb in the subjunctive mood with *que* before it, as may be seen in the foregoing example.

Quoi que ce soit in a sentence with the particle *ne*, before the verb, signifies nothing at all, or nothing whatever; as, he talks of nothing whatever, *il ne parle de quoi que ce soit*.

24. *Qui que ce soit*, whoever, or what person soever, is used in all it's cases; as, from whomsoever he may have learned it, *de qui que ce soit qu'il l'ait appris*: whomsoever he may address himself to, *à qui que ce soit qu'il s'adresse*. When this pronoun belongs to a sentence wherein *ne* precedes the verb, it stands for nobody whatever; as, I shall speak of it to nobody whatever, *je n'en parlerai à qui que ce soit*. Hence it appears, that *quoi que ce soit* is used for things only, and *qui que ce soit* for persons.

25. *Qui que ce soit* in the sense of *quiconque*, whoever, or what person soever must always be followed by *il, elle, &c.* or *qui*, and sometimes by both; as, whosoever it may be, he will be discovered, *qui que ce soit, il sera découvert*: whosoever deceives me, shall be discovered, *qui que ce soit, qui me trompe, il sera découvert*: but after *quiconque*, *il* and *qui* are omitted; as, *quiconque me trompera, sera découvert*, and not, *il sera découvert*.

26. *Même* is sometimes an adjective; as, the same author, *le même auteur*: sometimes it answers to self in English; as, myself, *moi-même*: in these two senses it has a plural*: sometimes it answers to even in English; as, even this book, *ce livre même*.

* See rule 22. of the personal pronouns, at the end of page 127.

116 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

27. *Je ne sai qui*, I do not know who, is used in all it's cases in the singular only for persons. *Je ne sai quoi*, I do not know what, is used in all it's cases for things only in the singular. *Je ne sais quel* is used in all it's numbers, cases, and genders, speaking of persons or things, and is always followed by a substantive.

28. One, they, we, people, men, a body, &c. are oftentimes rendered by *on*; as, they, or people, talk, *on parle*; may a body know: *peut-on savoir*? Sometimes *on* signifies *it*: in this case, the verb, which is in English in the passive voice, must be changed in French into the active; as, it is hoped, *on espère*; it was said, *on disoit*. Moreover, as the passive voice is seldom used in French, in such a case the noun, or pronoun, which is the subject of the passive verb in English, must be made the object of the verb in French, and the passive verb must be changed into the active, and put in the same tense, as in English; as, great rejoicings have been made this week, *on a fait cette semaine de grandes réjouissances*, instead of *de grandes réjouissances ont été faites*.

Indeterminate Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

Nobody spoke to him.

Aucun, pas un, ou nul ne lui a parlé.

Nobody knows it.

Aucun, pas un, ou nul ne le sait.

Nobody has seen it.

Aucun, pas un, ou nul ne l'a vu.

Nobody can boast of it.

Aucun, pas un, ou nul ne peut s'en vanter.

Of all the grammars, I am a slave to none.

De toutes les grammaires, je ne m'attache à aucune, and not à nulle.

Did *any body* ask for me?

Personne ne m'a-t-il demandé?

I never saw *any* of them.

Je n'en ai jamais vu un, ou aucun, and not nul.

Did you ever see *any one* who . . . ?

En avez-vous jamais vu un, ou aucun qui . . . ? and not nul.

Is there <i>any one</i> who can blame me ?	Y en a-t-il <i>aucun</i> qui puisse me blâmer ?
Is there <i>any one</i> who has seen it ?	Y en a-t-il <i>aucun</i> qui l'ait vu ?
I have not read <i>any</i> of the books you lent me.	Je n'ai lu <i>aucun</i> des livres, que vous m'avez prêtés.
I did not see <i>any</i> of the ladies you spoke of.	Je n'ai vu <i>aucune</i> des dames, dont vous avez parlé.
I know none of those merchants.	Je ne connois <i>aucun</i> de ces commerçans.
I saw <i>none</i> of them.	Je n'ai vu <i>aucun</i> d'eux, <i>for the masculine : aucune d'elles, for the feminine.</i>
He has <i>no</i> rest.	Il n'a <i>nul</i> , ou <i>aucun</i> , repos.
She has <i>no</i> uneasiness of mind.	Elle n'a <i>nulle</i> , ou <i>aucune</i> , inquiétude d'esprit.
I have <i>no</i> interest in it.	Je n'ai <i>nul</i> , ou <i>aucun</i> , intérêt en cela.
The sentence was annulled.	La sentence fut déclarée <i>nulle</i> .
All their privileges are annulled.	Tous leurs privilèges sont <i>nuls</i> .
<i>Every one</i> lives after his own manner.	<i>Chacun</i> vit à sa mode.
<i>All men</i> are faulty.	<i>Chacun</i> fait des fautes.
<i>All men</i> desire to be happy.	<i>Chacun</i> veut être heureux.
<i>Every one</i> of them was surprised.	<i>Chacun</i> d'eux fut surpris, <i>for the masculine : chacune d'elles fut surprise, for the feminine.</i>
I know two ladies ; they have, <i>each of them</i> , two thousand pounds a year.	Je connois deux demoiselles, elles ont <i>chacune</i> deux mille livres sterlings par an.
The two clerks have, <i>each of them</i> , written four letters.	Les deux commis ont écrit <i>chacun</i> quatre lettres.
The commons withdrew, <i>each of them</i> to his own home.	Les communes se retirèrent <i>chacun</i> chez soi.
<i>Each of</i> the shires sends two representatives to parliament.	Les provinces envoient <i>chacun</i> deux députés au parlement.
Put the books in order and set <i>each of them</i> in it's place.	Arrangez les livres, & les mettez <i>chacun</i> en sa place.
	L. <i>Nobody</i>

218 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Nobody talks of it.

Nobody has seen you.

Nobody has guessed the meaning of the riddle.

Nobody knows it.

Nobody suspected her.

She told it to *nobody*.

He mistrusts *nobody*.

She trusts *nobody*.

Did ever *any body* know all the properties of matter ?

Did ever *any body* seriously doubt of the existence of God ?

Did ever *any man* comprehend the mysteries of religion ?

All is lost.

All is quiet now.

Every thing in nature is liable to change.

He mistrusts *every thing*.

She is frightened at *every shadow*.

He is capable of *every thing*.

Can one be sure of *every thing* ?

I am compliant to *every thing* you please.

He is fit for *any thing*.

They are against *every thing*.

I see her, and speak to her *every day*.

She goes to the play almost *every night*.

He flies into a passion *every moment*.

Although he be rich, he is not more contented, for all his riches.

Although he seems angry, he is not really so.

Personne n'en parle.

Personne ne vous a vu.

Personne n'a deviné l'énigme.

Personne ne le sait.

Personne ne la soupçonnoit.

Elle ne l'a dit à *personne*.

Il ne se méfie de *personne*.

Elle ne se fie à *personne*.

Personne a-t-il jamais connu toutes les propriétés de la matière ?

Personne a-t-il jamais douté sérieusement de l'existence de Dieu ?

Personne a-t-il jamais compris les mystères de la religion ?

Tout est perdu.

Tout est tranquille à présent.

Tout dans la nature est sujet aux changemens.

Il se méfie de *tout*.

Elle est épouvantée de *tout*.

Il est capable de *tout*.

Peut-on être sûr de *tout* ?

Je suis prêt à *tout* ce qu'il vous plaira.

Il est propre à *tout*.

Il s'oppose à *tout*.

Je la vois, & lui parle *tous* les jours.

Elle va à la comédie presque *toutes* les nuits.

Il s'emporte à *tout* moment.

Tout riche qu'il est, ou *quoiqu'il* soit riche, il n'en est pas plus content.

Tout fâché qu'il paroît, ou *quoiqu'il* paroisse fâché, il ne l'est pas. *Though*

Though she be rich, she is not the more charitable for her riches.

Toute riche qu'elle est, ou *quiqu'*elle soit riche, elle n'en est pas plus charitable.

Though she be young and handsome, she is virtuous.

Toute jeune & belle qu'elle est, ou *quoiqu'*elle soit jeune & belle, elle a de la vertu.

Though these ladies be young, they are malicious and witty.

Toutes jeunes que sont ces demoiselles, ou *quoique* ces demoiselles soient jeunes, elles ont de la malice & de l'esprit.

Though the rich be covetous, they spend money to gratify their passions.

Tout avarés que sont les riches, ou *quoique* les riches soient avarés, ils dépensent de l'argent pour satisfaire leurs passions.

She was quite frightened.

Elle fut tout épouvantée.

She is intirely retired.

Elle est toute retirée.

Those ladies are quite surprised.

Ces dames sont tout étonnées, ou toutes surprises.

You look quite sick.

Vous paroissez tout malade, *for the masculine* : toute malade, *for the feminine*.

Your sister is quite young.

Votre sœur est toute jeune.

His sister is quite lovely.

Sa sœur est tout aimable.

I saw nothing more extraordinary.

Je n'ai rien vu de plus extraordinaire.

He applies himself to nothing.

Il ne s'applique à rien.

Nothing is more surprising

Rien n'est plus surprenant.

I do not suspect you of any thing.

Je ne vous soupçonne de rien.

Is there any thing more wonderful?

Y a-t-il rien de plus admirable?

I doubt whether any thing is more useful.

Je doute que rien soit plus utile.

Many are not of your opinion.

Plusieurs ne sont pas de votre opinion.

Many are of this opinion.

Plusieurs sont de ce sentiment.

It is the lot of many.

C'est le partage de plusieurs.

It is the vice of many.

C'est le défaut de plusieurs.

She told it to many.

Elle l'a dit à plusieurs.

Have you read the book ? will
you have *another* ?

If you do not like that pen,
I will give you *another*.

Another would be more grate-
ful.

Another would have married
him.

Another would have been de-
ceived.

I gave it to *another*.

I know *neither* of *them*.

Neither of *them* spoke to him.

Neither of *them* does study.

They hate *one another*.

We know *one another*.

They cheat *one another*.

They mistrust *one another*.

It is uncommon for two au-
thors to speak well of *one*
another.

We trust *one another*.

You wrong *one another*.

Let us not hurt *one another*.

Each of *them* are good.

Both are bad.

Both shall be punished.

Each of *them* shall be re-
warded.

I do not care for *either*.

She complains of *both*.

Avez-vous lu le livre ? en
voulez-vous *un autre* ?

Si vous n'aimez pas cette
plume, je vous en donne-
rai *une autre*.

Un autre seroit plus recon-
noissant.

Un autre l'auroit épousé.

Un autre auroit été trompé.

Je l'ai donné à *un autre*.

Je ne connois *ni l'un ni l'autre*.

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne lui a
parlé, ou, ils ne lui ont
parlé *ni l'un ni l'autre*.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'étudie;
ou, ils n'étudient *ni l'un*
ni l'autre.

Ils se haïssent *l'un l'autre*.

Nous nous connoissons *l'un*
l'autre.

Ils se trompent *l'un l'autre*.

Ils se méfient *l'un de l'autre*.

Il est rare à deux auteurs de
dire du bien *l'un de l'autre*.

Nous nous fions *l'un à l'autre*.

Vous vous faites du tort *l'un*
à l'autre.

Ne nous nuisons pas *l'un à*
l'autre.

L'un & l'autre sont bons.

L'un & l'autre sont mauvais.

Ils seront punis *l'un & l'autre*.

Ils seront récompensés *l'un*
& l'autre.

Je ne me soucie ni de *l'un* ni
de *l'autre*.

Elle se plaint de *l'un & de*
l'autre. He

He has been cheated by *both*. Il a été trompé de l'un & de l'autre.

I trust to *both*.

Je me fie à l'un & à l'autre.

Give to *both*.

Donnez à l'un & à l'autre.

She speaks to *both*.

Elle parle à l'un & l'autre.

Though you pretend to be ever so bold.

Quelque hardi que vous affectiez d'être.

Though he be ever so rich, he is very covetous.

Quelque riche qu'il soit, il est fort avare.

Whatever happy talents a man may have, he ought to cultivate them.

Quelques heureux talens qu'un homme puisse avoir, il faut qu'il les cultive.

Let me be ever so far from you, I will not forget you.

Quelque éloigné que je sois de vous, je ne vous oublierai pas.

However rich you saw them, they are now very poor.

Quelque riches que vous les ayez vus, ils sont à présent fort pauvres.

How cunning soever they appear, they are sometimes deceived.

Quelque rusés qu'ils paroissent, ils sont quelquefois trompés.

Though they pretend to ever so much honesty, they sometimes cheat.

Quelques honnêtes qu'ils prétendent être, ils trompent quelquefois.

What friends soever he may have, he will never succeed.

Quelques amis qu'il ait, il ne réussira jamais.

Whatever small rewards you may give him, he will be grateful for them.

Quelques petites récompenses, que vous lui donniez, il en sera reconnoissant.

Whatever riches you have.

Quelques richesses que vous ayez.

Send me some news, whatever it may be.

Envoyez-moi des nouvelles quelles qu'elles soient.

He shall be punished, whosoever he may be.

Il sera puni quel qu'il soit.

Whoever you be, they will render you justice.

Quel que vous soyez, on vous rendra justice.

Whatever his sister be, I will never marry her.

Quelle que soit sa sœur, je ne l'épouserai jamais.

Whatever her sisters be, they are not so lovely as she is.

Quelles que soient ses sœurs, elles ne sont pas si aimables qu'elle.

222 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>Whatever</i> these conditions be, I will never submit to them.	<i>Quelles</i> que soient ces conditions, je ne m'y soumettrai jamais.
<i>Whatever</i> these goods are, send them to me.	<i>Quelles</i> que soient ces marchandises, envoyez-les-moi.
Do not rely upon the promises of men, <i>whatever</i> they be.	Ne vous fiez pas aux promesses des hommes, <i>quelles</i> qu'elles soient.
He will not hear of any accommodation, <i>whatever</i> it may be.	Il ne veut pas entendre parler d'aucun accommodement <i>quel</i> qu'il puisse être.
I do not care for him, <i>who</i> soever he be.	Je ne me soucie pas de lui, <i>quel</i> qu'il soit.
Is <i>any body</i> come?	<i>Quelqu'un</i> est-il venu?
<i>Somebody</i> told it you.	<i>Quelqu'un</i> vous l'a dit.
Did <i>any body</i> speak to him, or to her?	<i>Quelqu'un</i> lui a-t-il parlé?
Did you see <i>any body</i> there?	Y avez-vous vu <i>quelqu'un</i> ?
She knows it from <i>somebody</i> .	Elle le sait de <i>quelqu'un</i> .
He took it from <i>somebody</i> .	Il l'a pris de <i>quelqu'un</i> .
She mistrusts <i>somebody</i> .	Elle se méfie de <i>quelqu'un</i> .
Give this to <i>somebody</i> .	Donnez cela à <i>quelqu'un</i> .
They spoke to <i>somebody</i> .	Ils ont parlé à <i>quelqu'un</i> .
He wrote to <i>somebody</i> .	Il a écrit à <i>quelqu'un</i> .
<i>Some</i> persons say.	<i>Quelques-uns</i> disent.
<i>Some</i> believe.	<i>Quelques-uns</i> croient.
I have this news from <i>some</i> persons.	Je tiens cette nouvelle de <i>quelques</i> personnes.
I told this news to <i>some</i> persons.	J'ai dit cette nouvelle à <i>quelques</i> personnes.
<i>Some</i> of the prisoners made their escape.	<i>Quelques-uns</i> des prisonniers se sont évadés.
I know it from <i>some</i> of those who were present.	Je le sais de <i>quelques-uns</i> de ceux qui étoient présents.
He has given bread to <i>some</i> of those who were in need of it.	Il a donné du pain à <i>quelques-uns</i> de ceux qui en avoient besoin.
<i>Some</i> of the robbers have been taken.	<i>Quelques-uns</i> des voleurs ont été pris.
<i>Some</i> of them will be hanged.	<i>Quelques-uns</i> d'eux seront pendus.
Do you know <i>some</i> of those ladies?	Connoissez-vous <i>quelques-unes</i> de ces dames?

I know.

I know <i>some</i> of them.	J'en connois <i>quelques-unes</i> .
Will you have <i>some</i> of these oranges ?	Voulez-vous <i>quelques-unes</i> de ces oranges ?
Give me <i>some</i> .	Donnez m'en <i>quelques-unes</i> .
Buy <i>some</i> of these apples.	Achetez <i>quelques-unes</i> de ces pommes.
Will you taste <i>some</i> of them ?	En voulez-vous goûter <i>quelques-unes</i> ?
<i>Whatever</i> may happen, he is always the same.	<i>Quoi</i> qu'il puisse arriver, il est toujours le même.
<i>Whatever</i> you say, it shall be so.	<i>Quoi</i> que vous disiez, il en sera ainsi.
<i>Whatever</i> he may undertake, he will never succeed.	<i>Quoi</i> qu'il puisse entreprendre, il ne réussira jamais.
I know <i>whatever</i> he is able to do.	Je sais <i>tout</i> ce qu'il peut faire.
Do <i>whatever</i> you please.	Faites <i>tout</i> ce que vous voudrez.
I do not care for <i>whatever</i> he may do.	Je ne me soucie pas de <i>tout</i> ce qu'il peut faire.
Take <i>whatever</i> you like best.	Prenez de <i>tout</i> ce que vous aimez le mieux.
I am ready for <i>whatever</i> you please.	Je suis prêt à <i>tout</i> ce que vous voudrez.
She applies herself to <i>every thing</i> that may be useful to her.	Elle s'applique à <i>tout</i> ce qui peut lui être utile.
<i>Any thing</i> he writes to you, tell it me.	<i>Quoi</i> que ce soit qu'il vous écrive, dites-le-moi.
Do not talk of <i>any thing</i> .	Ne parlez de <i>quoi</i> que ce soit.
He succeeds in <i>whatever</i> he applies himself to.	Il réussit à <i>quoi</i> que ce soit qu'il s'applique.
They will tell him the same thing to <i>whomsoever</i> he may address himself.	On lui dira la même chose, à <i>qui</i> que ce soit qu'il s'adresse.
He does not care for <i>any person</i> <i>whatsoever</i> .	Il ne se soucie de <i>qui</i> que ce soit.
I saw <i>nobody</i> at all.	Je n'ai vu <i>qui</i> que ce soit.
He knows <i>nobody</i> at all.	Il ne connoît <i>qui</i> que ce soit.
I spoke to <i>nobody</i> <i>whatever</i> .	Je n'ai parlé à <i>qui</i> que ce soit.
Do not talk to <i>any body</i> .	Ne parlez à <i>qui</i> que ce soit.
<i>Whosoever</i> he be who speaks to you, give him an answer.	<i>Qui</i> que ce soit qui vous parle, répondez-lui.

224 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>Whosoever he be, he is in the</i>	<i>Qui que ce soit, il a tort.</i>
wrong.	
<i>Whosoever speaks English</i>	<i>Quiconque parlera Anglois,</i>
shall be fined.	sera mis à l'amende.
<i>Whosoever knows not his les-</i>	<i>Quiconque ne saura pas sa le-</i>
son, shall be marked.	çon, sera marqué.
<i>The same author has made</i>	<i>Le même auteur a fait d'autres</i>
other books.	livres.
<i>I will speak to him, or to her,</i>	<i>Je lui parlerai moi-même.</i>
<i>myself.</i>	
<i>Write your letter yourself.</i>	<i>Ecrivez votre lettre vous-</i>
	<i>même.</i>
<i>They wrong themselves.</i>	<i>Ils se font tort à eux-mêmes.</i>
<i>People say, people talk, people</i>	<i>On dit ; on parle, on croit, on</i>
believe, people fancy, peo-	s' imagine, on ne fait pas,
ple do not know, &c.	&c.
<i>May any one know ?</i>	<i>Peut-on savoir ?</i>
<i>Has any one spoken to you ?</i>	<i>Vous a-t-on parlé ?</i>
<i>May any one ask you ?</i>	<i>Peut-on vous demander ?</i>
<i>Has any one seen you ?</i>	<i>Vous a-t-on vu ?</i>
<i>May one go along this street ?</i>	<i>Peut-on passer par cette rue ?</i>
<i>May one see the queen's ap-</i>	<i>Peut-on voir les appartemens</i>
partments ?	de la reine ?
<i>It is said, it is reported, it is</i>	<i>On dit, on rapporte, on assure,</i>
assured, it is doubted, it	on doute, on a proposé, on
has been proposed, it has	a résolu, &c.
been resolved, &c.	
<i>The letters have not yet been</i>	<i>On n'a pas encore reçu les</i>
received.	lettres.
<i>Great preparations have been</i>	<i>On a fait de grands prépara-</i>
made for the reception	tifs pour la réception de . .
of. . .	
<i>A bill has passed in parlia-</i>	<i>On a passé un bil dans le par-</i>
ment.	lement.
<i>Great rejoicings have been</i>	<i>On a fait de grandes réjouif-</i>
made at St. James's on the	sances à St. James le jour
queen's birth-day.	de la naissance de la reine.
<i>The street has been widened.</i>	<i>On a élargi la rue.</i>
<i>Great news has been received</i>	<i>On a reçu de grandes nou-</i>
by the last mail.	velles par le dernier ordi-
	naire.
<i>A courier has been dispatch-</i>	<i>On a dépêché un courrier à</i>
ed to the French court.	la cour de France.

<p><i>It is believed that war will be declared against France.</i></p> <p><i>It was said so, but contrary news has been received this week.</i></p>	<p><i>On croit, qu'on déclarera la guerre à la France.</i></p> <p><i>On le disoit, mais on a reçu des nouvelles contraires cette semaine-ci.</i></p>
---	--

SECTION VII.

The Supplying Pronouns le, en, y,

1. *It*, or *so*, are sometimes rendered by *le*; as, give it to me, *donnez-le-moi*; I will give it to you, *je vous le donnerai*. Of, from, with, by, about, &c. him, her, it, them, some, any, thence, from thence, &c. by *en*; and to it, there, therein, in it, in them, about it, or them, &c. by *y*; as, do not speak of it to me, *ne m'en parlez pas*; I will not be against it, *je ne m'y opposerai pas*. These pronouns are called supplying, because they stand not only for one preceding word, but sometimes for whole sentences, and are chiefly used instead of the pronouns *lui, elle, eux, elles*.

2. *Le* and *en* are applied either to persons or things, and *y* to things only; except in a very few instances and in an answer to a question; as, do you think of me? Yes, I do. *Pensez-vous à moi? Oui, j'y pense*.

3. *Le*, put after *ce*, when we speak of things, is declinable; as, are these your horses? Yes, they are, *sont-ce là vos chevaux? Oui, ce les sont*. I say when we speak of things; because, when we speak of persons, we make use of the personal pronouns; as, are these your brothers? Yes, they are; *sont-ce là vos frères? Oui ce sont eux*, and not, *ce les sont*.

4. It is the opinion of several that *le* is declinable after an adjective, in the feminine singular only, in the following and such-like expressions spoken by women; I was frightened, and am so still; *je fus effrayée, & je la suis encore*: of others, that it would be more proper to say, *& je le suis encore*. *Vangelas*, the Abbé *Girard*, *Restaut*, the FRENCH ACADEMY, &c. are for the last: so that there can be no doubt.

5. An author, in a book not long since printed, saying that where *le* supplies the place of a substantive, it agrees with

226 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

with it in gender and number, mistakes when he gives this instance, which is quite out of his rule; could you set in the place of that physician? Yes, I could, *pourriez vous remplir la place de ce médecin? Oui, je le pourrais.* Every one may see, at the first view, that *le* has no relation to *médecin* taken separately, but to *place*, or rather to the whole sentence, *oui je la pourrais remplir*, meaning the place, or *oui je pourrais remplir la place de ce médecin.*

The best way in such cases would be to leave out both the verb and the supplying pronoun, and give the following answer in French; as, are you milliners, ladies? Yes, we are, *êtes vous coiffeuses, mesdemoiselles? Oui, monsieur, oui, madame, oui, mademoiselle*, according to the quality of the person you speak to, instead of saying, *oui nous les sommes.* This may be done likewise in English by answering, yes, sir, yes, madam. But some grammarians, like Don Quixote, delight in fighting against wind-mills.

Supplying Pronouns exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

Will you give <i>it</i> him, or her?	<i>Le lui donnerez-vous?</i>
Have you given <i>it</i> him, or her?	<i>Le lui avez-vous donné?</i>
I have promised <i>it</i> him, or her.	<i>Je le lui ai promis.</i>
I have not promised <i>it</i> him, or her.	<i>Je ne le lui ai pas promis.</i>
Have you sent <i>it</i> to them?	<i>Le leur avez-vous envoyé?</i>
I have not sent <i>it</i> to them.	<i>Je ne le leur ai pas envoyé.</i>
Have you told <i>it</i> him, or her?	<i>Le lui avez-vous dit?</i>
I have not told <i>it</i> him, or her.	<i>Je ne le lui ai pas dit.</i>
Do not tell <i>it</i> him, or her.	<i>Ne le lui dites pas.</i>
Do you know <i>it</i> ?	<i>Le savez-vous?</i>
She does not know <i>it</i> .	<i>Elle ne le sait pas.</i>
I do not know <i>it</i> .	<i>Je ne le sais pas.</i>
He told me something, will you know <i>it</i> ?	<i>Il m'a dit quelque chose, le voulez-vous savoir?</i>
Ask him, I will not tell <i>it</i> you.	<i>Demandez-le lui, je ne veux pas vous le dire.</i>
Why will you not tell <i>it</i> me?	<i>Pourquoi ne voulez-vous pas me le dire?</i>
Because he forbid me.	<i>Parce qu'il me l'a défendu.</i>

Tell

Tell <i>it</i> me.	Dites-le-moi.
I will never tell <i>it</i> you.	Je ne vous <i>le</i> dirai jamais.
Do you believe <i>it</i> ?	<i>Le</i> croyez-vous ?
I do not believe <i>it</i> .	Je ne <i>le</i> crois pas.
She believes <i>it</i> .	Elle <i>le</i> croit.
Give me <i>some</i> .	Donnez-m' <i>en</i> .
Do not give <i>any</i> to him, or her.	Ne lui <i>en</i> donnez pas.
Will you give <i>any</i> to him, or to her ?	Lui <i>en</i> donnerez-vous ?
Do not speak <i>of it</i> to him, or to her.	Ne lui <i>en</i> parlez pas.
Did you talk <i>of it</i> to him, or to her ?	Lui <i>en</i> avez-vous parlé ?
I did not say a word <i>of it</i> .	Je n' <i>en</i> ai pas dit un mot.
Will you have <i>any</i> ?	<i>En</i> voulez-vous ?
Take <i>some</i> .	Prenez- <i>en</i> .
Give <i>some</i> to him, or to her.	Donnez-lui- <i>en</i> .
Will you be satisfied <i>with it</i> ?	<i>En</i> serez-vous content ?
I will not meddle <i>with it</i> .	Je ne veux pas m' <i>en</i> mêler.
I am sorry <i>for it</i> .	J' <i>en</i> suis fâché.
I am very glad <i>of it</i> .	J' <i>en</i> suis bien aise.
She wonders <i>at it</i> .	Elle s' <i>en</i> étonne.
She complains <i>of it</i> .	Elle s' <i>en</i> plaint.
He is overjoyed <i>at it</i> .	Il s' <i>en</i> réjouit.
I will not hear any more <i>about it</i> .	Je n' <i>en</i> veux plus entendre parler.
What do you say <i>to it</i> ?	Qu' <i>en</i> dites-vous ?
I wonder <i>at it</i> .	J' <i>en</i> suis surpris.
She shall repent <i>it</i> .	Elle s' <i>en</i> repentira.
I am sure <i>of it</i> .	J' <i>en</i> suis sûr.
Have you money ? Yes, I have <i>some</i> .	Avez-vous de l'argent ? Oui, j' <i>en</i> ai.
She has <i>none</i> .	Elle n' <i>en</i> a point.
Will you join <i>with us</i> ?	<i>En</i> voulez-vous être ?
I come <i>from thence</i> .	J' <i>en</i> viens.
Do you know any thing <i>of it</i> ?	<i>En</i> savez-vous quelque chose ?
I know nothing <i>of it</i> .	Je n' <i>en</i> fais rien.
He shall know nothing <i>of it</i> .	Il n' <i>en</i> saura rien.
Have you <i>any</i> ?	<i>En</i> avez-vous ?
Have you been <i>there</i> ?	Y avez-vous été ?
Have you thought <i>of it</i> ?	Y avez-vous songé ?

228 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I have not yet been <i>there</i> .	Je n'y ai pas encore été.
She was forced <i>to it</i> .	Elle y a été forcée.
Has he consented <i>to it</i> ?	Y a-t-il consenti ?
I will never consent <i>to it</i> .	Je n'y consentirai jamais.
They have been against <i>it</i> .	Ils s'y sont opposés.
Do not think <i>of it</i> any more.	N'y pensez plus.
The government have wisely provided <i>for it</i> .	Le gouvernement y a sagement pourvu.
The king will not be against <i>it</i> .	Le roi ne s'y opposera pas.
I am provided <i>for it</i> .	J'y suis préparé.
Will you go <i>thither</i> ?	Y voulez-vous aller ?
You do not look <i>to it</i> ?	Vous n'y prenez pas garde.
Mind <i>it</i> .	Prenez y garde.
I will mind <i>it</i> .	J'y prendrai garde.
I have added many new observations <i>to it</i> .	J'y ai ajouté plusieurs nouvelles remarques.
You have hit the nail on the head.	Vous y êtes.
You have not hit <i>it</i> right.	Vous n'y êtes pas.
You go the wrong way to work.	Vous vous y prenez mal.
Are these your books ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là vos livres ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Are those your pens ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là vos plumes ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Are those your father's horses ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là les chevaux de votre père ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Are these your favours ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là vos amitiés ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Are these your sentiments ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là vos sentimens ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Are these your reasons ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là vos raisons ? Oui, ce <i>les</i> sont.
Is that your penknife ? Yes, <i>it is</i> .	Est-ce là votre canif ? Oui, ce <i>l'est</i> .
Are they your sisters ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce vos sœurs ? Oui, ce <i>sont elles</i> .
Are these his brothers ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là ses frères ? Oui, ce <i>sont eux</i> .
Are these her cousins ? Yes, <i>they are</i> .	Sont-ce là ses cousines ? Oui, ce <i>sont elles</i> .

Are

Are these your brothers? Yes, <i>they</i> are.	Sont-ce là vos frères? Oui, ce sont <i>eux</i> .
Is it your cousin? Yes, it is.	Est-ce votre cousin? Oui, c'est <i>lui</i> .
I have been sick, and I am <i>so</i> still.	J'ai été malade, & je <i>le</i> suis encore.
Was there ever a girl more happy than I am?	Fut-il jamais une fille plus heureuse que je <i>le</i> suis?
Is there a girl more dutiful than I am?	Y a-t-il une fille plus obéissante que je <i>le</i> suis?

CHAP. IV.

Rules and Observations upon the Degrees of Comparison.

1. GRAMMARIANS seem to be in a mistake about the degrees of comparison, in assigning the positive for a degree of comparison: For comparison implies a relation to another thing, which the comparison is made with; whereas the positive is the adjective in it's natural state, without a relation to another thing; as, when I say, this house is pretty, *cette maison est belle*, there is indeed no comparison at all: however, if by degrees of comparison we mean different manners of expressing the quality of something, there are three; the positive, the comparative, and the superlative.

2. When the adjective is compared in an equal, higher, or less degree, it is called comparative, which comparison is made in French by placing before it *plus*, more; *moins*, less; *si*, so; *aussi*, as; &c.

3. *Plus* and *moins* are commonly followed by the particle *que*, and, when a verb comes after it, that verb has the negative particle *ne* before it; as, he was richer than was believed, *il étoit plus riche qu'en ne croyoit*.

Except, 1st, when *que* signifies as; 2dly, when the following verb is in the infinitive mood or preceded by a conjunction, *ne* must be left out; as, he is more undisturbed in the country than to live in town, *il est plus tranquille à la campagne, que de vivre à la ville*, or *que s'il vivoit à la ville*.

The last exception is very nice in practice; many grammarians leave it out, and even one of them gives false notions

230 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

ions contrary to theory and practice. He says in a N. E.
 “ When *que* signifies *than* in the comparative degree, the
 “ verb which follows takes the negative *ne* before it in
 “ French.”

4. *Si*, *so*; *tant*, so much, as much, as many, so many, comparatively used, are always used negatively; as, you are not so rich as he, *vous n'êtes pas si riche que lui*; he has not as many friends as you, *il n'a pas tant d'amis que vous*. In other cases *aussi*, or *autant*, are to be used. Except in an interrogation, where *si* and *tant* may be used, either with, or without a negation, according to the interrogation's being affirmative or negative.

5. When *plus*, *moins*, *autant*, *tant*, are immediately followed by a substantive, that substantive must be preceded by the preposition *de*; as, more money, *plus d'argent*; less credit, *moins de crédit*; so much pain, *autant de peine*; so many rings, *tant de bagues*.

6. When the verbs *avoir*, or *être*, are before *plus*, *moins*, *autant*, &c. and the same verbs follow *que*, the second verb *avoir* or *être*, is more properly left out in the French, though expressed in the English; and we are contented with *que*, and the pronoun only, or any other noun; as, you have more money than I, or we have, *vous avez plus d'argent que moi, or nous*; and not *vous avez plus d'argent que je n'en ai, or que nous n'en avons*; Miss A is as sensible as she is, *Mademoiselle A est aussi sensée qu'elle*, and not *qu'elle est*. Except when *que* is followed by a conjunction, or by the same verb in the infinitive mood, with a government after it, or a preposition; as, you have more pleasure than if you had many riches, *vous avez plus de plaisir, que si vous aviez beaucoup de richesses*, or *que d'avoir beaucoup de richesses*; you are more happy than to be married, *vous êtes plus heureux que si vous étiez marié, or que d'être marié*.

7. When *plus*, or *moins*, are adverbs of quantity, or meet with a noun of number, the word *than*, which immediately follows *more*, or *less*, is expressed by the preposition *de*; as, he has more than ten guineas, *il a plus de dix guinées*.

8. When the quality is raised to the highest degree, or depressed to the lowest, it is called superlative.

9. The definite articles *le, la, &c.* are put before *plus, moins, meilleur, pire, &c.* in the superlative degree, and, when the superlative is followed by the noun with which the comparison is made, this noun must be in the second case; as, he is the best of my friends, *il est le meilleur de mes amis.*

10. When the superlative is followed by a verb, that verb must be in the subjunctive mood, preceded by *qui, dont, or que*; as, the most happy woman alive, *la femme la plus heureuse qui soit*; the most happy man that I know, *l'homme le plus heureux que je connoisse.*

11. Sometimes a quality is mentioned in the highest degree without comparison, and this is done in French by placing adverbs of exaggeration before it; as, very rich, *très riche*; very polite, *fort poli*; infinitely obliged, *infinitement obligé.*

E X C E P T I O N S.

The following adjectives form their degrees of comparison in this manner :

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
M. bon, F. bonne,	$\{ \text{good.} \}$ meilleur, meilleure,	$\{ \text{the best.} \}$ le meilleur, la meilleure,
M. méchant, F. méchante,	$\{ \text{bad.} \}$ pire, <i>or</i> plus méchant, plus méchante,	$\{ \text{the worst.} \}$ le pire, la pire, <i>or</i> la plus méchant, la plus méchante,
M. mauvais, F. mauvaise.	pire, <i>or</i> plus mauvais, plus mauvaise.	le pire, la pire, <i>or</i> la plus mauvais, la plus mauvaise,
M. petit, F. petite,	$\{ \text{little.} \}$ moindre, <i>or</i> plus petit, plus petite,	le plus petit, $\{ \text{the least.} \}$ le moindre, la moindre, <i>or</i> la plus petite,

N.B. Adverbs form their degrees of comparison in the same manner as adjectives, except these following :

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bien, <i>well.</i> mal, <i>ill.</i> peu, <i>little, few.</i>	mieux, <i>better.</i> pis, <i>or</i> plus mal, <i>worse.</i> moins, <i>less, fewer.</i>	le mieux, <i>the best.</i> le pis, <i>or</i> le plus mal, <i>the worst.</i> le moins, <i>the least.</i>

The Degrees of Comparison exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

London is <i>more</i> populous than Paris.	Londres est <i>plus</i> peuplé que Paris.
France is larger than England, Ireland, and Scotland.	La France est <i>plus</i> étendue que l'Angleterre, l'Irlande, & l'Ecosse.
The streets of London are wider than those of Paris.	Les rues de Londres sont <i>plus</i> larges que celles de Paris.
My snuff-box is prettier than yours.	Ma tabatière est <i>plus</i> belle que la vôtre.
My books are dearer than yours.	Mes livres sont <i>plus</i> chers que les vôtres.
He is idler than his brother.	Il est <i>plus</i> paresseux que son frère.
Your father is richer than his.	Votre père est <i>plus</i> riche que le sien.
His house is greater than yours.	Sa maison est <i>plus</i> grande que la vôtre.
They are <i>more</i> forward than I thought.	Ils sont <i>plus</i> avancés que je ne croyois.
He gave me <i>more</i> money than I asked for.	Il m'a donné <i>plus</i> d'argent que je ne demandois.
You have met there with <i>more</i> obstacles than you thought.	Vous y avez trouvé <i>plus</i> d'obstacles que vous ne pensiez.
I have found it easier than I foresaw.	J'y ai trouvé <i>plus</i> de facilité que je ne prévoyois.
They have <i>more</i> friends than you believe.	Ils ont <i>plus</i> d'amis que vous ne croyez.
He has lost <i>more</i> than he has won.	Il a perdu <i>plus</i> qu'il n'a gagné.
You have asked for <i>less</i> than was your due.	Vous avez demandé <i>moins</i> qu'il ne vous étoit dû.
She has worked <i>more</i> than her task.	Elle a fait <i>plus</i> d'ouvrage qu'on ne lui avoit prescrit.
I did not ask for <i>more</i> than was my due.	Je n'ai pas demandé <i>plus</i> qu'il ne m'étoit dû.
You have not undertaken <i>more</i> than you was able to perform.	Vous n'avez pas entrepris <i>plus</i> que vous ne pouviez exécuter.

234 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

She is happier *than if she was* married. Elle est plus heureuse *que* d'être mariée, où *que si* elle étoit mariée.

He is *more* contented with her, *than if* he had all the gold of Peru. Il est *plus* content avec elle *que s'il* avoit tout l'or du Pérou.

I am quieter in my room *than if* I was in company. Je suis *plus* tranquille dans ma chambre *que si* j'étois en compagnie.

You look *more* sickly *than whilst* you was in the country. Vous paroissez *plus* malade *que lorsque* vous étiez à la campagne.

They are *less* troubled in the country, *than if* they were in town. Ils sont *moins* troublés à la campagne, *que s'ils* étoient à la ville.

He is not *so* rich as it is said. Il n'est pas *si* riche qu'on le dit.

She is not *so* old as you believe. Elle n'est pas *si* vieille que vous croyez.

I am not *so* idle as my brother. Je ne suis pas *si* paresseux que mon frère.

We are not *so* much surprised as you think. Nous ne sommes pas *si* surpris que vous pensez.

You are not *so* brave as you pretend to be. Vous n'êtes pas *si* braves que vous dites.

They are not *so* learned as they would make us believe. Ils ne sont pas *si* savans qu'ils voudroient nous faire accroire.

They are not *so* proud as to despise your praises. Elles ne sont pas *si* fières que de mépriser vos louanges.

She is not *so* vain as to listen to your flatteries. Elle n'est pas *si* vaine que d'écouter vos flatteries.

I have not won *so much* as I thought. Je n'ai pas *tant* gagné que je pensois.

He has not lost *so much* as you. Il n'a pas *tant* perdu que vous.

She has not *so much* money as you think. Elle n'a pas *tant* d'argent que vous pensez.

We have not *so much* self-love as to prefer ourselves to you. Nous n'avons pas *tant* d'amour propre, que de nous préférer à vous.

You have not *so much* business, as to hinder you. Vous n'avez pas *tant* d'occupations, que vous ne puissiez

from applying yourself to the study of the French language.	issiez vous appliquer à l'étude de la langue Française.
They have not <i>so much</i> courage as they pretend to.	Ils n'ont pas tant de courage qu'ils se flattent d'en avoir.
They have not <i>so much</i> pleasure in the country as in town.	Elles n'ont pas tant de plaisir à la campagne qu'à la ville.
I am <i>as much</i> surprised as you.	Je suis aussi surpris que vous.
He is <i>as</i> learned as his elder brother.	Il est aussi savant que son frère aîné.
She is <i>as</i> lovely as her sister.	Elle est aussi aimable que sa sœur.
We are <i>as</i> quiet as you.	Nous sommes aussi tranquilles que vous.
You are <i>as</i> brisk as he.	Vous êtes aussi vif que lui.
They are <i>as</i> rich as your father.	Il sont aussi riches que votre père.
They are <i>as</i> witty as his sisters.	Elles sont aussi spirituelles que ses sœurs.
I have <i>as many</i> friends as you.	J'ai autant d'amis que vous.
He is <i>as</i> covetous as ever.	Il a autant d'avarice que jamais.
She has <i>as much</i> beauty as formerly.	Elle a autant de beauté qu'autrefois.
We have <i>as much</i> trouble as you.	Nous avons autant de peine que vous.
You have <i>as many</i> books as I have.	Vous avez autant de livres que moi.
They have <i>as much</i> honour as your countrymen.	Ils ont autant d'honneur que vos compatriotes.
They have <i>as much</i> love for the sciences as their brothers.	Elles ont autant d'amour pour les sciences que leurs frères.
Your suit is <i>more</i> worn out than mine.	Votre habit est plus usé que le mien.
Her apron is cleaner than her sister's.	Son tablier est plus blanc que celui de sa sœur.
You are <i>more</i> learned than I am.	Vous êtes plus savant que moi.

• And not *que vous êtes*, &c. See rule 3.

He

236 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

He is older than you.

She is *more* lovely than he.

You are older than she is.

My brother has *more* books than you.

We have *more* pleasure than they.

She has *more* lovers than her sister.

I have lost *more* than ten guineas.

She has brought him for her portion *more* than ten thousand pounds.

She has *less* vivacity than her sister.

We have *less* trouble than you.

They have spent *more* than a thousand pounds a year.

He owes *more* than four thousand pounds.

He has written *more* than ten letters to-day.

I am *more* than half persuaded of it.

My brother is *more* than twenty years old.

I am no *more* than twelve years old.

I have *more* friendship for him than he has for me.

She has *more* money than I have.

I have not *more* cunning than they.

I take *more* pains than you.

You have *less* pride than he.

He is *the* most skilful physician in the whole city.

Il est *plus* âgé que vous.

Elle est *plus* aimable que lui.

Vous êtes *plus* vieux qu'elle.

Mon frère a *plus* de livres que vous.

Nous avons *plus* de plaisir qu'eux.

Elle a *plus* d'amans que sa sœur.

J'ai perdu *plus* de dix guinees.

Elle lui a apporté en mariage *plus* de dix mille livres sterling.

Elle a *moins* de vivacité que sa sœur.

Nous avons *moins* de peine que vous.

Ils ont dépensé *plus* de mille livres sterling par an.

Il doit *plus* de quatre mille livres sterling.

Il a écrit *plus* de dix lettres aujourd'hui.

J'en suis *plus* d'à moitié persuadé.

Mon frère a *plus* de vingt ans.

Je n'ai pas *plus* de douze ans.

J'ai *plus* d'amitié pour lui qu'il n'en a pour moi.

Elle a *plus* d'argent que moi.

Je n'ai pas *plus* de finesse qu'eux.

Je prends *plus* de peine que vous.

Vous avez *moins* d'orgueil que lui.

C'est *le* plus habile médecin de toute la ville.

He

He is <i>the</i> idlest of them all.	C'est le plus paresseux de tous.
She is <i>the</i> loveliest of them all.	C'est la plus aimable de toutes.
England has given birth to <i>the</i> most skilful philosophers in Europe.	L'Angleterre a donné naissance aux plus habiles philosophes de l'Europe.
She is <i>the</i> most lovely lady I know.	C'est la plus aimable demoiselle que je connoisse.
It is the greatest piece of folly you <i>can</i> ever commit.	C'est la plus grande sottise que vous puissiez jamais faire.
He is the greatest nianny you <i>can</i> see.	C'est l'homme le plus sot que vous puissiez voir.
The French is the smoothest language one <i>can</i> possibly learn.	Le François est la langue la plus douce qu'on puisse apprendre.
I am <i>very</i> glad of it.	J'en suis bien aise.
I am <i>very much</i> concerned at it.	J'en suis très-mortifié.
He is a <i>very</i> polite man.	C'est un homme fort poli.
He is <i>very</i> diligent.	Il est fort diligent.
She is <i>very</i> lovely.	Elle est fort aimable.
I am <i>much</i> indebted to you.	Je vous suis très-redevable.
I am <i>infinitely</i> obliged to you.	Je vous suis infiniment obligé.
His father is <i>very</i> rich.	Son père est fort riche.
We are <i>very much</i> persuaded of it.	Nous en sommes très-persuadés.
I am your <i>most</i> humble servant.	Je suis votre très-humble serviteur.
Your <i>most</i> obedient servant.	Votre très-obéissant serviteur.
He is <i>the best</i> man in the world.	C'est le meilleur homme du monde.
Your pen is <i>better</i> than mine.	Votre plume est meilleurs que la mienne.
French fruit is <i>better</i> than English ones.	Les fruits de France sont meilleurs que ceux d'Angleterre.
It is <i>the best</i> reason you can tell him.	C'est la meilleure raison que vous puissiez lui dire.
They are <i>the best</i> people in the world.	Ce sont les meilleurs gens du monde.

38 A Grammar of the French Tongue.

His exercise is <i>better</i> done than yours.	Son thème est <i>mieux</i> fait que le vôtre.
The <i>least</i> thing makes me catch cold.	La <i>moindre</i> chose m'enrhume.
His writing is very bad; but yours is <i>worse</i> .	Son écriture est fort mauvaise; mais la vôtre est pire.
Let the worst come to the worst.	Au pis aller.
I will do it <i>to the best</i> of my power.	Je le ferai le <i>mieux</i> qu'il me sera possible.
He obliged me <i>the least</i> of any.	Il m'a obligé le <i>moins</i> de tous.
It is <i>the least thing</i> you can do.	C'est le <i>moins</i> que vous puissiez faire.

CHAP. V.

Rules and Observations upon Verbs.

1. **T**HE verb agrees in person and number with its subject or nominative case. All nouns whatever, in grammatical construction, are of the third person; as, the air prepossesses, the behaviour engages; *l'air prévient, les manières engagent.*

Except when an address is made to a person or thing; then the noun (answering to what is called the vocative case in Latin) is of the second person; as, vain promises of men, you have deceived me! *vaines promesses des hommes, vous m'avez trompé!*

2. Two or more nouns in the singular number have verbs agreeing with them in the plural number*; as, the father and mother have consented to it, *le père & la mère y ont consenti.*

* Sometimes, after an enumeration of particulars, the verb follows in the singular number, and is understood as applied to each of the preceding terms; as, supper was delicious; sprightliness, good humour, were spread round the table: *le souper fut délicieux; l'enjouement, la belle humeur se répandit autour de la table. Mar-montel.*

Except

Except when they are joined by the disjunctive conjunction *ou*; as, *ou le père ou la mère y a consenti*; in this last case, when a personal pronoun, with another pronoun or noun, is the nominative case of the verb, the latter is put in the plural; as, either you or I will go, *ou vous ou moi nous irons*.

3. The verb following the conjunction *ni* is put in the plural, when the two nominative cases of the verb do or receive the action in the same time; as, neither mildness nor force can move him, *ni la douceur ni la force ne peuvent l'ébranler*. The singular is used in such-like cases; as, *ni M. le duc ni M. le comte fera ambassadeur*, neither the duke nor the earl will be ambassador; because there was to be only one ambassador.

4. If many nouns or pronouns, singular or plural, are separated by *mais, rien, tout jusqu'à, & même*, &c. then the verb agrees, in number and person, with the noun or pronoun which follows those words; as, not only his estate and health, but also his reputation has suffered by it; *non seulement ses biens & sa santé, mais encore sa réputation en a souffert*.

5. Collective* partitive nouns, as, *infinité, nombre, la plupart, quantité, troupe, multitude* †, &c. followed by a noun in the plural, require the verb in the plural; as, most part of men are of that sentiment, *la plupart des hommes sont de ce sentiment*. When they are used by themselves, they generally govern the verb in the plural, if they have a relation to a noun in the plural which is understood. *La plupart*, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, almost always governs the verb in the plural, whether the noun to which it relates be in the plural, or not.

N. B. All those collective nouns, followed by a noun in the singular, require the verb in the singular.

* They are called *partitive*, and not general, because they denote some parts of a whole. For want of making this distinction *Restaut* seems to contradict himself, for, page 37 of his *French Grammar*, he says that, *forêt, peuple, armée*, are collective nouns, and, page 194, he says, that when the verb has for it's nominative a collective noun in the singular, used by itself or followed by a noun in the plural, the verb is put in the plural, which is false; because *forêt, peuple, armée*, always govern the verb in the singular.

† Except from these, *le quart, la moitié, le tiers*, which always govern the verb in the singular.

6. When

240 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

6. When *ce* is the nominative to the verb *être*, it is generally put in the singular; as, it is we, *c'est nous*; it is you, *c'est vous*; except the verb be followed by a third person in simple tenses; as, it is they, *ce sont eux*. In an interrogative sentence the verb is commonly put in the singular; as, is it they? *est-ce eux?*

7. After the determining pronoun *qui*, the verb is put in the same number and person to which it relates; as, you who speak, *vous qui parlez*; we who study, *nous qui étudions*.

8. The verb is commonly repeated in French, 1st, when the first member of the sentence is affirmative, and the second negative; or the first negative, and the second affirmative; as, one ought to expect every thing of God, and nothing of one's self, *on doit attendre tout de Dieu, & ne rien attendre de soi-même*; our reputation does not depend on the caprice of men, but on the praise-worthy actions which we do, *notre réputation ne dépend pas du caprice des hommes, mais elle dépend des actions louables que nous faisons*.

2dly. When the verb is active in the first member, and passive or reflected in the second; as, lazy men are not esteemed, because they do not deserve it; *on n'estime pas les fainéans, parce qu'ils ne méritent pas d'être estimés*.

N. B. Three things are chiefly to be considered in verbs, viz. the use of tenses, the use of moods, and the government of verbs.

SECTION I.

The Use of Tenses.

1. The present denotes the actual or habitual action or passion of the subject; as, *j'écris*, which answers to the English, I write, I do write, I am writing. This tense is often used in familiar discourse instead of the future, but then it must be joined to some words which denote futurity; as, I shall be with you in a moment, *je suis à vous dans un moment*. It is also used as in all other tongues, particularly in the French, in orations, poetry, or set discourses, instead of some other tenses, to represent an action past in a more lively and emphatical manner.

2. The imperfect is used, when we speak of an action intirely past, reiterated several times; as, when I was at

Paris, I went very often to the opera, *quand j'étois à Paris*, j'allois fort souvent à l'opéra.

2dly, It is used when an action meets with an impediment; as, I had a design to speak to him, but . . . j'avois dessein de lui parler, mais . . .

3dly, When we have been witnesses of some action, and the verb is followed by *quand*, *lorsque*, or a such-like word; as, I was at London when GEORGE III. was crowned, j'étois à Londres quand GEORGE III. fut couronné.

4thly, When we speak of the good or bad qualities of dead creatures, rational or irrational; as, *Lewis XIV.* loved war too much, Louis XIV. aimoit trop la guerre. But when we speak of persons still living, where no time is mentioned, we use the compound of the present; as, the king of Prussia made great conquests, le roi de Prusse a fait de grandes conquêtes.

5thly, When we speak of the age of a dead body, as, *George II.* was 77 years-old when he died, George II. avoit 77 ans quand il mourut.

6thly, When we speak of the inconsistency of somebody; as, this man did alter every day his design, cet homme changeoit tous les jours de dessein.

7thly, It is used after *si* instead of the subjunctive mood, expressed by should, could, would, in English; as, if you would come, si vous vouliez venir; if virtue should reign, si la vertu régnoit; this tense answers to I did write, I used to write, j'écrivois.

3. The preterperfect denotes an action intirely past, in a time also intirely past; as, he was happy last week, last month, last year, il fut heureux la semaine passée, le mois passé, l'année passée. If the time be not intirely past, we make use of the compound of the present tense; as, he was happy this week, this month, this year, il a été heureux cette semaine-ci, ce mois-ci, cette année-ci. The preterperfect is used when we speak of an action done but once, or very seldom, and the time is specified; as, *Edward III.* took Calais the 3d of August 1347, Edouard III. prit Calais le 3 d' Août 1347. If the time be not specified, we may indifferently use the preterperfect, or the compound of the present; as, *Edouard III.* a pris Calais, or prit Calais.

4. We commonly make use of the compound of the present tense before *depuis*, since; as, there has been a

242 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

great battle, since I saw you ; *il y a eu une grande bataille, depuis que je ne vous ai vu.* Sometimes we make use of this tense instead of the compound of the future ; as, will you have done soon ? *avez-vous bientôt fait,* instead of *avez-vous bientôt fait ?* The future is used as in other languages.

The Tenses of Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

The sun <i>shines.</i>	Le soleil <i>luit.</i>
The summer <i>is</i> a very agreeable season.	L'été <i>est</i> une saison fort agréable.
Winter does not <i>please</i> me.	L'hiver ne me <i>plaît</i> pas.
The stars <i>begin</i> to appear.	Les étoiles <i>commencent</i> à paraître.
The days <i>are</i> very much lengthened.	Les jours <i>sont</i> fort allongés.
These meadows <i>are</i> very beautiful.	Ces prairies <i>sont</i> fort belles.
The brother and sister <i>were</i> against it.	Le frère & la sœur <i>s'y sont</i> opposés.
The father and mother <i>have</i> consented to it.	Le père & la mère <i>y ont</i> consenti.
Neither he nor she <i>have</i> spoken to him, or to her.	Ni lui ni elle ne lui <i>ont</i> parlé.
Either your brother, or your sister, <i>has</i> told it you.	Ou votre frère, ou votre sœur, vous l' <i>a</i> dit.
A world of people <i>are</i> duped by one another.	Une infinité de gens <i>sont</i> les dupes les uns des autres.
A great number of ships <i>are</i> ready to sail.	Un grand nombre de vaisseaux <i>sont</i> prêts à faire voile.
Most part of the goods <i>have</i> been sold.	La plupart des marchandises <i>ont</i> été vendues.
<i>It is</i> I who have seen it.	<i>C'est</i> moi qui l' <i>ai</i> vu.
<i>It is</i> we who <i>have</i> hindered him.	<i>C'est</i> nous qui l' <i>avons</i> empêché.
<i>It is</i> you who <i>have</i> made the noise.	<i>C'est</i> vous qui <i>avez</i> fait le bruit.
<i>It is</i> they who <i>have</i> heard it.	<i>Ce sont</i> eux qui l' <i>ont</i> entendu.

When

When I <i>was</i> young, I much loved play.	Quand j' <i>étais</i> jeune, j' <i>aimois</i> beaucoup le jeu.
She <i>had</i> a great many admirers in her time.	Elle <i>avait</i> beaucoup d'admirateurs dans son temps.
I <i>had</i> a mind to write to him.	J' <i>avois</i> envie de lui écrire.
He <i>had</i> a mind to come and see you.	Il <i>avait</i> envie de venir vous voir.
When I was in London, I used to go very often to the play.	Quand j' <i>étais</i> à Londres, j' <i>allois</i> fort souvent à la comédie.
You scarce <i>was</i> gone, when he arrived.	A peine <i>étiez</i> vous parti, qu'il arriva.
I <i>expected</i> nothing else.	Je ne m' <i>attendois</i> à rien autre chose.
He <i>was</i> afraid to interrupt you.	Il <i>avait</i> peur de vous interrompre.
She <i>was</i> not so angry as she seemed to be.	Elle n' <i>était</i> pas si fâchée, qu'elle le <i>paraissait</i> .
I <i>was</i> in the Park, when he spoke to you.	J' <i>étais</i> au Parc, quand il vous parla.
I <i>was</i> in London, when the duke of Cumberland died.	J' <i>étais</i> à Londres, quand le duc de Cumberland mourut.
He <i>seemed</i> much surprised at that news.	Il <i>paraissait</i> fort surpris de cette nouvelle.
Where <i>was</i> you, when the king was crowned? I <i>was</i> in France.	Où <i>étiez</i> -vous, quand le roi fut couronné? J' <i>étais</i> en France.
He <i>was</i> very sprightly in his youth.	Il <i>était</i> fort vif dans sa jeunesse.
He <i>had</i> a great many friends in London.	Il <i>avait</i> beaucoup d'amis à Londres.
He <i>was</i> not persuaded of what he said.	Il n' <i>était</i> pas persuadé de ce qu'il disoit.
My father <i>was</i> seventy years old, when he died.	Mon père <i>avait</i> soixante & dix ans, quand il mourut.
His mother <i>was</i> forty years old when she married again.	Sa mère <i>avait</i> quarante ans, quand elle se remaria.
If you would <i>speak</i> to him, or to her.	Si vous lui <i>parliez</i> .
If you would <i>write</i> to him, or to her.	Si vous lui <i>écriviez</i> .

244 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

<i>If she would be angry at it.</i>	<i>Si elle s'en fâchoit.</i>
<i>If I would go and see him.</i>	<i>Si je l'allois voir.</i>
<i>If he would employ the half of his time.</i>	<i>S'il employoit la moitié de son temps.</i>
<i>If she would apply herself to music.</i>	<i>Si elles s'appliquoit à la musique.</i>
<i>If we could know.</i>	<i>Si nous savions.</i>
<i>If they would apply to something useful.</i>	<i>S'ils s'appliquoient à quelque chose d'utile.</i>
<i>If they would listen to flatteries.</i>	<i>Si elles prêtoient l'oreille aux flatteries.</i>
<i>I have written six letters to-day.</i>	<i>J'ai écrit six lettres aujourd'hui ?</i>
<i>Have you seen him to-day ?</i>	<i>L'avez-vous vu aujourd'hui ?</i>
<i>I did not speak to him, or to her, to-day.</i>	<i>Je ne lui ai pas parlé aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>Where have you been to-day ?</i>	<i>Où avez-vous été aujourd'hui ?</i>
<i>I have been in the Park.</i>	<i>J'ai été au Parc.</i>
<i>I saw him to-day.</i>	<i>Je l'ai vu aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>She went to the play this week.</i>	<i>Elle a été à la comédie cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>He has not studied this week.</i>	<i>Il n'a pas étudié cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>I went into the country this week.</i>	<i>J'ai été à la campagne cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>You have lost your time this week.</i>	<i>Vous avez perdu votre temps cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>What have you done this week ?</i>	<i>Qu'avez-vous fait cette semaine-ci ?</i>
<i>We have spent a great deal of money this week.</i>	<i>Nous avons dépensé beaucoup d'argent cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>You have done more work than I this week.</i>	<i>Vous avez fait plus d'ouvrage que moi cette semaine-ci.</i>
<i>This month has not been very sharp.</i>	<i>Ce mois-ci n'a pas été fort rude.</i>
<i>It was very hot this month.</i>	<i>Il a fait fort chaud ce mois-ci.</i>
<i>It has rained all this month.</i>	<i>Il a plu tout ce mois-ci.</i>
<i>It did not snow this month.</i>	<i>Il n'a pas neigé ce mois-ci.</i>
<i>It was exceeding cold this month.</i>	<i>Il a fait fort froid ce mois-ci.</i>

They

They <i>have had</i> a plentiful harvest this year.	On <i>a eu</i> une moisson abondante cette année-ci.
This year <i>has not been</i> very favourable to me.	Cette année-ci ne m' <i>a pas été</i> fort favorable.
You <i>have been</i> very lucky this year.	Vous <i>avez été</i> fort heureux cette année-ci.
They <i>have lost</i> a great deal of money this year.	Ils <i>ont perdu</i> beaucoup d'argent cette année-ci.
I <i>have been</i> in France this year.	J' <i>ai été</i> en France cette année-ci.
She <i>died</i> this year.	Elle <i>est morte</i> cette année-ci.
He <i>has been</i> very sick this year.	Il <i>a été</i> fort malade cette année-ci.
He <i>is arrived</i> from the West-Indies this year.	Il <i>est revenu</i> des Indes Occidentales cette année-ci.
I <i>wrote</i> six letters yesterday*.	J' <i>écrivis</i> six lettres hier.
Did you <i>see</i> him yesterday?	Le <i>vîtes</i> -vous hier?
I <i>did not speak</i> to him, or to her, yesterday.	Je ne lui <i>parlai</i> pas hier.
Where <i>did</i> you go yesterday?	Où <i>fûtes</i> -vous hier? Je <i>fus</i>
I <i>went</i> to the Park.	au Parc.
I <i>saw</i> him yesterday.	Je le <i>vis</i> hier.
I <i>met</i> with her yesterday in the street.	Je la <i>rencontrai</i> hier dans la rue.
She <i>went</i> to the play last week.	Elle <i>fut</i> à la comédie la semaine passée.
He <i>did not study</i> last week.	Il n' <i>étudia</i> pas la semaine passée.
I <i>went</i> into the country last week.	Je <i>fus</i> à la campagne la semaine passée.
You <i>lost</i> your time last week.	Vous <i>perdîtes</i> votre temps la semaine passée.
What <i>did</i> you do last week?	Que <i>fîtes</i> -vous la semaine passée?
We <i>spent</i> a great deal of money last week.	Nous <i>dépensâmes</i> beaucoup d'argent la semaine passée.
You <i>did</i> more work than I last week.	Vous <i>fîtes</i> plus d'ouvrage que moi la semaine passée.
Last month <i>was</i> not very sharp.	Le mois <i>passé</i> ne <i>fut</i> pas fort rude.

* I repeat, purposely, the foregoing example to render the different uses of the tenses more intelligible to the learner.

246 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

It <i>was</i> exceeding hot last month.	Il <i>fit</i> fort chaud le mois passé.
It <i>rained</i> all last month.	Il <i>plut</i> tout le mois passé.
It <i>did not snow</i> last month.	Il <i>ne neigea</i> pas le mois passé.
It <i>was</i> exceeding cold last month.	Il <i>fit</i> fort froid le mois passé.
They <i>had</i> a plentiful harvest last year.	On <i>eut</i> une moisson abondante l'année passée.
Last year <i>was</i> not very favourable to me.	L'année passée ne me <i>fut</i> pas fort favorable.
You <i>was</i> very lucky last year.	Vous <i>fûtes</i> fort heureux l'année passée.
They <i>lost</i> a great deal of money last year.	Ils <i>perdirent</i> beaucoup d'argent l'année passée.
I <i>went</i> to France last year.	Je <i>fus</i> en France l'année passée.
She <i>died</i> last year.	Elle <i>mourut</i> l'année passée.
He <i>was</i> very sick last year.	Il <i>fut</i> fort malade l'année passée.
He <i>arrived</i> from the West-Indies last year.	Il <i>arriva</i> des Indes Occidentales l'année passée.
How <i>have you done</i> since I had the pleasure of seeing you?	Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que je n'ai eu le plaisir de vous voir.
I <i>have been</i> very sick, since I arrived from the East-Indies.	J'ai <i>été</i> fort malade depuis que je suis arrivé des Indes Orientales.
I <i>have received</i> no tidings of him, since he went away.	Je n'ai pas reçu de ses nouvelles, depuis qu'il est parti.
Have you <i>seen</i> him, since he arrived from France?	L'avez-vous vu depuis qu'il est arrivé de France?
Where <i>have you been</i> since you went out?	Où avez-vous été depuis que vous êtes sorti?

SECTION II.

The Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

1. The subjunctive mood is used after *que*, or *qui*, preceded by a verb denoting doubt, wish, fear, command, prohibition, &c. such are *craindre*, *prier*, *douter*, *souhaiter*, *permettre*, *commander*, *défendre*, &c. as, his father has forbidden

bidden him to go thither; *son père a défendu qu'il y allât*. But, when any of those verbs govern a noun or pronoun, the verb following it is put in the infinitive mood, commonly with the preposition *de* before it; as in the foregoing example, *son père lui a défendu d'y aller*.

2. The subjunctive mood is likewise used after *que* preceded by some impersonal verbs; as, I must go thither, *il faut que j'y aille*. See the 9th observation upon impersonal verbs.

3. There are some impersonal verbs which govern the indicative mood, such are *il paroît*, *il y a apparence*, &c. and those which denote any thing more positively. But, when the same impersonal verbs are used negatively or interrogatively, they govern the subjunctive mood; as, it is true that you are married, *il est vrai que vous êtes marié*; is it true that you are married? *est il vrai que vous soyez marié*?

4. The subjunctive mood is used after verbs preceded by *ne* or *si*, used in a doubtful manner, and followed by *que* or *qui*; as, I do not believe that he has done it, *je ne crois pas qu'il l'ait fait*; if you think I am an honest man, *si vous croyez que je sois bonnête homme*. Some grammarians pretend, that, speaking in the last instance positively, the verb following *que* is put in the indicative mood; as, *si vous croyez, que je suis bonnête homme*.

5. The indicative mood is more properly used in the foregoing case, after the verbs *dire*, *enoncer*, *affirmer*, and such like; as, if you say that he is an honest man, *si vous dites, qu'il est bonnête homme*. Except when the verb *dire* is followed by *que*, and a verb implying a command or prohibition; as, tell him to come, *dites lui qu'il vienne*.

6. The subjunctive mood is used after the verb *il semble*, it seems; as, it seems that you are angry, *il semble que vous soyez fâché*. But, if that verb has before it a pronoun, or a governed word after it, the indicative mood is to be used; as, *il me semble*, or *il semble à la compagnie, que vous êtes fâché*.

7. A verb following another, which is in the subjunctive mood, must also be put in the same mood after *que* or *qui*; as, do you believe that he expects I shall come? *croyez vous qu'il attende qu'il vienne*?

8. The subjunctive mood is used, 1st, after *quoique*, *quel que*, &c. signifying whomsoever, whatsoever, &c.

248 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

as, though you are rich, *quoique vous soyez riche* ; though you be ever so rich, *quelque riche que vous soyez*. See the 19th and 20th observations upon indeterminate pronouns, page 214.

2dly, After *que* used instead of repeating the conjunction *si* in the second member of a sentence ; as, if you study and take pains, *si vous étudiez & que vous preniez de la peine*. See the 5th observation upon conjunctions, page 310.

3dly, After the pronoun *qui* or *que* preceded immediately by a superlative ; as, it is the best news you can tell me, *c'est la meilleure nouvelle que vous puissiez me dire*.

4thly, After *que* used instead of *de ce que*, which governs the indicative mood ; as, I am sorry he is not come, *je suis fâché qu'il ne soit pas venu*, or *de ce qu'il n'est pas venu*.

5thly, After the relative pronoun *qui* or *que* between two verbs, so as to express some desire, need, or necessity ; as, I seek a woman who is handsome, rich, and wise, *je cherche une femme qui soit belle, riche, & sage*.

6thly, We elegantly make use of the compound of the preterperfect of the subjunctive mood after *si*, instead of the compound of the imperfect of the indicative ; as, if I had been informed of it sooner, that would not have happened, *si j'en eusse été averti plutôt, cela ne seroit pas arrivé*.

9. The verb which is in the future in English, is put in the present in French, whenever it ought to be in the subjunctive mood ; as, do you think that he will come ? *croyez-vous qu'il vienne* ? I do not believe that he will write, *je ne crois qu'il écrive*. Except after the verbs *savoir*, *affurer*, &c. where *si*, signifying whether, must be used instead of *que* ; as, do you know if, or whether, he will come ? *savez-vous s'il viendra* ?

10. The verb which, according to the afore said rules, is put in the subjunctive mood, must be put in the present tense of that mood, if it be preceded by a verb in the present or future tense ; as, do you believe that he will guess it ? *croyez-vous qu'il le devine* ? will you believe now that he has written ? *croirez-vous à présent, qu'il ait écrit* ? If the first verb be in any other tense, or in a compounded one, the preterperfect of the subjunctive mood is to be used ; as, what would you have him do ? *Que voudriez-vous qu'il fit*.

This

This tense is likewise used when the verb which is in the subjunctive mood, is followed by the conjunction *si*, and a verb in the imperfect tense, or a conditional expression, though the first verb be in the present; as, do you believe that he could guess it, if you would not tell him? *croyez-vous qu'il le devinât, si vous ne lui disiez pas?* I doubt whether he would have succeeded without the help of his friends, *le doute qu'il eût réussi sans le secours de ses amis*

N. B. As there are some conjunctions which require the subjunctive mood, and are every-where the same, it will not be amiss to lay them down here, as I have met with them in other grammars.

Conjunctions governing the Subjunctive Mood.

Afin que,	pour que,	—	that, to the end that.
avant que,	—	—	before.
sans que.	—	—	without that.
quoique, bien que, encore que	—	—	though.
soit que	—	—	whether and or.
suppose, ou supposons que,	—	—	suppose that.
au, ou en cas que,	—	—	in case that, or if.
à la bonne heure que,	—	—	I grant that.
non que,	}	—	not that.
non pas que,			
ce n'est pas que,	—	—	it is not that.
pourvu que,	—	—	provided.
à moins que,	—	—	unless.
pour peu que,	—	—	if ever so little.
de peur que,	—	—	for fear that.
de crainte que,	—	—	lest.
loin que,	—	—	far.
bien loin que,	—	—	very far from.
malgré que,	—	—	for all that, though.
non obstant que,	—	—	notwithstanding that.
Dieu veuille que,	—	—	God grant.
plaise en plût à Dieu que,	—	—	would to God.
à Dieu ne plaise, que,	—	—	God forbid.
sinon que,	}	—	ave, but.
si ce n'est que,			

250 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

N. B. These two last govern the subjunctive mood, when they are preceded by a verb expressing a commandment, desire, uncertainty. In other cases they govern the indicative mood ; as, I want nothing else of you but to do your duty, *je ne veux rien autre chose de vous sinon que ou si ce n'est que, vous fassiez votre devoir* ; I have answered him nothing, but that I had executed his orders, *je ne lui ai répondu rien autre chose, sinon que, ou si ce n'est que, j'avois exécuté ses ordres.*

The Subjunctive Mood exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

I was afraid he would come.	Je craignois qu'il ne vînt.
I doubted he would write to you.	Je doutois qu'il vous écrivît.
I did not doubt but he would be very glad to see you.	Je ne doutois pas qu'il ne fût bien aise de vous voir.
Her mother commanded her to marry him.	Sa mère a commandé qu'elle l'épousât, ou lui a commandé de l'épouser.
His father has forbidden him to play.	Son père a défendu qu'il jouât, ou lui a défendu de jouer.
Her husband permitted her to go to the play.	Son mari a permis, qu'elle allât à la comédie, ou lui a permis d'aller à la comédie.
I must write to him.	Il faut que je lui écrive.
It is convenient for you to speak to her.	Il convient que vous lui parliez.
It is of consequence for him to keep good company.	Il est de conséquence qu'il fréquente de bonnes compagnies.
There is no way for her to escape.	Il n'y a pas moyen qu'elle échappe.
It is surprising that she has succeeded.	Il est surprenant qu'elle ait réussi.
It is just that he should be rewarded.	Il est juste qu'il soit récompensé.
It is unjust that he should be punished.	Il est injuste qu'il soit puni.

It

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 251

It is fit that you <i>give</i> him <i>warning</i> .	Il est à propos que vous l' <i>avertissiez</i> .
It is necessary for him to go thither.	Il est nécessaire qu'il y aille.
It is unseemly that you <i>should</i> go alone.	Il est indecent que vous <i>alliez</i> seul.
It is astonishing that he <i>knew</i> nothing of it.	Il est étonnant qu'il n'en <i>sût</i> rien.
It is lucky that she <i>is</i> not dead.	Il est heureux qu'elle ne <i>soit</i> pas morte.
It is impossible for him to <i>recover</i> .	Il est impossible qu'il en <i>re-</i> <i>quienne</i> .
It is next to impossible that she <i>should be ignorant</i> of it.	Il est presque impossible qu'elle ne le <i>sache</i> .
It seems that you <i>know</i> him.	Il paroît que vous le <i>connois-</i> <i>sez</i> .
It seems that he <i>speaks</i> truth.	Il paroît qu'il <i>dit</i> vrai.
It seems that he <i>is</i> an honest man.	Il paroît qu'il <i>est</i> honnête homme.
It seems that she <i>is</i> surprised.	Il paroît qu'elle <i>est</i> surprise.
It seems that he <i>is</i> angry.	Il paroît qu'il <i>est</i> fâché.
It is likely that he <i>knew</i> her.	Il y a apparence qu'il l'a connue.
It is likely that you <i>saw</i> him.	Il y a apparence que vous l' <i>avez</i> vu.
It is likely that he <i>wrote</i> to her.	Il y a apparence qu'il lui a écrit.
It is likely that she <i>loved</i> him.	Il y a apparence qu'elle l'a aimé.
It is true that I <i>spoke</i> to him.	Il est vrai que je lui <i>ai</i> parlé.
It is true that he <i>saw</i> her.	Il est vrai qu'il l'a <i>vue</i> .
It is true that she <i>wrote</i> to him.	Il est vrai qu'elle lui <i>a</i> écrit.
It is true that my father <i>knew</i> him.	Il est vrai que mon père le <i>connoît</i> .
It is certain that he <i>is</i> dead.	Il est certain qu'il <i>est</i> mort.
It is certain that he <i>is</i> come from Flanders.	Il est certain qu'il <i>est</i> revenu de Flandre.
It is certain that he <i>does not know</i> him.	Il est certain qu'il ne le <i>con-</i> <i>noît</i> pas.
It is sure that he <i>told</i> him that news.	Il est sûr qu'il lui <i>a</i> dit cette nouvelle.
It is sure that he <i>wrote</i> to her.	Il est sûr qu'il lui <i>a</i> écrit.

It is sure that he <i>knows</i> his lesson.	Il est sûr qu'il <i>soit</i> sa leçon.
It is said that the king of Spain <i>is</i> dead.	On dit que le roi d'Espagne <i>est</i> mort.
It is thought that he <i>has</i> made his fortune.	On croit qu'il <i>a</i> fait sa fortune.
* It does not seem that you <i>know</i> him.	Il ne paroît pas que vous le <i>connoissiez</i> .
It does not seem that he <i>speaks</i> truth.	Il ne paroît pas qu'il <i>dise</i> vrai.
It does not seem that he <i>is</i> an honest man.	Il ne paroît pas qu'il <i>soit</i> honnête homme.
It does not seem that she <i>is</i> surprised.	Il ne paroît pas qu'elle <i>soit</i> surprise.
It does not seem that she <i>is</i> angry.	Il ne paroît pas qu'elle <i>soit</i> fâché.
It is not likely that he <i>knows</i> her.	Il n'y a point d'apparence qu'il <i>l'ait</i> connue.
It is not likely that you <i>saw</i> him.	Il n'y a point d'apparence que vous <i>l'ayez</i> vu.
It is not likely that he <i>wrote</i> to her.	Il n'y a point d'apparence qu'il lui <i>ait</i> écrit.
It is not likely that she <i>loved</i> him.	Il n'y a point d'apparence qu'elle <i>l'ait</i> aimé.
It is not true that I <i>spoke</i> to him.	Il n'est pas vrai que je lui <i>aye</i> parlé.
It is not true that he <i>saw</i> her.	Il n'est pas vrai qu'il <i>l'ait</i> vue.
It is not true that she <i>wrote</i> to him.	Il n'est pas vrai qu'elle lui <i>ait</i> écrit.
It is not true that my father <i>knows</i> him.	Il n'est pas vrai que mon père le <i>connoisse</i> .
It is not certain that he <i>is</i> dead.	Il n'est pas certain qu'il <i>soit</i> mort.
It is not certain that he <i>is</i> come from Flanders.	Il n'est pas certain qu'il <i>soit</i> venu de Flandre.
It is not certain that he <i>does</i> not <i>know</i> him.	Il n'est pas certain qu'il ne le <i>connoisse</i> pas.

* The twenty-one preceding examples are varied here purposely, to render the third rule, and the exception thereof, more intelligible to the learner.

It is not sure that he <i>told</i> him that news.	Il n'est pas sûr qu'il lui ait dit cette nouvelle.
It is not sure that he <i>wrote</i> to her.	Il n'est pas sûr qu'il lui ait écrit.
It is not sure that he <i>knows</i> his lesson.	Il n'est pas sûr qu'il sache sa leçon.
It is not said that the king of Spain is dead.	On ne dit pas que le roi d'Espagne soit mort.
It is not thought that he <i>has</i> made his fortune.	On ne dit pas qu'il ait fait sa fortune.
He told me that he <i>will write</i> to you.	Il m'a dit qu'il vous écrira.
I will tell him that you <i>are</i> come to see him.	Je lui dirai que vous êtes venu pour le voir.
Tell him I <i>will come</i> and see him.	Dites-lui que je viendrai le voir.
Did you tell him that I <i>saw</i> you ?	Lui avez-vous dit que je vous ai vu ?
Do not tell him that I <i>will go</i> to the play.	Ne lui dites pas que j'irai à la comédie.
Do not tell him that you <i>saw</i> me.	Ne lui dites pas que vous m'avez vu.
Tell him that I <i>went</i> out.	Dites-lui que je suis sorti.
Tell him that I <i>came</i> to speak to him.	Dites-lui que je suis venu pour lui parler.
I will tell him that you <i>spoke</i> to me.	Je lui dirai que vous m'avez parlé.
I will tell him that you <i>know</i> your lesson.	Je lui dirai que vous savez votre leçon.
Tell him <i>to come</i> and see me.	Dites-lui qu'il vienne me voir.
Tell him not <i>to call</i> to-day.	Dites-lui qu'il ne vienne pas aujourd'hui.
Tell him <i>to write</i> his exercise fair.	Dites-lui qu'il écrive son thème au net.
Tell her <i>to hold</i> her tongue.	Dites-lui qu'elle se taise.
Tell him <i>to bring</i> his books.	Dites-lui qu'il apporte ses livres.
Tell him <i>to learn</i> his lesson.	Dites-lui qu'il apprenne sa leçon.
Tell him <i>to give</i> you my penknife back again.	Dites-lui qu'il vous rende mon canif.

Tell

254 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Tell him <i>to give</i> you paper.	Dites-lui qu'il vous <i>donne</i> du papier.
I will tell him <i>to write</i> to you.	Je lui dirai qu'il vous <i>écrit</i> .
I will tell him <i>to take care</i> of you.	Je lui dirai qu'il ait <i>soin</i> de vous.
Do not tell him <i>to come</i> .	Ne lui dites pas qu'il <i>viens</i> .
Do not tell her <i>to write</i> to me.	Ne lui dites pas qu'elle m' <i>écrit</i> .
Will you tell him <i>to bring</i> his bill?	Lui direz-vous qu'il <i>apporte</i> son mémoire?
Will you tell him not <i>to be</i> angry?	Lui direz-vous qu'il ne <i>soit</i> pas fâché?
I will tell him not <i>to be</i> uneasy.	Je lui dirai qu'il <i>soit</i> tranquille.
I will tell her <i>to send</i> you your book.	Je lui dirai qu'elle vous <i>envoie</i> votre livre.
I will tell them <i>to make</i> you an answer.	Je leur dirai qu'ils vous <i>fassent</i> réponse.
I will tell him <i>to be</i> moderate.	Je lui dirai qu'il <i>soit</i> modéré.
She seems <i>to be</i> angry.	Il semble qu'elle <i>soit</i> fâchée.
It seems that you <i>know</i> him.	Il semble que vous le <i>connoissiez</i> .
It seems that he <i>is</i> in the right.	Il semble qu'il <i>ait</i> raison.
It seems that she <i>is</i> in the wrong.	Il semble qu'elle <i>ait</i> tort.
It does not seem that you <i>are</i> so aged.	Il ne semble pas que vous <i>soyez</i> si âgé.
It does not seem that she <i>is</i> sick.	Il ne semble pas qu'elle <i>soit</i> malade.
It seems <i>to me</i> that you <i>are</i> sorry.	Il <i>me</i> semble que vous <i>êtes</i> fâché.
It seems <i>to me</i> that he <i>is</i> very learned.	Il <i>me</i> semble qu'il <i>est</i> fort savant.
It seems <i>to him</i> that she <i>is</i> very pretty.	Il <i>lui</i> semble qu'elle <i>est</i> fort belle.
It seems <i>to a covetous man</i> that he <i>has</i> never enough.	Il semble <i>à un avare</i> qu'il n'a jamais assez.
It seems <i>to your brother</i> that he is rich enough.	Il semble <i>à votre frère</i> qu'il <i>est</i> assez riche.
If he comes and <i>asks</i> for me, tell him I am not at home.	S'il vient & qu'il <i>demande</i> après moi, dites-lui que je ne suis pas au logis.

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 255

If you study and if you take pains, you will learn the French language in a short time.	Si vous étudiez & que vous preniez de la peine, vous apprendrez le François en peu de temps.
If you would go there and speak to him, you would do him a pleasure.	Si vous y alliez & que vous lui parlassiez, vous lui feriez plaisir.
He is the most conceited man I know.	C'est l'homme le plus suffisant que je connoisse.
She is the handsomest lady you ever saw.	C'est la plus belle demoiselle que vous ayez jamais vue.
I am sorry he is sick.	Je suis fâché qu'il soit malade, ou de ce qu'il est malade.
I am glad she is better.	Je suis bien aise qu'elle se porte mieux.
I am surprised that he is not come.	Je suis surpris qu'il ne soit pas venu, ou de ce qu'il n'est pas venu.
I am overjoyed that he has won his law-suit.	Je suis ravi qu'il ait gagné son procès, ou de ce qu'il a gagné son procès.
I am surprised that she has married him.	Je suis surpris qu'elle l'ait épousé, ou de ce qu'elle l'a épousé.
She is grieved that you send her no news.	Elle est chagrine que vous ne lui donniez point de nouvelles, ou de ce que vous ne lui donniez pas de nouvelles.
I am surprised at his having made his fortune in so short a time.	Je suis surpris qu'il ait fait sa fortune en si peu de temps, ou de ce qu'il a fait sa fortune en si peu de temps.
Give me a handkerchief that is clean.	Donnez-moi un mouchoir qui soit net.
I look for a servant whom I may trust.	Je cherche un domestique à qui je me puisse fier.
He looks for a woman who is rich.	Il cherche une femme qui soit riche.
She looks for a husband who is handsome.	Elle cherche un mari qui soit beau.
Is it sure that he will come to-day?	Est-il sûr qu'il vienne aujourd'hui?

256 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Do you believe that she <i>will go</i> to the play ?	Croyez-vous qu'elle aille à la comédie.
I do not believe that she <i>will be</i> angry with you.	Je ne crois pas qu'elle soit fâchée contre vous.
I doubt that he <i>will write</i> to you.	Je doute qu'il vous écrive.
Is it sure that he <i>will go</i> to France next spring ?	Est-il sûr qu'il aille en France au printemps prochain ?
It is not sure that he <i>will come</i> back this summer.	Il n'est pas sûr qu'il revienne cet été.
Do you think that he <i>will learn</i> French in four months ?	Croyez-vous qu'il apprenne le François en quatre mois ?
Do you think that he <i>will be</i> in the country next week ?	Pensez-vous qu'il soit à la campagne la semaine prochaine ?

SECTION III.

The Government of Verbs.

1. Active verbs govern the first case ; as, I read the books, *je lis les livres*. Passive verbs govern the second case ; as, he is esteemed by all men, *il est estimé de tout le monde*. It also governs the first case with the preposition *par*, speaking of some action of the body ; as, he was killed by robbers, *il a été tué par des voleurs*. In speaking of actions, which partake both of the sentiments of the mind, and motion of the body, we commonly make use of *par*, though we say, *il est entouré de gens ennuyeux*, he is surrounded by troublesome people ; here *entouré* expresses only, that troublesome people are round about him.

2. Verbs that signify to give, or take away, govern the first case of the thing, and the third case of the person ; as, I have given him the book, *je lui ai donné le livre* ; they have taken his sword from him, *ils lui ont ôté son épée*.

3. Many verbs govern the infinitive of a verb with the preposition *de* before it ; it happens, when *to* in English may be changed into of, from, by, or with ; as, he hindered me from working, *il m'empêcha de travailler*.

4. Many

4. Many verbs govern the infinitive with the preposition *a* before it : in this case, *to* in English almost always may be changed into *in*, or *for* ; as, help me *to* do it, or *in* doing it ; *aidez-moi à le faire*.

5. Some verbs have the preposition *pour* before their infinitives, which happens, when *to* denotes the design, end, or reason of the passion or action of the verb. Therefore, *to* can be changed into *in* order *to*, with a design *to*, to the end that ; as, I came *in* order to see you, or with a design to see you, *je suis venu pour vous voir*.

6. There are five verbs after which *de* or *à* are indifferently used before the infinitive ; as, *contraindre, continuer, discontinuer, essayer, forcer*.

The verb *obliger* * in the sense of to force, to excite, to engage, is followed by the preposition *à* before the infinitive ; as, I will oblige him to do it, *je l'obligerai à le faire* ; when it is used passively, it is followed by the preposition *de* ; as, he was obliged to do it, *il fut obligé de le faire*.

When the verb *tâcher* signifies to aim, it requires the preposition *à* before the infinitive ; as, he aims to hurt me, *il tâche à me nuire* ; otherwise it requires the preposition *de* ; as, I will endeavour to please you, *je tâcherai de vous plaire*.

When the verb *s'efforcer* is used in the sense of to strive, to strain, to make use of all one's strength, it requires the preposition *à* before the next infinitive ; but, when it is used in the sense of to endeavour, to make use of one's industry, it requires the preposition *de* ; as, he strove to run, *il s'est efforcé à courir* ; he endeavours to please her, *il s'efforce de lui plaire*.

* Mr. Chambaud, page 252, says, that this verb, when it signifies to do kindness, or favour, requires *de* before the infinitive ; but, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, (see DICTIONNAIRE de l'ACADEMIE FRANCOISE, page 232) it never takes either *de* or *à*, when it is used in that signification ; therefore I would advise to make use of *si*, if it be followed by a verb ; as, you will oblige me, if you be pleased to excuse me to her, *vous m'obligerez si vous voulez bien m'excuser auprès d'elle*, and not as Chambaud, *vous m'obligerez de vouloir bien m'excuser auprès d'elle* ; which is not French, or, at least, it is very equivocal. In such a case, we more commonly make use of the verb *faire la grâce*, with the preposition *de* before the infinitive ; as, do me the favour to excuse me to her, *faites-moi la grâce de m'excuser auprès d'elle*.

When

When the verb *tarder* is used personally, it requires the preposition *à*; if impersonally, the preposition *de*; as, do not tarry to come back, *ne tardez pas à revenir*; I long to see her, *il me tarde de la voir*. In this sense it is always joined to a third case, and may be followed by *que*, with the verb in the subjunctive mood; as *il me tarde que je ne la voie*.

The verb *commencer* is sometimes followed by *de*, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY; the ear is the judge in such a case. When it signifies to begin by, it is followed by *par*; as, he began by reading Æsop's Fables, *il commença par lire des Fables d'Æsop*.

The verb *manquer* requires the preposition *de* before the infinitive, when it is used negatively; as, I will not fail to do what you please, *je ne manquerai pas de faire ce que vous voulez*; or when it signifies, to be near, to have like; as, I had like to fall, *j'ai manqué de tomber*. In this sense it is always used affirmatively and in familiar discourse.

But, when it is used affirmatively in the sense of not to do what one ought, it is followed by the preposition *à*; as, he has failed to do his duty, *il a manqué à faire son devoir*.

7. *De* is used before the infinitive of verbs, to which are joined certain nouns without an article; such are *avoir congé*, permission, *envie*, custom, *besoin*, subject, *raison*, *droit*, *tort*, occasion, &c. *de*.

8. Infinitive moods, governed by the verb *être*, followed by a noun governing the second case, take also *de* before them; as, I am glad to see you, *je suis bien aise de vous voir*. But, if the verb *être* be followed by an adjective which governs the third case, the verb which is in the infinitive takes before it the preposition *à*; as, he is ready to go thither, *il est prêt à aller*.

9. When *être*, signifying to be, is followed by a noun, and preceded by *ce*, the following verb, in the infinitive mood is preceded by *que de*; as, it is a folly to forget one's self, *c'est une folie que de se méconnoître*.

10. *De* is put before the infinitive after *venir* and *ne faire que*, signifying to have just, or to be just; as, I left him just now, *je viens de le quitter*, or *je ne fais que de le quitter*. These two verbs are frequently used thus in the present and imperfect tense, but in no other.

11. *A* is put after the verb *venir*, signifying to begin, or to set about doing something; as, when I began; or sat about, to speak, *quand je vins à parler*. This verb is used in all it's tenses, and is commonly placed after some conjunctions. Sometimes it signifies nothing in English, and is added to French verbs; as, when he will know that, *quand il viendra à savoir cela*.

12. *A* is put before infinitive moods or verbal nouns governed by *être*, preceded by *ce*, and used in the sense of to be one's turn, one's business, or one's duty; as, it is your turn to drink, *c'est à vous à boire*.

13. The verb coming after *assez* or *trop* very often requires the preposition *pour* before it; as, he has vanity enough to believe it, *il a assez de vanité pour le croire*. Sometimes it takes the preposition *de*; as, it was not sufficient to outrage him, *ce n'étoit pas assez de l'outrager*; sometimes no preposition at all; as, it is enough, or it is too much, to insult me, *c'est assez, ou c'est trop, m'insulter*. Hence it appears, how much grammarians are in the wrong, in saying that *assez* or *trop* always requires the preposition *pour* before the next infinitive mood.

14. In all governed words false cases are to be avoided; as, that pleased and charmed the prince, *cela plut au prince & le charma*; and not *cela plut & charma le prince*; because *plaire* governs the third case of the person, and *charmer* the first.

Therefore do not say, with the Abbé Girard*, *on veut & on a envie d'un objet présent*; but *on veut un objet présent & on en a envie*; because the verb *vouloir* governs the first case, and *avoir envie* the second.

* *Synonymes François*, page 239.

Government of Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

I like Addison's works.

You like apples and pears.

I esteem the learned.

The learned are esteemed by all men.

J'aime les ouvrages d'Addison.
Vous aimez les pommes & les poires.

J'estime les savans.

Les savans sont estimés de tout le monde.

He

260 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

He is beloved *by* all his relations. Il est aimé *de* tous ses parens.

He is respected *by* all his pupils. Il est estimé *de* tous ses élèves.

He was robbed *by* two rogues. Il fut volé *par* deux coquins.

He is surrounded *with* flatterers. Il est entouré *de* flatteurs.

I gave *it* to him.

Je le lui ai donné.

When will you give *me* my book ?

Quand *me* donnerez-vous mon livre ?

Will you give *it* to him ?

Le lui donnerez-vous ?

I did not give *it* to him.

Je ne le lui ai pas donné.

She took *it* from him.

Elle le lui a ôté.

Take this *knife* from him.

Otez-lui ce couteau.

Do not take *it* from her.

Ne le lui ôtez pas.

Make an end *of* playing.

Finissez *de* jouer.

I have not blamed you *for* having kept him company.

Je ne vous ai point blâmé *de* l'avoir fréquenté.

He has censured him *for* having written.

Il l'a censuré *d'avoir* écrit.

Cease to reproach me *with* my foible.

Cessez *de* me reprocher mon foible.

Warn her *to* take care of her reputation.

Avertissez-la *de* prendre soin de sa réputation.

I advised him *to* ask her pardon.

Je lui ai conseillé *de* lui demander pardon.

Why did you defer *to* pay him ?

Pourquoi avez-vous différé *de* le payer ?

I wrote to him *to* send me my books.

Je lui ai écrit *de* m'envoyer mes livres.

I was frightened *to* see him.

Je fus effrayé *de* le voir.

Excuse me *from* learning my lesson to-day.

Dispensez-moi *d'apprendre* ma leçon aujourd'hui.

Do not undertake *to* deceive her.

N'entreprenez pas *de* la défabuser.

Try *to* persuade her.

Essayez *de* la persuader.

He was constrained *to* pay.

Il fut contraint *de* payer.

He deserves *to* be punished.

Il mérite *d'être* puni.

He has neglected *to* study.

Il a négligé *d'étudier*.

I forgot *to* bring my books.

J'ai oublié *d'apporter* mes livres.

He

He pressinglly invited me <i>to</i> dine with him.	Il m'a pressé <i>de</i> diner avec lui.
Did you promise <i>to</i> go thither ?	Avez-vous promis <i>d'y</i> aller ?
I advised him <i>to</i> be diligent.	Je lui ai recommandé <i>d'être</i> diligent.
She refused <i>to</i> speak to him.	Elle refusa <i>de</i> lui parler.
I intend <i>to</i> go to France next year.	Je me propose <i>d'aller</i> en France l'année prochaine.
Endeavour <i>to</i> please her.	Tâchez <i>de</i> lui plaire.
Take care <i>to</i> tell her that you know me.	Gardez-vous <i>de</i> lui dire que vous me connoissez.
I repent <i>of</i> having sold my book.	Je me repens <i>d'avoir</i> vendu mon livre.
She cannot forbear lying.	Elle ne peut s'empêcher <i>de</i> mentir.
Make haste <i>to</i> prevent him.	Hâtez-vous <i>de</i> le prévenir.
Make haste <i>to</i> write your letter.	Dépêchez-vous <i>d'écrire</i> votre lettre.
He flatters himself that he knows almost every thing which happens in the city.	Il se flatte <i>de</i> savoir presque tout ce qui se passe dans la ville.
I take upon myself the care <i>of</i> speaking to him of it.	Je me charge <i>de</i> lui en parler.
He learns fencing.	Il apprend <i>à</i> faire des armes.
You love <i>to</i> play.	Vous aimez <i>à</i> jouer.
He seeks <i>to</i> wrong me.	Il cherche <i>à</i> me faire du tort.
Give me some drink.	Donnez-moi <i>à</i> boire.
I am disposed <i>to</i> obey you.	Je suis disposé <i>à</i> vous obéir.
He has encouraged him <i>to</i> undertake that work.	Il l'a encouragé <i>à</i> entreprendre cet ouvrage.
She has engaged him <i>to</i> play.	Elle l'a engagé <i>à</i> jouer.
You have excited me <i>to</i> eat.	Vous m'avez excité <i>à</i> manger.
I have exhorted him <i>to</i> be wife and dutiful.	Je l'ai exhorté <i>à</i> être sage & obéissant.
Help me <i>to</i> write my letters.	Aidez-moi <i>à</i> écrire mes lettres.
Think <i>of</i> paying me.	Songez <i>à</i> me payer.
You expose yourself <i>to</i> fall sick.	Vous vous exposez <i>à</i> tomber malade.
He prepares himself <i>for</i> his departure.	Il se prépare <i>à</i> partir.

She

She delights <i>in</i> tormenting me.	Elle se plaît à me tourmenter.
I did not do it <i>to</i> make you uneasy.	Je ne l'ai pas fait pour vous faire de la peine.
I told it him <i>to</i> inspire him with emulation.	Je le lui ai dit pour lui donner de l'émulation.
He came <i>to</i> see you.	Il vint pour vous voir.
<i>In order to</i> be happy, one must be contented.	Pour être heureux, il faut être content.
I will do every thing <i>to</i> please you.	Je ferai tout pour vous plaire.
I will oblige him <i>to</i> do it.	Je l'obligerai à le faire.
You will never oblige him <i>to</i> submit to her.	Vous ne l'obligerez jamais à se soumettre à elle.
Oblige him <i>to</i> see her.	Obligez-le à la voir.
He was obliged <i>to</i> do it.	Il fut obligé de le faire.
I was obliged <i>to</i> go out.	Je fus obligé de sortir.
He will be obliged <i>to</i> see her.	Il sera obligé de la voir.
You will oblige me, <i>if</i> you will be pleased to excuse me to her.	Vous m'obligerez, si vous voulez bien m'excuser auprès d'elle.
He aims <i>to</i> hurt me.	Il tâche à me nuire.
They aim <i>to</i> deceive you.	Ils tâchent à vous tromper.
I will endeavour <i>to</i> bring him to his duty.	Je tâcherai de le ramener à son devoir.
Do not tarry <i>to</i> come back.	Ne tardez pas à revenir.
Do not tarry <i>to</i> speak to her.	Ne tardez pas à lui parler.
Why do you tarry <i>to</i> go thither?	Pourquoi tardez-vous à y aller?
I long <i>to</i> see her.	Il me tarde de la voir.
I long <i>to</i> go to France.	Il me tarde d'aller en France.
I long <i>to</i> know the French language.	Il me tarde de savoir le François.
I will begin <i>to</i> apply myself to the French language.	Je commencerai à m'appliquer au François.
I begin <i>to</i> understand French a little.	Je commence à comprendre un peu le François.
He began <i>to</i> have more care.	Il commença d'avoir plus de soin.

* See the note to the sixth rule, page 257.

We began <i>by</i> breakfasting before we went out.	Nous commençâmes <i>par</i> déjeuner avant que de sortir.
I will not fail <i>to</i> do what you please.	Je ne manquerai <i>pas de</i> faire ce qu'il vous plaît.
Do not fail <i>to</i> be in such a place.	Ne manquez <i>pas de</i> vous trouver en tel lieu.
I had like <i>to</i> fall.	J'ai manqué <i>de</i> tomber.
He has failed <i>to</i> do his duty.	Il a manqué <i>à</i> faire son devoir.
You are in the wrong <i>to</i> complain.	Vous avez tort <i>de</i> vous plaindre.
You are in the right <i>to</i> be angry with him.	Vous avez raison <i>de</i> vous fâcher contre lui.
Have you not a mind <i>to</i> take a little walk?	N'avez-vous pas envie <i>de</i> faire un petit tour de promenade?
I have leave <i>to</i> go out.	J'ai permission <i>de</i> sortir.
I want <i>to</i> see him and speak to him.	J'ai besoin <i>de</i> le voir & <i>de</i> lui parler.
You have no occasion <i>to</i> complain of me.	Vous n'avez pas sujet <i>de</i> vous plaindre de moi.
Take care <i>to</i> do your exercise.	Ayez soin <i>de</i> faire votre thème.
I am very glad <i>to</i> see you in good health.	Je suis bien aise <i>de</i> vous voir en bonne santé.
I am overjoyed <i>to</i> hear, that all your family is well.	Je suis ravi <i>d'</i> entendre, que toute votre famille se porte bien.
I am sorry <i>to</i> see you sick.	Je suis fâché <i>de</i> vous voir malade.
He is very near his death.	Il est sur le point <i>de</i> mourir.
He is very capable <i>of</i> teaching mathematics.	Il est fort capable <i>d'</i> enseigner les mathématiques.
He is incapable <i>of</i> wronging any body.	Il est incapable <i>de</i> faire tort à qui que ce soit.
She is worthy <i>to</i> be loved.	Elle est digne <i>d'</i> être aimée.
I am tired <i>with</i> writing.	Je suis las <i>d'</i> écrire.
Are you able <i>to</i> walk?	Etes-vous en état <i>de</i> marcher?
Are you sure <i>of</i> pleasing her?	Etes-vous sûr <i>de</i> lui plaire?
It is easy <i>to</i> guess.	Il est aisé <i>à</i> deviner.
This fruit is good <i>to</i> eat.	Ce fruit est bon <i>à</i> manger.

He

264 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

He is much inclined to slander.	Il est fort enclin à médire.
You are not exact in learning your lesson.	Vous n'êtes pas exact à apprendre votre leçon.
Are you ready to go?	Etes-vous prêt à partir?
She is skilful in playing upon the harpsichord.	Elle est habile à toucher du claveffin.
I am assiduous in reading Telemachus.	Je suis assidu à lire Télémaque.
He is the first in prattling.	Il est le premier à babiller.
It is to no purpose to speak to him about it.	C'est temps perdu que de lui en parler.
It is a misfortune to have no friends.	C'est un malheur que de n'avoir point d'amis.
It is a folly to despise others.	C'est une folie que de mépriser les autres.
I have just breakfasted.	Je viens de le déjeuner, ou je ne fais que de déjeuner.
I just wrote my letter.	Je viens d'écrire ma lettre, ou je ne fais que d'écrire ma lettre.
I just left him.	Je viens de le quitter, ou je ne fais que de le quitter.
He had just dined.	Il venoit de dîner, ou il ne fesoit que de dîner.
She was just arrived.	Elle venoit d'arriver, ou elle ne fesoit que d'arriver.
We had just got out of the coach.	Nous venions de sortir du carrosse, ou nous ne fisions que de sortir du carrosse.
They had just finished their play.	Ils venoient de finir leur jeu, ou ils ne fesoient que de finir leur jeu.
When I began to write my letter.	Quand je vins à écrire ma lettre.
He began to speak of his riches.	Il vint à parler de ses richesses.
As soon as she began to speak of her misfortunes.	Dès qu'elle vint à parler de ses malheurs.
She was very much surprised when we began to relate to her that story.	Elle fut fort surprise quand nous vinmes à lui raconter cette histoire.

When

When his father shall know of it.	Quand son père <i>viendra</i> à savoir cela.
If his wife should know his his libertinism.	Si sa femme <i>venoit</i> à savoir son libertinage.
If you should speak to her about it, tell her that I am not ignorant of it.	Si vous <i>veniez</i> à lui en parler dites-lui, que je n'en suis pas ignorant.
It is your part <i>to</i> obey me.	C'est à vous à m' <i>obéir</i> .
It is your part <i>to</i> play.	C'est à vous à jouer.
It is my turn <i>to</i> walk out.	C'est à moi à me promener.
Whose turn is it <i>to</i> drink?	A qui est-ce à boire.
It is his turn <i>to</i> stay at home.	C'est à lui à rester au logis.
It is her turn <i>to</i> write.	C'est à elle à écrire.
It is your turn <i>to</i> read.	C'est à vous à lire.
It is not my business to correct him.	Ce n'est pas à moi à le corriger.
It is not your business <i>to</i> meddle with it.	Ce n'est pas à vous à vous en mêler.
It is not her business <i>to</i> find fault with it.	Ce n'est pas à elle à y trouver à redire.
It is not their business <i>to</i> take you from your work.	Ce n'est pas à eux à vous distraire de votre ouvrage.
He was bold enough <i>to</i> insult your sister.	Il fut assez hardi <i>pour</i> insulter votre sœur.
He has too much self-love <i>to</i> own his faults.	Il a trop d'amour propre <i>pour</i> avouer ses fautes.
She has still beauty enough <i>to</i> please.	Elle a encore assez de beauté <i>pour</i> plaire.
You have not money enough <i>to</i> bear great expences.	Vous n'avez pas assez d'argent <i>pour</i> faire de grandes dépenses.
He is too proud <i>to</i> ask her pardon.	Il est trop orgueilleux <i>pour</i> lui demander pardon.
It will be sufficient <i>to</i> write to me about it.	Ce fera assez <i>de</i> m'en écrire.
It would be sufficient to tell it him in two words.	Ce seroit assez <i>de</i> le lui dire en deux mots.
It is sufficient <i>to</i> warn her.	C'est assez <i>de</i> l'avertir.
It is too much <i>to</i> ask of me.	C'est trop me demander.
It was too much <i>to</i> insult him.	C'étoit trop l'outrager.

It is too much to deplore your misfortune.	C'est trop déplorer votre malheur.
Cease from conversing with him; it is to do him too much honour.	Cessez de lui parler; c'est trop lui faire d'honneur.
I saw her and spoke to her.	Je l'ai vue & lui ai parlé.
That play pleased and charmed the queen.	Cette comédie plut à la reine & la charma.
She pleases and charms him.	Elle lui plaît & l'enchanté.

C H A P. VI.

Rules and Observations upon impersonal Verbs.

1. **I**MPERSONAL verbs are used only in the third person singular; they are two-fold: some are impersonal by their nature; such are never used but in the third person singular; as, *il neige, il pleut*: others are sometimes impersonal, sometimes personal. They are personal when *il*, in French, has a relation to some foregoing noun; as, drawing is an honest amusement, it becomes young ladies, *le dessein est un honnête amusement, il convient aux jeunes demoiselles*: *il* has a relation to *dessein*. They are impersonal, when it has no relation to a foregoing noun; as, *le dessein est un amusement honnête, il convient que les jeunes demoiselles s'y appliquent*.

2. The verb *il pleut*, besides the use made of speaking of rain, may be used impersonally in a figurative sense, speaking of several other things which may be supposed to fall like rain; as, *il pleut des pierres, il plut de la manne dans le désert*. And, in a familiar discourse, to express the eagerness of departing, we sometimes say proverbially, *je partirai demain quand il pleuvrait des balles d'artillerie*. In this case, when it follows the substantive, it agrees with it in number, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY: so speaking of a bloody battle, we may say, *les mousquetades y pleuvoient*; so spoke cardinal Mazarine's relations who used to send them a great quantity of money, *il faut croire que l'or & l'argent pleuvent en France*.

3. Some personal verbs are used impersonally in the third person singular, though their following nominative

be in the plural; as, many occasions are found, *il se trouve bien des occasions*, or *il y a bien des occasions*.

4. *Il y a*, there is, there are, some are, many are, may be followed by a noun in the plural; as, there are few people who apply themselves to their own tongue, *il y a peu de gens qui s'appliquent à leur propre langue*. Sometimes *en* is added to it; in this case, it has a relation to some preceding noun; as, *il y a des gens qui apprennent le Latin*; *il y en a qui négligent leur propre langue*: there are people who learn Latin; there are some who neglect their own tongue.

When we speak of something present, as if pointed with the finger, there is is rendered into French by *voilà*; as, there is a handsome lady, *voilà une belle dame*.

N. B. *Vaugelas*, and, after him, the Abbé *Girard*, will not allow that *il est* might be used instead of *il y a*. However, they agree that *il n'est* may sometimes be used instead of *il n'y a*, and sometimes not; as, it may be used in the following example, there is nothing which pleases me more, *il n'est rien qui me plaise davantage*: it is not used in this following; there is but honour in serving one's country, *il n'y a que de l'honneur à servir sa patrie*, and not *il n'est que*; but, as grammarians are divided here among themselves, I advise the learner to make use of *il y a* instead of *il est*, and particularly of *il n'y a* instead of *il n'est*, until he is perfect enough in the French tongue to know in what circumstances the one may be used instead of the other; and even *Vaugelas*, *Corneille*, and the Abbé *Girard*, do not agree about such circumstances.

5. The impersonal *il y a* is likewise used to denote a quantity of time. In this case, ago, since, these, and for, are rendered into French by *il y a* beginning the sentence; afterwards comes the number followed by *que*; as, I have been in London these three years, *il y a trois ans que je suis à Londres*. If the impersonal be transposed, *que* is omitted; as, *je suis à Londres il y a trois ans*. In an interrogation, *combien y a-t-il que* is commonly used.

6. Verbs, construed with the indeterminate pronoun *on*, are not properly impersonal, though used only in the third person singular; because *on* may be resolved into a substantive; as, *on parle*, or *les hommes parlent*. It may even be resolved into a pronoun; as, I will see you tomorrow, *on vous verra demain*, or *je vous verrai demain*: consequently all verbs may be preceded by *on*, except

those which are impersonal by their nature; as, for example, we never say *on neige*.

7. The auxiliary verb to be, followed by the adjectives necessary or requisite, when it may be resolved into one must, is commonly rendered into French by *il faut*, with the following verb in the infinitive mood; as, it is necessary to, or one must, love one's neighbour; *il faut aimer son prochain*.

8. *Il faut*, signifying one's want, is followed by a substantive, preceded by one of these articles *un, de, des, du, de la*; as, to write well, one must have good paper, ink, and pens, *pour bien écrire, il faut de bon papier, de bonne encre, & de bonnes plumes*. In this case, when a personal pronoun is expressed in English, it is put, in French, in the third case, between *il* and *faut*; as, he wants books, *il lui faut des livres*.

When a noun is expressed in English, signifying the subject who wants, it is likewise put in the third case, but after the noun which is the object; as, my brother wants books, *il faut des livres à mon frère*.

9. The verbs, to be necessary, must, and should, signifying duty and preceded by a personal pronoun, or any other noun, are rendered into French by the verbs *il faut, il faudroit, il faudra, &c.* according to the corresponding tense in English; in this case, *il faut* is followed by *que*, then comes the pronoun, or the noun; and the verb, following both, is put in the subjunctive mood; as, I must go, *il faut que j'aille*; my brother must go, *il faut que mon frère aille*.

10. It is, followed by with, is expressed in French by *il en est*, and the two following nouns are put in the second case, and separated by *comme*; as, it is with you, as with me, *il en est de vous, comme de moi*.

Rules and Observations upon impersonal Verbs exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

<i>It is very fine weather to-day.</i>	<i>Il fait fort beau temps aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>How is the weather?</i>	<i>Quel temps fait-il?</i>
<i>It rains, it snows, it freezes,</i>	<i>Il pleut, il neige, il gèle, il</i>
<i>it thaws, it thunders, it</i>	<i>dégèle, il tonne, il grêle.</i>
<i>hails.</i>	<i>Il</i>

<i>It is hot, it is cold.</i>	<i>Il fait chaud, il fait froid.</i>
<i>It is bad weather.</i>	<i>Il fait mauvais temps.</i>
<i>It is very clear weather.</i>	<i>Il fait un temps fort clair.</i>
<i>It is dark weather.</i>	<i>Il fait un temps fort obscur.</i>
<i>The wind blows.</i>	<i>Il fait du vent.</i>
<i>It has rained to-day as fast as it could pour.</i>	<i>Il a plu à verse aujourd'hui.</i>
<i>It snows in great flakes.</i>	<i>Il neige à gros flocons.</i>
<i>The moon shines.</i>	<i>Il fait clair de lune.</i>
<i>It is dirty.</i>	<i>Il fait sale.</i>
<i>What o'clock is it ?</i>	<i>Quelle heure est-il ?</i>
<i>Tell me, if you please, what o'clock it is.</i>	<i>Dites-moi, s'il vous plaît, quelle heure il est.</i>
<i>It is twelve o'clock (at noon.)</i>	<i>Il est midi.</i>
<i>It is a quarter past twelve.</i>	<i>Il est midi & un quart.</i>
<i>It is half an hour past twelve.</i>	<i>Il est midi & demi.</i>
<i>It is three quarters past twelve.</i>	<i>Il est une heure moins un quart.</i>
<i>It is one o'clock.</i>	<i>Il est une heure.</i>
<i>It is a quarter past one.</i>	<i>Il est une heure & un quart.</i>
<i>It is half an hour past one.</i>	<i>Il est une heure & demie.</i>
<i>It is three quarters past one, &c.</i>	<i>Il est deux heures moins un quart, &c.</i>
<i>It is not late.</i>	<i>Il n'est pas tard.</i>
<i>It is early.</i>	<i>Il est de bonne heure.</i>
<i>It is time to go.</i>	<i>Il est temps de partir.</i>
<i>Reports are spread in the city, that . . .</i>	<i>Il se répand des bruits dans la ville, que . . .</i>
<i>Many opportunities are to be met with.</i>	<i>Il se trouve bien des occasions.</i>
<i>They eat good fruit in France.</i>	<i>Il se mange de bons fruits en France.</i>
<i>Many sad accidents are to be seen in the world.</i>	<i>Il se voit bien des tristes accidens dans le monde.</i>
<i>Contrary news arrives every day.</i>	<i>Il arrive tous les jours des nouvelles contraires.</i>
<i>There are occasions, where delay is of the utmost consequence.</i>	<i>Il y a des occasions, où le délai est de la dernière conséquence.</i>
<i>There are few people who know themselves.</i>	<i>Il y a peu de gens qui se connoissent eux-mêmes.</i>
<i>There are handsome ladies in London.</i>	<i>Il y a de belles demoiselles dans Londres.</i>

270 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

There is some danger in it.

Il y a du danger.

There is no doubt of it.

Il n'y a point de doute.

There is some profit to be hoped.

Il y a du profit à espérer.

Some books are very useful, many are very dangerous for youth.

Il y a des livres fort utiles ; il y en a beaucoup de dangereux pour la jeunesse.

Some women are very capricious.

Il y a des femmes fort capricieuses.

Many men are whimsical.

Il y a bien des hommes bizarres.

There is a handsome lady.

Voilà une belle demoiselle.

There are fine oranges.

Voilà de belles oranges.

There are strange reasons.

Voilà d'étranges raisons.

There is a very rich shop.

Voilà une boutique fort riche.

How long have you been in England ?

Combien y a-t-il que vous êtes en Angleterre ?

How long is it since you saw him ?

Combien y a-t-il que vous ne l'avez vu ?

How long has he been dead ?

Combien y a-t-il qu'il est mort ?

I have been in England these three years.

Il y a trois ans que je suis en Angleterre.

He has been dead these two years.

Il y a deux ans qu'il est mort.

I have not seen him these four years.

Il y a quatre ans que je ne l'ai vu.

She has been married for these ten years.

Il y a dix ans qu'elle est mariée.

Her husband has been sick for these five years.

Il y a cinq ans que son mari est malade.

My brother has made his fortune twenty years ago in the Indies.

Il y a vingt ans que mon frère fit sa fortune dans les Indes.

Where was you ten years ago ?

Où étiez-vous il y a dix ans ?

Every man should love his neighbour.

Il faut aimer son prochain.

I want pens.

Il me faut des plumes.

He wants books.

Il lui faut des livres.

Do not you want a penknife ?

Ne vous faut-il pas un canif ?

My brother wants good paper.

Il faut de bon papier à mon frère.

Tell me what you want.

Dites-moi ce qu'il vous faut.

I want

<i>I want nothing now.</i>	<i>Il ne me faut rien à présent.</i>
<i>If you want any thing, you shall have it.</i>	<i>Si vous faut quelque chose, vous l'aurez.</i>
<i>They want good friends.</i>	<i>Il leur faut de bons amis.</i>
<i>He wants time to learn his lesson.</i>	<i>Il lui faut du temps pour apprendre sa leçon.</i>
<i>You must go thither.</i>	<i>Il faut que vous y alliez.</i>
<i>She must speak to him.</i>	<i>Il faut qu'elle lui parle.</i>
<i>He must know it.</i>	<i>Il faut qu'il le sache.</i>
<i>She must learn French.</i>	<i>Il faut qu'elle apprenne le François.</i>
<i>They must study.</i>	<i>Il faut qu'ils étudient.</i>
<i>Are you not obliged to go out?</i>	<i>Ne faut-il pas que vous sortiez?</i>
<i>Is he not obliged to accompany you?</i>	<i>Ne faut-il pas qu'il vous accompagne?</i>
<i>He must not go out.</i>	<i>Il ne faut pas qu'il sorte.</i>
<i>You must not hold your tongue.</i>	<i>Il ne faut pas que vous vous taisiez.</i>
<i>You should go and see him.</i>	<i>Il faudroit que vous allassiez le voir.</i>
<i>It would be necessary for you to know him.</i>	<i>Il faudroit que vous le connaissiez.</i>
<i>Would it not be necessary for her to go thither.</i>	<i>Ne faudroit-il pas qu'elle y allât?</i>
<i>Would it not be necessary for us to know your reasons?</i>	<i>Ne faudroit-il pas que nous fussions vos raisons?</i>
<i>It will be necessary for you to speak to his father.</i>	<i>Il faudra que vous parliez à son père.</i>
<i>It will be necessary for her to apply herself to history.</i>	<i>Il faudra qu'elle s'applique à l'histoire.</i>
<i>Will it not be necessary for her to prevent him?</i>	<i>Ne faudra-t-il pas qu'elle le prévienne?</i>
<i>My brother must go to France.</i>	<i>Il faut que mon frère aille en France.</i>
<i>My sister must stay at home.</i>	<i>Il faut que ma sœur reste au logis.</i>
<i>It is with poets as with painters.</i>	<i>Il en est des poètes comme des peintres.</i>
<i>It is with you as with me.</i>	<i>Il en est de vous comme de moi.</i>

C H A P. VII.

Rules and Observations upon the Participles.

PARTICIPLES are either active or passive ; therefore I will take notice of them separately in the two following sections.

SECTION I.

The active or present Participle.

1. The participle active or present is always indeclinable ; as, a woman fearing God, and loving her husband, *une femme craignant Dieu, & aimant son mari*. Except in a very few law-terms.

2. Now-a-days we seldom make use of a participle active. Except *étant* and *ayant*, which are by some used before a participle passive ; as, having met with his brother, he spoke to him, *ayant rencontré son frère, il lui parla*. Except again when it is preceded by *en* ; as, in going, or whilst I was going, *en allant* ; in eating, or whilst I was eating, *en mangeant*. Some call it a gerund, and they are in the right. However, it matters very little how it is called.

En, in this case, may be resolved into English by whilst, or when, which may likewise be rendered into French by *comme*, *lorsque*, or *quand* : the first requires the following verb in the imperfect ; the two others in the present, or in any other tense ; as, I never speak in eating, or whilst, or when, I eat, *Je ne parle jamais, lorsque, ou quand, je mange*, and not *comme je mange* ; but we say, as I was eating, he came to see me, *comme je mangeois, il vint me voir*.

3. Some participles are, by use, become adjectives, and some substantives ; as, a detracting man, a detracting woman, *un homme médisant, une femme médisante*, or *un médisant, une médisante*. In such a case they are declinable.

4. Participles which are become adjectives by use, take sometimes after them the second or third case ; thus we may

may say with *Vaugelas*, in his remarks on the French tongue, these stuffs are not at all like those I saw yesterday, *ces étoffes ne sont pas approchantes de celles que je vis hier*; his, or her, temper is so repugnant to mine, that . . . *son humeur est tellement répugnante * à la mienne, que . . .* But they never take the first case, therefore we do not say, these are reasons concluding the same thing, *ce sont des raisons concluantes la même chose*, though we say, *ce sont des raisons concluantes*.

In the last and in all doubtful cases, it is better to resolve the participle into a verb, with the pronoun relative preceding it; as, *ce sont des raisons qui concluent la même chose*: or without a pronoun, as in those examples cited by *Vaugelas*; *ces étoffes n'approchent pas de celles que je vis hier*; *son humeur repugne tellement à la mienne, que . . .* Therefore do not say with old *Boyer*, I have seen them eating and drinking, *je les ai vu mangeant & buvant*; or with *Vaugelas*, *mangeans & buvans*, but *je les ai vus qui mangeoient & buvoient*.

* *Vaugelas* seems to be inconsistent with himself: he says, page 312, that *approchantes* and *répugnantes*, in these examples, are verbal adjectives having the same government as the verbs which they are derived from; and in the same page, a little below, he says, that, when a case follows the adjective, it can be nothing but a participle, because it governs the same case as the verb, which is, says he here, the infallible token of the participle.

SECTION II.

The Participle Passive or Past.

To shew exactly, in what instances the participle passive or past is declinable or not, makes one of the greatest difficulties of the French tongue. The following observations will set this nicety, hitherto so perplexed, in a clear light.

1. The participle passive is declinable, 1st, when it is used adjectively; as, men despised, *des hommes méprisés*; they are loved, *ils sont aimés, ou elles sont aimées*.

2dly, It is declinable, when it is preceded by a noun or pronoun which it governs in the first case; as, the letters which I have received, *les lettres que j'ai reçues*.

3dly, When, with the auxiliary verb *être*, it forms a neuter, reciprocal, or reflected verb, not governing a first case, or followed by any other word making but one sense with it; as, they have addicted themselves to trade, *il se sont adonnés au négoce*. But we do not say, she put herself to death, *elle s'est donnée la mort*; because *la mort* is a first case. If the verb has no governed word after it, the practice of the rule is still more certain.

The difficulty is to know whether the participle, followed by an infinitive mood, ought to agree with the foregoing noun or pronoun. As no grammarian explains this matter in a clear and intelligible manner †, and it is besides of great use, I will give some observations about it in the following rule.

2. The participle, followed by an infinitive mood, is declinable, if it governs the foregoing noun or pronoun; if the noun or pronoun be governed by the infinitive mood, the participle is indeclinable: this rule is plain and certain. Now, to know whether the participle, or the infinitive mood, governs the foregoing noun or pronoun, mind these following observations.

1st, If the infinitive be preceded by a preposition, the participle governs the noun or pronoun, if they may be put, without altering the sense, between the participle and the infinitive; as, the soldiers whom they have constrained to march, *les soldats qu'on a contraints de marcher*; we may say, they have constrained the soldiers to march, *on a contraint les soldats de marcher*. Again, the history which I gave you to read, *l'histoire que je vous ai donnée*

† Grammarians give false and inadequate rules about this matter: they say commonly, that the participle passive is indeclinable, when a pure infinitive follows it: by a pure infinitive they understand an infinitive used without a preposition or any other word. How much they are in the wrong appears by the examples of the second rule.

Chamhard says that "the participle is indeclinable, when the pronoun is governed of a verb, coming after the tense compound, and not of the tense compound." This rule is not clear and leaves a learner in darkness: neither is he able to know when the pronoun is thus governed; consequently this rule is very inadequate.

According to *Boyer*, the participle is indeclinable when there follows immediately a verb in the infinitive. This rule is false in many cases.

à lire : we may likewise say, I gave you the history to read, *je vous ai donné l'histoire à lire*.

On the contrary, the infinitive governs the foregoing noun or pronoun, if they cannot be put between the participle and the infinitive ; as, we never ought to swerve from the good way which we began to follow, *il ne faut jamais s'écarter de la bonne route que l'on a commencé à suivre* : we cannot say, we began the good way to follow, *on a commencé la bonne route à suivre*.

2dly, If the infinitive be not preceded by a preposition, the participle governs the foregoing noun or pronoun, if the infinitive may be turned into the participle present in English, or rendered into French by *qui*, and the imperfect of the indicative mood, without altering the sense ; as, I saw her painting, *je l'ai vue peindre* ; I heard her sing, *je l'ai entendue chanter* ; the ladies whom I saw passing, *les dames que j'ai vues passer* ; the soldiers whom I saw going, *les soldats que j'ai vus partir*. In all the foregoing examples I may say without altering the sense, *je l'ai vue qui peignoit*, *je l'ai entendu qui chantoit*, &c.

On the contrary, the infinitive governs the noun or pronoun, when the infinitive cannot be turned into the participle present, or rendered by *qui* and the imperfect tense ; thus, speaking of a lady whose picture was drawn, we say, I saw her picture drawn, *je l'ai vu peindre* ; of a song, I heard it sung, *je l'ai entendu chanter* ; several ladies came to the door, I let them pass, *plusieurs dames se sont présentées à la porte, je les ai laissées passer*.

3. The participle passive is indeclinable. 1st, When followed immediately by another participle past ; as, his disobedience had mounted to the highest pitch of insolence, *sa désobéissance s'est trouvé montée au plus haut point de l'insolence*.

2dly, When it is immediately followed by *que* or *qui* ; as, the consequence which I intended, that you should draw from it, *la conséquence, que j'ai prétendu que vous en tirassiez*.

3dly, When the participle and the auxiliary verb are used impersonally ; as, the hot weather we have had, *les chaleurs qu'il a fait*.

4thly, When it cannot be joined to a substantive, as it's adjective ; therefore the participles *parlé*, *agi*, *été*, &c. are never declined.

276 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

5thly, When it is followed by it's case governed; as, I have received the letters, *j'ai reçu les lettres.*

6thly, The participles *pu* from *pouvoir*, *voulu* from *vouloir*, either because they are not used adjectively, or because an infinitive is understood, which governs the preceding noun; as, I made all endeavours I could, *j'ai fait tous les efforts que j'ai pu : faire* is understood after *pu*.

4. It is the opinion of some grammarians, that, when the subject or nominative case of the verb comes after it, the participle is indeclinable; but good authors, such as the Abbé Girard and d'Olivet, Messieurs Duclos, Marmontel, &c. make it declinable; as, there is a good lesson which our misanthrope has received, *voilà une bonne leçon qu'a reçue notre misanthrope*, Marmontel; the impression which the recital of your misfortunes made on me, *l'impression que m'a faite le récit de vos malheurs*, *ibid*.

The participles in the foregoing examples are declinable, because, according to the second observation, the foregoing nouns are governed by the participles. However, it is, generally speaking, better to put the nominative before the verb, particularly in reflected verbs.

5. The participle is commonly indeclinable, when it is followed by an adjective which it governs, and which has a relation to a preceding noun and makes a part of it; as, Amasis is the only one of the Egyptian kings who conquered the isle of Cyprus and rendered it tributary, *Amasis est le seul des rois Egyptiens qui ait conquis l'île de Cypré & qui l'ait rendu tributaire*, Rollin.

6. According to the second observation we write, the ladies whom you came to see, *les dames que vous êtes venu voir*, because the foregoing noun is governed by the infinitive.

The same is to be said, if a personal conjunctive pronoun be put before *allé* and *venu*, followed by a verb in the infinitive mood; thus we write, she came to see you. *elle vous est venu voir*. Whereas, in transposing the pronoun, and putting it immediately before the word that governs it, which is more generally and better used, the participle is declinable, according to the third observation of the first rule; thus we write, *elle est venue vous voir*.

N. B. In some cases of the last rules custom is divided; grammarians on this head are far from agreeing with one another, and sometimes with themselves. The second rule and the observations may resolve many doubtful cases.

Rules and Observations upon Participles exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

A man <i>fearing</i> God.	Un homme qui <i>craint</i> Dieu.
A woman <i>loving</i> her husband.	Une femme qui <i>aimé</i> son mari.
A lady <i>applying</i> herself to study.	Une demoiselle qui <i>s'applique</i> à l'étude.
He died <i>in eating</i> his breakfast.	Il mourut <i>en déjeunant</i> .
Why do you speak <i>whilest</i> you are eating?	Pourquoi parlez-vous <i>en mangeant</i> ?
I saw him <i>whilest</i> I walked in the Park.	Je le vis <i>en me promenant</i> au Parc.
Fortune is <i>fickle</i> .	La fortune est <i>changeante</i> .
She is a <i>charming</i> lady.	C'est une demoiselle <i>charmante</i> .
She is a <i>slandering</i> woman.	C'est une femme <i>médisante</i> .
These oranges are <i>inferior</i> to those I bought yesterday.	Ces oranges <i>n'approchent pas</i> de celles que j'achetai hier.
His or her temper is so <i>repugnant</i> to mine, that . . .	Son humeur <i>répugne</i> tellement à la mienne, que . . .
These are reasons <i>concluding</i> the same thing.	Ce sont des raisons qui <i>concluent</i> la même chose.
The idle are <i>despised</i> .	Les paresseux sont <i>méprisés</i> .
She was <i>endowed</i> in her youth with wit and beauty.	Elle étoit <i>douée</i> dans sa jeunesse d'esprit & de beauté.
Unpolite men are <i>bated</i> by all.	Les impolis sont <i>baïs</i> de tout le monde.
He is <i>cherished</i> by the king.	Il est <i>chéri</i> du roi.
Have you seen the stockings I <i>bought</i> .	Avez-vous vu les bas que j'ai <i>achetés</i> ?
I have seen the shirts you <i>bought</i> ?	J'ai vu les chemises que vous avez <i>achetées</i> .
I will speak to him of the affair you <i>communicated</i> to me.	Je lui parlerai de l'affaire que vous m'avez <i>communiquée</i> .
I have read the letter you <i>wrote</i> to me.	J'ai lu la lettre que vous m'avez <i>écrite</i> .
Have you read the books I <i>lent</i> you?	Avez-vous lu les livres que je vous ai <i>prêtés</i> ?

278 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

It is a piece of news I have
not *read* in any news-pa-
per.

I have not yet read the pa-
pers you *sent* me.

I had no time to give you an
answer to the letters you
wrote to me.

These are not the same hats
I *saw*.

You do not know the pain I
had to persuade her.

Do you know the reasons he
told me ?

The lace you *bought* is very
fine.

I have not learned the lesson
you *gave* me.

You speak to him of sciences
which he has never *learned*.

You speak of a woman I
knew.

These are things I never
fore-saw.

You talk of an affair I have
not *forgotten*.

These are as good fruit as
you ever have *eaten*.

This is the best liquor I ever
drank.

These are the most honest
people you ever *knew*.

The jewels you *showed* me
are very rich.

The woman he has *married*
has brought him a hand-
some fortune.

There are the books you *lent*
me.

C'est une nouvelle que jen'ai
lue dans aucun papier de
nouvelles.

Je n'ai pas encore lu les pa-
piers que vous m'avez *en-
voyés*.

Je n'ai pas eu le temps de
faire réponse aux lettres
que vous m'avez *écrites*.

Ce ne sont pas les mêmes
chapeaux que j'ai *vus*.

Vous ne savez pas la peine
que j'ai *eue* de la persuader.

Savez-vous les raisons qu'il
m'a *dites* ?

La dentelle que vous avez
achetée est fort belle.

Je n'ai point appris la leçon
que vous m'avez *donnée*.

Vous lui parlez de sciences
qu'il n'a jamais *appries*.

Vous parlez d'une femme
que j'ai *connue*.

Ce sont des choses que je n'ai
jamais *prévues*.

Vous parlez d'une affaire
que je n'ai pas *oubliée*.

Ce sont d'aussi bons fruits
que vous ayez jamais *man-
gés*.

C'est la meilleure liqueur
que j'aye jamais *bue*.

Ce sont les plus honnêtes
gens que vous ayez jamais
connus.

Les bijoux que vous m'avez
montrés sont fort riches.

La femme qu'il a *épousée*, lui
a apporté un bien consi-
dérable.

Voilà les livres que vous
m'avez *prêtés*.

I have

I have found my gloves again which I had <i>lost</i> .	J'ai retrouvé mes gans que j'avois <i>perdus</i> .
It is a thought I have <i>read</i> somewhere.	C'est une pensée que j'ai <i>lus</i> quelque part.
She has <i>applied</i> herself to the French tongue.	Elle s'est <i>appliquée</i> à la langue Françoisé.
They have <i>addicted</i> themselves to trade.	Ils se sont <i>adonnés</i> au commerce.
They have <i>ruined</i> themselves by foolish expences.	Ils se sont <i>ruinés</i> par de folles dépenses.
They have <i>drowned</i> themselves.	Ils se sont <i>noyés</i> .
The garrison has <i>surrendered</i> at discretion.	La garnison s'est <i>rendus</i> à discrétion.
She <i>gave</i> herself up to despair.	Elle s'est <i>abandonnée</i> au désespoir.
She <i>presented</i> herself to me with all the charms of beauty.	Elle s'est <i>présentée</i> à moi avec tous les charmes de la beauté.
The soldiers whom they have <i>constrained</i> to submit.	Les soldats qu'on a <i>contraints</i> de se soumettre.
What is become of the books which I <i>gave</i> you to read ?	Que sont devenus les livres que je vous ai <i>donnés</i> à lire ?
The lesson which I <i>gave</i> you to learn is not difficult.	La leçon que je vous ai <i>donnée</i> à apprendre, n'est pas difficile.
Where are the letters which I <i>gave</i> you to write ?	Où sont les lettres que je vous ai <i>données</i> à écrire ?
I expect the ladies whom I <i>invited</i> to dinner to-day.	J'attends les dames que j'ai <i>priées</i> de venir dîner aujourd'hui.
We ought never to swerve from the good way which we <i>began</i> to follow.	Il ne faut jamais s'écarter de la bonne route que l'on a <i>commencé</i> à suivre.
The tongue which you <i>began</i> to learn is very useful.	La langue que vous avez <i>commencé</i> d'apprendre, est fort utile.
The lady whom you <i>left off</i> seeing is very witty.	La demoiselle que vous avez <i>cessé</i> de voir est fort spirituelle.
The history which I <i>began</i> to read is very entertaining.	L'histoire que j'ai <i>commencé</i> à lire est fort amusante.

280 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I <i>saw</i> her painting.	Je l'ai <i>vue</i> peindre.
I <i>heard</i> her sing.	Je l'ai <i>entendue</i> chanter.
The ladies whom I <i>saw</i> passing.	Les dames que j'ai <i> vues</i> passer.
The soldiers whom I <i>saw</i> going.	Les soldats que j'ai <i>vus</i> partir.
I <i>saw</i> them arriving.	Je les ai <i>vus</i> arriver.
I <i>saw</i> her picture drawn.	Je l'ai <i>vu</i> peindre.
It is a song which I <i>heard</i> sung this week.	C'est une chanson que j'ai <i>entendu</i> chanter cette semaine.
Several ladies came at the door, I <i>let</i> them pass.	Plusieurs dames se sont présentées à la porte, je les ai <i>lissé</i> passer.
The house which he <i>ordered</i> to be built, is very fine and well situated.	La maison qu'il a <i>fait</i> bâtir est fort belle & très-bien située.
What news have you <i>heard</i> ?	Quelle nouvelle avez-vous <i>entendu</i> dire ?
This is the news I have <i>heard</i> .	Voilà la nouvelle que j'ai <i>entendu</i> raconter.
It is a thing that I have <i>seen</i> done.	C'est une chose que j'ai <i>vu</i> faire.
Have you seen the new suit of cloaths which he <i>ordered</i> to be made for him ?	Avez-vous vu l'habit neuf qu'il s'est <i>fait</i> faire ?
She has <i>seen</i> herself <i>betrayed</i> by her own relations.	Elle s'est <i>vu</i> trahie de ses propres parens.
They have <i>found</i> themselves <i>surrounded</i> by their enemies.	Ils se sont <i>trouvés</i> environnés par leurs ennemis.
His vanity had <i>mounted</i> to the highest pitch of insolence.	Sa vanité s'est <i>trouvée</i> montée au plus haut point de l'insolence.
The books I have <i>ordered</i> to be sent to me.	Les livres que j'ai <i>ordonné</i> qu'on m'envoyât.
The lesson which I <i>commanded</i> that you should learn.	La leçon que j'ai <i>commandé</i> que vous apprissiez.
The consequence which I <i>intended</i> that you should draw from it.	La conséquence que j'ai <i>pré-</i> <i>tendu</i> que vous en tirassiez.
I have been sick during the hot weather we <i>have</i> had.	J'ai été malade pendant les chaleurs qu'il a <i>fait</i> .

The

The rain we <i>have had</i> this week, has spoiled the streets.	La pluie qu'il a <i>fait</i> cette semaine-ci, a gâté les rues.
I <i>read</i> those books.	J'ai <i>lu</i> ces livres-là.
I <i>received</i> your letter.	J'ai <i>reçu</i> votre lettre.
Have you <i>seen</i> the queen?	Avez-vous <i>vu</i> la reine?
Why have you not <i>translated</i> your fable?	Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas <i>traduit</i> votre fable?
She has not <i>learned</i> her lesson.	Elle n'a pas <i>appris</i> sa leçon.
She <i>used</i> her best endeavours.	Elle a <i>fait</i> tous les efforts qu'elle a <i>pu</i> .
I have <i>granted</i> her all the pleasures she <i>desired</i> .	Je lui ai <i>accordé</i> tous les plaisirs qu'elle a <i>voulu</i> .
The impression which the recital of your misfortunes <i>made</i> on me.	L'impression que m'a <i>faite</i> le récit de vos malheurs.
The trouble which your law-suit <i>gave</i> me.	La peine que m'a <i>donnée</i> votre procès.
The letters which your brother <i>wrote</i> to me.	Les lettres que m'a <i>écrites</i> monsieur votre frère.
The friends which your mother <i>procured</i> me.	Les amis que m'a <i>procurés</i> madame votre mère.
The surprise which his presence <i>occasioned</i> me.	La surprise que m'a <i>occasionnée</i> sa présence.
The English <i>rendered</i> themselves masters of Quebec.	Les Anglois se sont <i>rendu</i> maîtres de Québec.
They have <i>rendered</i> themselves famous in war.	Ils se sont <i>rendu</i> fameux dans la guerre.
She has <i>rendered</i> herself celebrated by her wit and beauty.	Elle s'est <i>rendu</i> célèbre par son esprit & par sa beauté.
The garrison has <i>surrendered</i> prisoners of war.	La garnison s'est <i>rendu</i> prisonnière de guerre.
She is <i>come</i> to see us.	Elle est <i>venue</i> nous voir, ou elle nous est <i>venu</i> voir.
They are <i>gone</i> to see him.	Elles sont <i>allées</i> le voir, ou elles le sont <i>allé</i> voir.
They are <i>come</i> too see me.	Elles sont <i>venues</i> me voir, ou elles me sont <i>venu</i> voir.

C H A P. VIII.

Rules and Observations upon Adverbs.

1. **A**DVERBS, being simple, are commonly placed before adjectives and participles ; as, this wine is very good, *ce vin est fort bon*. When they are compound, they are commonly placed after ; as, he is arrived seasonably, *il est arrivé à propos*.

2. When adverbs, simple or compound, are joined to a verb, they are commonly placed after it ; as, she loves tenderly, *elle aime tendrement*. But when the adverb is simple, and joined to a verb in a compound tense, it may be placed before or after the participle, though it is better to place it before ; as, *elle a tendrement aimé*. Except *davantage*, more, which is always put after the participle.

The following adverbs, *bien*, *mieux*, *trop*, *mal*, *fort*, *toujours*, *jamais*, and some more, are placed between the auxiliary and the participle ; and when *jamais*, or *toujours*, meet with another adverb, they are always placed first : as, he always spoke well of you, *il a toujours bien parlé de vous*.

3. *Beaucoup*, *peu*, *trop*, *assez*, and such-like adverbs of quantity, take sometimes before them the participles *de* and *à*, in the manner of nouns ; as, it is the custom of many people, *c'est la coutume de beaucoup de gens* ; of few people, *de peu de gens* ; that happens to too many people, *cela arriva à trop de gens* ; to few people, *à peu de gens*.

4. In a negative sentence, we generally make use of two negative words ; as, *ne plus*, no more ; *ne point*, not at all ; *ne pas*, not ; *ne rien*, nothing ; *ne jamais*, never ; *ne nullement*, by no means ; *ne personne*, *ne pas un*, *ne aucun*, nobody, &c.

5. *Ne*, which is the first negation, does always follow the subject of the verb, and whatever depends on it, if ver subject be a noun ; as, man, being born feeble, is ne-the free from trouble, *l'homme étant né foible, n'est jamais exempt de peine*. If the subject be a pronoun personal, and the sentence interrogative, the sentence begins with *ne* ; as, do not you know ? *ne savez-vous pas ?* In compound

pound tenses the second negation is always put between the auxiliary and the verb ; as, I have not read your book, *je n'ai pas lu votre livre*. If the verb be in the infinitive mood, the two negatives come before it ; as, not to tell you a lye, *pour ne pas vous dire un mensonge*.

6. We make use of the particle *ne*, without the second negative word, in the following cases ;

1st, When the negative *ni* follows ; as, I neither love nor hate him, *je ne l'aime ni ne le hais*.

2dly, After the conjunctions *à moins que*, unless ; *de peur que*, *de crainte que*, lest, or for fear that ; as, unless he comes, *à moins qu'il ne vienne*.

3dly, After *que* preceded by the verbs *empêcher*, to hinder, or keep from ; *craindre*, to fear ; and others expressing fear in mentioning an effect not desired ; as, he fears that, or lest, he should come to-day, *il craint qu'il ne vienne aujourd'hui*.

But if one wishes, that the thing spoken of should happen, then the verb that follows *craindre*, or such-like, expressing fear, must be attended with two negatives ; as, *il craint qu'il ne vienne pas aujourd'hui*.

4thly, Before *que*, taken in the sense of *si* ; besides, nothing but, only ; as, I desire no recompence, only, or but, the pleasure of obliging you ; *je ne désire pour récompense que le plaisir de vous obliger*.

5thly, After *que* taken in the sense of why not ; as, why do not you answer ? *que ne répondez-vous ?*

6thly, After *ne savoir* used for *ne pouvoir*, or when it implies an uncertainty of the mind ; as, I do not know whether he will succeed, *je ne sais s'il réussira*.

But, if it implies a full ignorance of the thing, it requires commonly two negatives ; as, I do not know if he is come, *je ne sais pas s'il est venu*.

7thly, After the verbs *oser* and *pouvoir* used negatively ; as, I do not dare to write to him, *je n'ose lui écrire*. In an interrogative phrase a second negation is commonly added ; as, *n'osez-vous pas lui écrire ?*

8thly, After the verb *il y a*, followed by a compound of the present tense in a negative sentence ; as, I have not been in Paris these ten years, *il y a dix ans que je n'ai été à Paris*. But, if it be followed by any other tense, the second negative should then be used ; as, I had not been in Paris for a year, *il y avoit un an que je n'avois pas été à Paris*.

9thly,

284 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

9thly, When, in a negative sentence, the particle *de* signifies a part of time; as, I will not see him for a year, *je ne le verrai d'un an.*

7. There are some expressions where we indifferently make use of a single or double negative, particularly after *si*; as, *si vous ne voulez m'y conduire*, or *si vous ne voulez pas m'y conduire*; if you will not carry me thither: *si vous ne venez cette semaine*, or *si vous ne venez pas cette semaine*; if you do not come this week, &c.

Rules and Observations upon Adverbs, exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

I saw him <i>very often</i> .	Je l'ai vu <i>fort souvent</i> .
You are in <i>great haste</i> .	Vous êtes <i>bien pressé</i> .
You are arrived <i>very seasonably</i> .	Vous êtes arrivé <i>fort à propos</i> .
<i>At present</i> , let us see.	<i>A présent</i> , voyons.
For the present, I am <i>very easy</i> .	Pour le présent, je suis <i>fort tranquille</i> .
<i>Now</i> , I will tell you.	<i>Maintenant</i> , je vous dirai.
Come <i>to-day</i> and see me.	Venez me voir <i>aujourd'hui</i> .
<i>Quick</i> , make haste.	<i>Vite</i> , dépêchez-vous.
I went <i>yesterday</i> to the play.	Je fus <i>hier</i> à la comédie.
I saw her <i>the day before yesterday</i> .	Je la vis <i>avant-hier</i> .
I have known him <i>formerly</i> .	Je l'ai connu <i>autrefois</i> .
He arrived <i>late</i> ly.	Il arriva <i>dernièrement</i> .
She died <i>not long ago</i> .	Elle mourut <i>depuis peu</i> .
You must write to her <i>before</i> .	Il faut lui écrire <i>auparavant</i> .
I will speak to you <i>to-morrow</i> .	Je vous parlerai <i>demain</i> .
I shall have done <i>after to-morrow</i> .	J'aurai fait <i>après demain</i> .
Come back <i>soon</i> .	Revenez <i>bientôt</i> .
You shall be my friend <i>hereafter</i> .	Vous serez <i>déformais</i> mon ami.
<i>Henceforth</i> it will always be so.	<i>Dorénavant</i> il en sera toujours de même.
<i>At first</i> he spoke thus.	<i>D'abord</i> il parla ainsi.
I have been <i>often</i> astonished.	J'ai été <i>souvent</i> étonné.
She died <i>suddenly</i> .	Elle mourut <i>subitement</i> .

Do you sometimes read romances ?	Lisez-vous quelquefois des romans ?
I read very seldom.	Je lis fort rarement.
On a sudden he presented himself before my eyes.	Soudain il se présenta devant mes yeux.
I will come back, <i>the latest</i> , at ten o'clock.	Je reviendrai à dix heures, <i>au plus tard</i> .
Run there <i>with all speed</i> .	Courez-y <i>au plus vite</i> .
I never consented to it.	Je n'y ai jamais consenti.
I will always be faithful to you.	Je vous serai toujours fidèle.
It is done <i>for ever and ever</i> .	C'en est fait <i>pour toujours</i> .
She torments him continually.	Elle le tourmente <i>continuellement</i> .
I will speak to him <i>at leisure</i> .	Je lui parlerai <i>à loisir</i> .
I commonly breakfast at nine o'clock.	Je déjeûne <i>ordinairement</i> à neuf heures.
At what o'clock do you commonly dine ?	A quelle heure dînez-vous <i>communément</i> ?
We dine <i>almost always</i> at three o'clock.	Nous dinons <i>presque toujours</i> à trois heures.
I never <i>hardly</i> go out before dinner.	Je ne sors <i>presque jamais</i> avant le dîner.
I will meet him <i>one time or other</i> .	Je le rencontrerai <i>tôt au tard</i> .
You go to bed <i>too soon</i> .	Vous allez <i>trop tôt</i> au lit.
You rise <i>too late</i> .	Vous vous levez <i>trop tard</i> .
Rise <i>betimes</i> .	Levez-vous <i>de bonne heure</i> .
Have you not seen him yet ?	Ne l'avez-vous <i>pas encore</i> vu ?
We shall be <i>then</i> in the country.	Nous serons <i>alors</i> à la campagne.
We will <i>then</i> make ourselves merry.	<i>Pour lors</i> nous nous divertirons.
From that time I perceived his cheating tricks.	<i>Dès-lors</i> je m'appercus de ses fourberies.
I have not seen her <i>since</i> .	Je ne l'ai pas vue <i>depuis</i> .
When will you come ?	<i>Quand</i> viendrez-vous ?
<i>Now and then</i> we play at cards.	Nous jouons aux cartes <i>de temps en temps</i> .
We have made ourselves merry <i>all the night</i> .	Nous nous sommes divertis <i>toute la nuit</i> .
He has been robbed <i>at noon-day</i> .	Il a été volé <i>en plein jour, ou en plein midi</i> .
I will send it you <i>the first opportunity</i> .	Je vous l'enverrai <i>au premier jour</i> . I will

286 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I will be ready to serve you
at all times.

Where are you going ?

Whence do you come from ?

Which way have you passed ?

Come here.

Get out from hence.

Come this way.

Stay there.

Do not stir from thence.

Go that way.

Look above.

Go up stairs.

Your pen is under here.

*See yonder that beautiful
flower.*

She comes from above.

I come from below.

Take it upward.

Hold it downward.

*This old house is very fine
within.*

*This house is very fine with-
out.*

How far shall we go ?

*I have read this book as far
down as here.*

Let us read as far down as there

You will find him thereabouts.

You go very far.

He lives hard by.

I bought it just by.

I have followed him close.

Come nearer.

Go before, I will follow you.

Walk behind.

*You will no-where find the
like.*

Put this over, and that under.

He struck me behind.

You would be rich elsewhere.

*You will be contented no
where.*

*Je serai prêt en tout temps à
vous servir.*

Où allez-vous ?

D'où venez-vous ?

Par où avez-vous passé ?

Venez ici.

Sortez d'ici.

Venez par ici.

Restez là.

Ne bougez pas de là.

Allez par-là.

Regardez là-haut.

Allez en haut.

Votre plume est ici dessous.

*Regardez là-bas cette belle
fleur.*

Elle vient d'en haut.

Je viens d'en bas.

Prenez-le par en haut.

Tenez-le par en bas.

*Cette vieille maison est fort
belle en dedans.*

*Celle-ci est fort belle e-
hors.*

Jusqu'où irons-nous ?

J'ai lu ce livre jusqu'ici.

Lisons jusque-là.

Vous le trouverez aux environs

Vous allez bien loin.

Il demeure tout proche.

Je l'ai acheté ici près.

Je l'ai suivi de près.

Approchez-vous de plus près.

Allez devant, je vous suivrai.

Marchez par derrière.

*Vous n'en trouverez nulle
part de semblable.*

*Mettez ceci dessus, & cela
dessous.*

Il m'a frappé par derrière.

Vous seriez riche ailleurs.

*Vous ne serez content nulle
part.*

She

She will be admired <i>every-where.</i>	Elle sera admirée <i>par-tout.</i>
His house is <i>on this side.</i>	Sa maison est <i>en deçà.</i>
His garden is <i>on that side.</i>	Son jardin est <i>en delà.</i>
They seek for him <i>on all sides.</i>	On le cherche <i>de tout côté.</i>
They have agreed <i>on both sides.</i>	Ils se sont accordés <i>de part & d'autre.</i>
He runs <i>about and about.</i>	Il court <i>d'un côté & d'autre.</i>
She goes <i>up and down.</i>	Elle va <i>ça & là.</i>
Go <i>on the right.</i>	Allez <i>à droite.</i>
Do not go <i>on the left.</i>	N'allez pas <i>à gauche.</i>
Go <i>straight along.</i>	Allez <i>tout droit.</i>
He fell into the dirt <i>all along.</i>	Il tomba dans la boue <i>tout du long.</i>
They went <i>together</i> to the coffee-house.	Ils sont allés <i>ensemble</i> au café.
We treat one another <i>by turns.</i>	Nous nous traitons <i>tour à tour.</i>
Let us drink <i>about.</i>	Buvons <i>à la ronde.</i>
Do not speak all <i>at once.</i>	Ne parlez pas tous <i>à la fois.</i>
They run <i>belter-skelter.</i>	Ils courent <i>pêle-mêle.</i>
They ran <i>in a croud</i> to see the king.	Ils coururent <i>en foule</i> pour voir le roi.
You set every thing down <i>topsy-turvy.</i>	Vous mettez tout <i>sans dessus dessous.</i>
And he <i>likewise.</i>	Et lui <i>aussi, ou pareillement.</i>
Give him <i>ever so little</i> of it.	Donnez-lui <i>en tant soit peu.</i>
You give him <i>much.</i>	Vous lui en donnez <i>beaucoup.</i>
Give her but <i>little.</i>	Ne lui en donnez <i>qu'à très-peu.</i>
I have <i>not much</i> of it.	Je n'en ai pas <i>beaucoup.</i>
Have you <i>enough</i> ?	En avez-vous <i>assez</i> ?
I have eaten <i>sufficiently.</i>	J'ai mangé <i>suffisamment.</i>
You gave me <i>too much.</i>	Vous m'avez <i>trop</i> donné.
You gave him <i>too little.</i>	Vous lui avez donné <i>trop peu.</i>
<i>By little and little</i> he will become a doctor.	<i>Peu à peu</i> il deviendra <i>doc-</i> <i>teur.</i>
Do you owe him <i>so much</i> ?	Lui devez-vous <i>tant</i> ?
I have owed him <i>more.</i>	Je lui ai <i>du davantage.</i>
I may have it <i>elsewhere</i> for less.	Je l'aurai <i>ailleurs</i> à <i>moins.</i>
I have been, <i>at most,</i> twice at her house.	J'ai été deux fois chez elle, <i>tout au plus.</i>
Do not fail to write to her, <i>at least.</i>	<i>Au moins,</i> ne manquez pas de lui écrire.

You bought it *dear*.

I have not sold it him *too dear*.

I am *infinitely* obliged to you.

He was *almost* killed.

You must ask it of him *by all means*.

She is *tolerably well*.

Why do you not answer me?

How does your sister do?

She is *very well*.

She has been *very well* since she went into the country.

I am *admirably well*.

My mother is *very bad*.

You have done *wisely*.

You accuse me *falsely*.

He *thoroughly* knows the French language.

You will *hardly* persuade her.

She consented to it *with reluctance*.

She went *against her will*.

I agree to it *heartily*.

She is *secure* from all danger.

I have told you my sentiment *openly*.

He has given us a description *to the life*.

He fell upon his back.

They went *groping* along.

You have put on your stockings the *wrong side outwards*.

He did it *on purpose*.

He did not do it *designedly*.

Do you speak *in good earnest*?

I tell it you *seriously*.

Vous l'avez acheté *cher*.

Je ne le lui ai pas vendu *trop cher*.

Je vous suis *infinitement* obligé.

Il fut *presque* tué.

Il faut que vous le lui demandiez *absolument*.

Elle se porte *passablement bien*.

Pourquoi ne me répondez-vous pas?

Comment se porte mademoiselle votre sœur?

Elle se porte *fort bien*.

Elle s'est *très-bien* portée depuis qu'elle est à la campagne.

Je me porte *parfaitement bien*, ou à merveilles.

Ma mère se porte *fort mal*.

Vous avez agi *sagement*.

Vous m'accusez *à faux*.

Il fait le François *à fond*.

Vous la persuaderez *à peine*.

Elle y consentit *à regret*.

Elle est allée *à contre-cœur*.

J'y consens *de bon cœur*.

Elle est *à couvert* de tout danger.

Je vous ai dit mon sentiment *à découvert*.

Il nous a fait une description *au naturel*.

Il tomba *à la renverse*.

Ils allèrent *à tâtons*.

Vous avez mis vos bas *à l'envers*.

Il l'a fait *exprès*.

Je ne l'ai pas fait *à dessein*.

Parlez-vous *tout de bon*?

Je vous le dis *sérieusement*.

I did

I did it *in a joke*.

I said it *in jest*.

She told it *for fun*.

You have done it *in a hurry*.

I have done it *unawares*.

You speak *at random*.

Let the worst come to the worst,
you can only lose your labour.

They are *narrowly* lodged.

I will *ingenuously* own it.

I won it *fairly*.

I am *quite* persuaded of it.

He would *by all means* make
me stay for dinner.

Your book is, *in all respects*,
better.

I warn you *friendly*.

Let us *amicably* settle our
affairs.

He awaked *suddenly*.

Let us live *in peace*.

You may sleep *quietly*.

Will you return *empty*?

Do *freely*, as if you were at
your own house.

She has resisted him *stoutly*.

Did you go thither *on foot*?

She was *on horseback*, when I
saw her.

Yes, *indeed*, I have been there.

Perhaps he will come *to-day*.

He *probably* does not know it.

Put them *separately*.

I have put them *out of the*
way.

I have left them *apart*.

I know it *better* than you.

Trade goes on *worse and*
worse.

I know it *as well* as you.

Je le fis *pour rire*.

Je l'ai dit *pour badiner*.

Elle l'a dit *en badinant*.

Vous l'avez fait *à la hâte*.

Je l'ai fait *par mégarde*.

Vous parlez *au hasard*.

Au pis aller, vous ne pouvez
perdre que votre travail.

Ils sont logés *à l'étroit*.

Je l'avouerai *de bonne foi*.

Je l'ai gagné *de bon jeu*.

J'en suis *tout-à-fait* persuadé.

Il voulut *à toute force* me faire
rester à dîner.

Votre livre est meilleur *à tous*
égards.

Je vous avertis *en ami*.

Réglons nos affaires *à l'amiable*.

Il se réveilla *en sursaut*.

Vivons *en paix*.

Vous pouvez dormir *en repos*.

Vous en retournerez-vous *à*
vide?

Agissez *librement*, comme si
vous étiez chez vous.

Elle lui a résisté *fort & ferme*.

Y allâtes-vous *à pied*?

Elle étoit *à cheval*, quand
je la vis.

Oui *en vérité*, j'y ai été.

Peut-être viendra-t-il *aujourd'hui*.

Probablement il ne le fait pas.

Mettez-les *séparément*.

Je les ai mis *à l'écart*.

Je les ai laissés *à part*.

Je le sais *mieux* que vous.

Le commerce va *de pis en pis*.

Je le sais *aussi bien* que vous.

O

My

290 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

My mother is *not so* sick as she was.

His affairs go *better and better.*

He shall not go away with it. I am thirty years old, *neither more nor less.*

Above all, do not forget to bring paper.

I will speak to her *in private.* It is the opinion of many people.

It is the custom of few people.

That happens to many people.

I have *not* learned my lesson.

I will speak to him *no more.*

I have *not* seen him at all.

He knows *nothing.*

I *never* knew him.

By no means consent to it.

I did *not* see any body there.

Have you *not* seen my brother?

Have you *not* written your exercise?

Have they *not* yet broken fasted?

Has she *not* consented to it?

Has he *not* spent all his money?

Has he *not* sent for him?

I neither love *nor* hate him.

I neither see her *nor* speak to her.

Unless you come with me.

Lest he should die.

I will hinder him from playing.

I am afraid he is sick.

Ma mère se porte *moins* mal qu'elle ne fesoit.

Ses affaires vont *de mieux en mieux.*

Il me le payera *chèrement.* J'ai trente ans *ni plus ni moins.*

Surtout, n'oubliez pas d'apporter du papier.

Je lui parlerai *en particulier.*

C'est l'opinion *de* beaucoup de gens.

C'est la coutume *de* peu de gens.

Cela arrive à beaucoup de gens.

Je n'ai *pas* appris ma leçon.

Je ne lui parlerai *plus.*

Je ne l'ai *point* vu.

Il ne sait *rien.*

Je ne l'ai *jamais* connu.

N'y consentez *nullement.*

Je n'y ai vu *personne.*

N'avez-vous *pas* vu mon frère?

N'avez-vous *pas* écrit votre thème?

N'ont-ils *pas* encore déjeuné?

N'y a-t-elle *pas* consenti?

N'a-t-il *pas* dépensé tout son argent?

Ne l'a-t-il *pas* envoyé chercher?

Je ne l'aime *ni* ne le hais.

Je ne la vois *ni* ne lui parle.

A moins que vous ne veniez avec moi.

De crainte qu'il ne mourût.

J'empêcherai qu'il ne joue.

Je crains qu'il ne soit malade.

Be

Be sure that he does <i>not</i> go out.	Prenez garde qu'il <i>ne</i> sorte.
I am afraid he will <i>not</i> come to-day.	Je crains qu'il <i>ne</i> vienne pas aujourd'hui.
Why do you fear she will <i>not</i> write to you?	Pourquoi craignez-vous qu'elle <i>ne</i> vous écrive pas?
She fears he does <i>not</i> love her.	Elle craint qu'il <i>ne</i> l'aime pas.
She fears he is <i>not</i> in good health.	Elle appréhende qu'il <i>ne</i> soit pas en bonne santé.
I desire no recompense, <i>but</i> the pleasure of obliging you.	Je <i>ne</i> désire pour récompense, que le plaisir de vous obliger.
It is <i>only</i> through idleness.	Ce n'est que par pure sainé-antise.
I know <i>only</i> him.	Je <i>ne</i> connois que lui.
It was <i>but</i> a false alarm.	Ce n'étoit qu'une fausse alarme.
It is <i>only</i> a jest.	Ce n'est qu'un badinage.
We are <i>but</i> two.	Nous <i>ne</i> sommes que deux.
I spoke <i>but</i> two words to him.	Je <i>ne</i> lui ai dit que deux mots.
I learned French <i>but</i> three months.	Je n'ai appris le François que trois mois.
I heard <i>only</i> that news.	Je n'ai appris que cette nouvelle.
We did stay there <i>only</i> one hour.	Nous n'y restâmes qu'une heure.
She wrote <i>only</i> six lines.	Elle n'a écrit que six lignes.
Why do <i>not</i> you answer?	Que <i>ne</i> répondez vous?
Why do <i>not</i> you study?	Que n'étudiez vous?
Why do <i>not</i> you write?	Que n'écrivez vous?
Why does <i>not</i> he go thither himself?	Que n'y va-t-il lui-même?
Why is he <i>not</i> come sooner?	Que n'est-il venu plutôt?
Why does <i>not</i> she rise earlier?	Que <i>ne</i> se lève-t-elle plus matin?
I <i>cannot</i> go thither.	Je <i>ne</i> saurois y aller.
I <i>cannot</i> keep pace with you.	Je <i>ne</i> saurois vous tenir pied.
You <i>cannot</i> speak to him to-day.	Vous <i>ne</i> sauriez lui parler aujourd'hui.
I <i>cannot</i> stay any longer.	Je <i>ne</i> saurois rester plus longtemps.
<i>Cannot</i> you force him to it?	<i>Ne</i> sauriez-vous l'y forcer?
I do <i>not</i> dare to speak to her.	Je n'ose lui parler.
I do <i>not</i> dare to contradict him.	Je n'ose le contredire.
He does <i>not</i> dare to take it upon himself.	Il n'ose s'en charger.

She does <i>not dare</i> freely to declare her thoughts.	Elle <i>n'ose</i> déclarer librement ses pensées.
Do <i>not</i> you <i>dare</i> to write to him?	<i>N'osez-vous pas</i> lui écrire?
Does <i>not</i> he <i>dare</i> to go to the play?	<i>N'ose-t-il pas</i> aller à la comédie?
Does <i>not</i> she <i>dare</i> to take the least pleasure?	<i>N'ose-t-elle pas</i> prendre le moindre plaisir?
I have <i>not</i> seen him these ten years.	Il y a dix ans que je <i>ne</i> l'ai vu.
I had <i>not</i> spoken to her for two years.	Il y avoit deux ans que je <i>ne</i> lui avois pas parlé.
I have <i>not</i> been at the play these three years.	Il y a trois ans que je <i>n'ai</i> été à la comédie.
I had <i>not</i> been in the Park for four years.	Il y avoit quatre ans que je <i>n'avois pas</i> été au Parc.
I will <i>not</i> see him for a year.	Je <i>ne</i> le verrai d'un an.
I will <i>not</i> speak to them for two years.	Je <i>ne</i> leur parlerai de deux ans.

CHAP. IX.

Rules and Observations upon Prepositions.

SOME prepositions govern the first case; some the second; and some the third.

1. The following prepositions exemplified govern the first case:

Avant	— — —	le déluge	—	before the deluge.
après	— — —	vous,	—	after you.
devant	— — —	lui,	—	before him.
avec	— — —	son frère,	—	with his brother.
chez	— — —	vous,	—	at your house.
contre	— — —	la muraille,	—	against the wall.
dans	— — —	la chambre,	—	in the room.
en	— — —	Angleterre,	—	in England.
depuis	— — —	son arrivée,	—	since his arrival.
dès	— — —	le commencement,	—	from the beginning.
derrière	— — —	le jardin,	—	behind the garden.
dessus, ou dessous	— — —	la table,	— — —	over or under the table.
entre	— — —	la porte,	—	between the door.

cavens

envers	—	—	le prochain,	—	{ towards one's neighbour.
environ	—	—	cent guinées,	—	{ about a hundred guineas.
excepté, ou hormis	—	—	son père,	—	except his father.
moyennant	—	—	une somme d'argent	—	for a sum of money.
nonobstant, ou	{	malgré	sa mère,	—	{ notwithstanding, or in spite of his mother.
malgré	—	—	elle,	—	against her will.
outre	—	—	son logement,	—	besides his lodging.
par	—	—	terre,	—	by land.
parmi	—	—	les riches,	—	among the rich.
pendant	—	—	l'hiver,	—	during the winter.
durant	—	—	la paix,	—	during the peace.
pour	—	—	sa pension,	—	for his pension.
sans	—	—	amis,	—	without friends.
selon, ou suivant	—	—	votre avis,	—	{ according to your advice.
sous	—	—	les décombres,	—	under the rubbish.
sur	—	—	le toit,	—	upon the roof.
touchant	—	—	cette affaire,	—	{ concerning that affair.
vers	—	—	le soir,	—	about the evening.
par deçà, ou par	{	delà	les Alpes,	—	{ on this side, or on that side the Alps.
à travers	—	—	le corps,	—	through the body.

2. The following prepositions govern the second case.

Autour	—	—	de la maison,	—	{ round or about the house.
auprès	—	—	de lui,	—	near him.
faute	—	—	d'argent,	—	for want of money.
le long	—	—	de la haye,	—	along the hedge.
près, ou proche	—	—	du Palais Royal,	—	near the Royal Palace
ensuite	—	—	de quoi,	—	after which.
hors	—	—	du cabinet,	—	out of the closet.
loin	—	—	de ses ennemis,	—	far from his enemies.
vis-à-vis	—	—	de la Bourse,	—	{ over-against the Exchange.

And all others which are composed of a substantive preceded, either by *a*, *au*, or *en*. Except *à travers*, which governs the first case; as above.

294 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

3. The following prepositions govern the third case.
 Conformément — aux coutumes, — agreeably to customs.
 quant — — à moi, — as for my part.
 jusqu'aux — — nues, — — to the clouds.
 par rapport — — à ses pratiques, — { by reason of his
 customers.

Remarks upon some Prepositions.

1. Some prepositions are placed before infinitives, as well as before nouns; some, when placed before infinitives, have no preposition after them, others have the preposition *de*, and some the preposition *à*. Those which take no preposition after them before an infinitive, are *après*, *par*, *sans*, and *pour*; as, after having talked without book, *après avoir parlé sans savoir ce qu'il disoit*. Those which take the preposition *de* after them before an infinitive, are *hors*, *hormis*, *excepté*, *à la réserve*, *loin*, *au lieu*, *sauf*, *à force*, *au péril*, and perhaps some others; as, for from blaming you, *loin de vous blâmer*. Those which take the particle *à*, are *sauf* and *jusque*; as, I can but begin again, *sauf à recommencer*.

2. *En* is never followed by the article, though we say, in a familiar way of speaking, he is dead, *il est allé en l'autre monde*; upon what account, *en l'honneur de quel saint*.

Dans is always followed by the article; except before possessive pronouns, proper names of authors quoted, and proper names of towns; as, I have read it in Cicero, *je l'ai lu dans Cicéron*; seek in my pocket, *cherchez dans ma poche*. We indifferently make use of *en* or *dans* before personal pronouns; as, in him, *en lui*, or *dans lui*. But we say *penfer en soi même*, to reflect within one's self.

3. *En*, before nouns of time, signifies the time employed in doing a thing; and *dans*, the time after the expiration of which the thing will be done; as, I could do it in ten days, or I would spend no more than ten days in doing it, *je le ferois en dix jours*; I will do it eight days hence, *je le ferai dans huit jours*.

4. *Chez*, followed by a pronoun, or a proper name of a person, signifies somebody's house; as, he is in my house, in your house, &c. *il est chez moi*, *chez vous*, &c. It is preceded by *de*, when it signifies coming from; as, I come from your house, *je viens de chez vous*.

5. *Dedans*,

5. *Dedans*, *dehors*, *dessus*, *dessous*, and *au-dessus* are always adverbs, and never prepositions; consequently they have no case after them, except when *dedans* and *dehors*, *dessus* and *dessous*, are either joined together, or have the particle *de* or *par* before them; as, both within and without the house, *dedans & dehors la maison*; both upon and under the chair, *dessus & dessous la chaise*; from under the bed, *de dessous le lit*.

6. When the definite article precedes *dedans* or *dehors*, *dessus* or *dessous*, those words are used substantively, and consequently require the following noun in the second case; as, the inside, or the outside of the house, *le dedans*, *ou le dehors de la maison*.

7. *Jusques* or rather *jusqu'* (to, as far as, till) coming before a vowel, it's final *e* or *es* is omitted, and an apostrophe is put instead; as, to death, *jusqu' à la mort*. This is to be observed even in declamation; as, how long? *jusqu' à quand?* and not, *jusques à quand?* as likewise the other conjunction, 'till, until; as, *jusqu' à ce que*, which governs the subjunctive; and not *jusques à ce que*.

8. Even, or very, in English, is sometimes rendered into French by *jusqu' à* or *jusqu' aux*; as, even the king, *jusqu' au roi*. In this sense it signifies an emphatical expression of a collection, or universality of objects, either mentioned or understood; as, when I say, even the kings are mortal, *jusqu' aux rois sont mortels*; it signifies all men even kings are mortal, *tous les hommes jusqu' aux rois sont mortels*.

9. *Sauf*, which signifies an exception to something, governs the first case, speaking of things; as, without prejudice of his claim, *sauf son droit*. It governs the third case, speaking of persons; as, *sauf au demandeur à se pourvoir*, but the plaintiff, or petitioner, is at liberty to sue, or make application. A law-expression.

10. When before signifies opposite to, in the presence of, or denotes precedency, it must be rendered into French by *devant*; as, opposite to your house, *devant votre maison*; in the presence of the king, *devant le roi*; dukes are before earls, or have the precedency of earls, *les ducs ont le pas devant les comtes*; it's contrary is *derrière*, behind. In all other cases, before is rendered into French by *avant*; as, we were happy before the war, *nous étions heureux avant la guerre*; virtue must be preferred to every thing, *la vertu doit aller avant tout*, it's contrary is *après*, after.

296 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

11. *Avant*, followed by *que*, is a conjunction, which governs the subjunctive ; as, before you was born, *avant que vous fussiez né* ; followed by *que de*, it governs the infinitive ; as, before death, *avant que de mourir*.

12. *Près, auprès*, near, govern the 2d case, though we may say, in common conversation, near St. Paul's, *près l'église St. Paul*. *Près* must always be used instead of *auprès*, speaking of time or age ; as, It is near twelve o'clock, *il est près de midi* ; she is near thirty years old, *elle a près de trente ans*.

13. As custom will not always suffer *auprès* to be used, when speaking of place, particularly after *trop, si, assez, plus, bien*, I advise the learner to make use of *près* ; as, he lives near the church, *il demeure près de l'église* ; though *auprès* may be indifferently used in such a case.

14. *Près* in the sense of save, excepting, governs the third case, and must be placed after the noun which it governs ; as, except a crown, *à un écu près* ; excepting that, *à cela près*.

15. *Après* must always be used instead of *près*, 1st, when we speak of somebody put near another, as his master, friend, counsellor, or servant ; as, *j'ai mis mon fils auprès de mon frère*, I have put my son near my brother, viz. as his tutor, master, friend, counsellor, or servant.

2dly, When we mention in what esteem a person is with another, or what interest he has with him ; as, he is in favour with the king, my lord, that lady ; *il est bien auprès du roi, de monseigneur, de cette dame* ; he can do what he will with him, *il a tout pouvoir auprès de lui*.

3dly, When we mention by whom a person is entertained, sheltered, &c. as, he is gone to live with him, *il s'est retiré auprès de lui* ; he is quite safe with him, *il est en sûreté auprès de lui*.

16. The prepositions to and towards, when they signify in regard to, must always be rendered into French by *envers* ; as, he is ungrateful to God and men, *il est ingrat envers Dieu & envers les hommes*. In all other cases towards must be rendered by *vers* ; as, he went towards Islington, *il est allé vers Islington*. *Vers* signifies likewise about ; as, about the beginning of the spring, *vers le commencement du printemps*.

17. When from and to denote simply the distance from one place to another, they are rendered into French by *de* and

and *à*; as, it is five miles from London to Greenwich, *il y a cinq milles de Londres à Greenwich*. When they denote the quality of the distance, they are rendered by *depuis* and *jusque*; as, he walked from London to Greenwich, *il marcha depuis Londres jusqu'à Greenwich*. When they denote succession of place, they are rendered by *de* and *en*; as, he goes from town to town, *il va de ville en ville*.

18. A, each, and every, before a noun denoting distribution of people, time, or place, are rendered into French by *par*; as, two crowns a piece, *deux écus par tête*; three guineas a week, *trois guinées par semaine*; four shillings a mile, *quatre chelins par mille*.

19. *Vis-à-vis* and *à l'opposite*, over-against, govern the 2d case, though we say, in common conversation, *vis-à-vis l'autel de ville*, over-against Guildhall. The first is applied both to persons and things, the other to things only.

20. The participle active in English, preceded by without, is rendered into French by *sans*, sometimes followed by a substantive without an article; as, he spoke to him without fearing, *il lui parla sans crainte*. Sometimes by an infinitive without a preposition; as, *il lui parla sans craindre*. Sometimes by *que*, and the following verb in the subjunctive mood; as, *il lui parla sans qu'il craignît*: and even this last must be used when the participle active in English, is preceded either by a pronoun or any other noun.

21. As, in English, with a verb in the indicative mood, or on and upon, with a participle active, are rendered into French, sometimes by *sur* followed by *ce que*; as, as you wrote to me, that . . . *sur ce que vous m'avez écrit, que . . .* Sometimes by *comme*; as, as I walked in the Park, *comme je me promenois au Parc*. Sometimes by *à* followed by a substantive; as, on my arriving at London, *à mon arrivée à Londres*.

22. The prepositions *de*, *contre*, *sur*, *sous*, and *sans* are commonly repeated in French, though they are not in English; as, there were many books upon the table and chair, *il y avoit beaucoup de livres sur la table & sur la chaise*.

23. *A*, *par*, *pour*, *avec*, *dans*, &c. are commonly repeated when the nouns are not synonymous, or pretty near of the same signification; as, by mildness and reason, *par la douceur & par la raison*: *par* is repeated, because *douceur* and *raison* are neither synonymous, nor nearly of the same

signification. But in this instance, in luxury and voluptuousness, dans la mollesse & la volupté, the preposition is, for the contrary reason, not repeated.

Further Remarks upon the Prepositions à and de.

N. B. Du, de la, des, au, à la, aux, are and ought to be looked upon as articles. Some grammarians contradict themselves here; treating of articles, they look upon *du, au, des, à la, &c.* as articles; and, speaking of prepositions, they look upon them as prepositions in the very same instances; as, *aller au palais, au Pérou, aux Indes, être estimé du peuple, des savans.* Now, how much articles and prepositions differ every one may know; the first, being declinable parts of speech, having cases; the others, indeclinable ones, having no cases; as, in the foregoing instances, *au* and *aux* are the third case of the definite article *le*; and *du, des,* are the second case of the same article.

1. Two nouns substantive in English joined together, and making but one word, the first expressing the manner or form of a thing, and likewise the use which it is designed for, the first must be the second in French, with the preposition *à* before it, or it must be changed into a verb in the infinitive mood; as, a dining-room, *une chambre à manger*; a patch-box, *une boîte à mouches*; a diamond ring, *une bague à diamants.* But, if the first expresses the matter which the thing spoken of is made of, it requires the preposition *de*; as, silk stockings, *des bas de soie*; a silver pot, *un pot d'argent.*

2. *A* is sometimes used, 1st, instead of *at*, or *to*, before names of places, which admit of no article; as, *vivre à Paris, aller à Londres, s'arrêter à Amsterdam.*

2dly, Instead of *with*; as, to paint with oil, *peindre à l'huile.*

3dly, Instead of *for*; as, a coach for six persons, *un carrosse à six places.*

4thly, Instead of *after*; as, to live after the English fashion, *vivre à l'Angloise.*

5thly, Instead of *on*; as, on the right hand, *à main droite*; on the left hand, *à main gauche.*

6thly, Instead of *in*; as, a suit in the fashion, *un habit à la mode.*

7thly, Instead of *by*; as, step by step, *pas à pas.*

8thly, Instead

8thly, Instead of according to, followed by the substantive *avis*; as, according to my opinion, *à mon avis*.

9thly, Instead of *to*; as, to judge of him by his mien, *à juger de lui par la mine*.

10thly, Instead of at, as, at two o'clock, *à deux heures*. It is sometimes used without being expressed in English.

3. *De* is often put after a substantive instead of some, expressed or understood; as, a bit of bread, of meat; *un morceau de pain, de viande*. Moreover it is sometimes used, 1st, after the indeterminate pronouns, *quelqu'un, personne, rien, quoi, &c.* before an adjective; as, there is nobody so lucky as he is, *il n'y a personne de si heureux que lui*; there is something inexpressibly gracious in his discourses, *il a y a je ne sais quoi de gracieux dans ses discours*.

2dly, Before the proper names of places, having no article, which one is going, or coming from; as, *revenir de Paris, partir de Londres*.

3dly, Instead of in; as, he went away in the night, *il partit de nuit*.

4thly, Before a participle past in such and the like expressions; as, there were several thousand of them killed and wounded, *il y en eut plusieurs mille de tués & de blessés*.

5thly, Instead of by; as, he is taller by the whole head, *il est plus grand de toute la tête*.

6thly, Instead of with; as, he ran with all his might, *il courut de toutes ses forces*.

7thly, Instead of in, after, instead of; as, he behaves in, or after, this manner, *il se conduit de cette manière*: were I instead of you, *si j'étois de vous*.

8thly, Instead of on; as, to live on fish, *vivre de poissons*. It is likewise used without being expressed in English.

There are some other uses of the prepositions *de* and *à*: it would be too tedious to relate them here, as having been sufficiently explained in the foregoing grammatical rules and observations.

Rules and Observations upon Prepositions exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

I was here *before* you.
You are come *after* me.
Get *out of* my sight.
I saw it *behind* the house.

J'étois ici *avant* vous.
Vous êtes venu *après* moi.
Otez vous *de devant* moi.
Je l'ai vu *derrière* la maison.

300 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

He went <i>with</i> his brother.	Il est allé <i>avec</i> son frère.
I have been <i>at</i> your house.	J'ai été <i>chez</i> vous.
Have you been <i>at</i> his house?	Avez-vous été <i>chez</i> lui?
I have not been <i>at</i> her house.	Je n'ai pas été <i>chez</i> elle.
Why did not you come to <i>our</i> house?	Pourquoi n'êtes-vous pas ve- nu <i>chez</i> nous?
He has succeeded <i>against</i> all likelihood.	Il a réussi <i>contre</i> toute ap- parence.
You will find my stockings <i>in</i> the closet.	Vous trouverez mes bas <i>dans</i> le cabinet.
He is <i>in</i> England.	Il est <i>en</i> Angleterre.
Since his arrival he has al- ways been sick.	Depuis son arrivée il a tou- jours été malade.
I foresaw the consequences of it, <i>from</i> the beginning.	J'en prévis les conséquences, <i>dès</i> le commencement.
My knife is <i>over</i> or <i>under</i> the table.	Mon couteau est <i>dessus</i> ou <i>dessous</i> la table.
Let us share <i>between</i> us two.	Partageons <i>entre</i> nous deux.
Let us have charity <i>towards</i> our neighbour.	Ayons de la charité <i>envers</i> notre prochain.
I have spent <i>about</i> a thousand guineas.	J'ai dépensé <i>envi-ron</i> mille guinées.
They are all dead, <i>except</i> my father.	Ils sont tous morts, <i>excepté</i> , ou <i>hormis</i> , mon père.
He will do it <i>for</i> a sum of money.	Il le fera <i> moyennant</i> une somme d'argent.
She likes him, <i>notwithstanding</i> his humour.	Elle l'aime, <i>nonobstant</i> son humeur.
She would marry him <i>in spite</i> of all her relations.	Elle voulut l'épouser <i>malgré</i> tous ses parens.
I spend two guineas a week <i>besides</i> my lodging.	Je dépense deux guinées <i>par</i> semaine <i>outre</i> mon loge- ment.
We travelled <i>by</i> land.	Nous voyageâmes <i>par</i> terre.
I left it <i>among</i> my papers.	Je l'ai laissé <i>parmi</i> mes pa- piers.
We take a walk every day <i>during</i> the summer.	Nous nous promenons tous les jours <i>pendant</i> l'été.
The people suffer a great deal <i>during</i> war.	Le peuple souffre beaucoup <i>durant</i> la guerre.
I gave it <i>for</i> you.	Je l'ai donné <i>pour</i> vous.
He is <i>without</i> friends and money.	Il est <i>sans</i> argent & <i>sans</i> amis.

I have

A Grammar of the French Tongue. 301

I have done <i>according to your</i>	J'ai fait <i>selon, ou suivant,</i>
<i>advice.</i>	<i>vosre avis.</i>
Eight men have been buried	Huit hommes ont été ense-
<i>under the rubbish.</i>	<i>velis sous les décombres.</i>
Leave that plate upon the	Laissez ce plat <i>sur</i> la table.
<i>table.</i>	
He spoke to me <i>concerning</i>	Il m'a parlé <i>souchant</i> cette
<i>that affair.</i>	<i>affaire.</i>
I will go and see you <i>about</i>	J'irai vous voir <i>vers</i> le soir.
<i>the evening.</i>	
He has been run <i>through.</i>	Il a reçu un coup d'épée à
	<i>travers</i> le corps.
He rambles every night <i>about</i>	Il rode toutes les nuits <i>autour</i>
<i>the house.</i>	<i>de la maison.</i>
A man starves, <i>for want of</i>	Faute d'argent, on meurt de
<i>money.</i>	<i>faim.</i>
He followed me <i>along the</i>	Il me suivit <i>le long</i> de la haye.
<i>hedge.</i>	
There are fine buildings	Il y a de beaux bâtimens <i>le</i>
<i>along the Thames.</i>	<i>long</i> de la Tamise.
Let us walk <i>along the river.</i>	Promenons-nous <i>le long</i> de la
	<i>rivière.</i>
I met him <i>near the royal pa-</i>	Je l'ai rencontré <i>près</i> du pa-
<i>lace.</i>	<i>lais royal.</i>
He followed me <i>out of the</i>	Il me suivit <i>hors</i> de la ville.
<i>city.</i>	
I am <i>far</i> from my country.	Je suis <i>loin</i> de mon pays.
Come <i>near</i> me.	Venez <i>auprès</i> de moi.
Keep yourself <i>near the fire.</i>	Tenez-vous <i>près</i> du feu.
She lives <i>over against the Ex-</i>	Elle demeure <i>vis-à-vis</i> de la
<i>change.</i>	<i>Bourse.</i>
<i>After which there was a ball.</i>	<i>Ensuite</i> de quoi il y eut un
	<i>bal.</i>
I have suffered a great deal	J'ai beaucoup souffert à <i>cause</i>
<i>on her account.</i>	<i>d'elle.</i>
She died, <i>to the great regret</i>	Elle mourut, <i>au grand regret</i>
<i>of all her family.</i>	<i>de toute sa famille.</i>
Cut them <i>close to the ground.</i>	Coupez-les à <i>fleur</i> de terre.
Sit down <i>near my brother.</i>	Asseyez-vous à <i>côté</i> de mon
	<i>frère.</i>
He made his escape <i>by means</i>	Il s'échapa à <i>la faveur</i> de la
<i>of the night.</i>	<i> nuit.</i>
The bridge was built <i>at the</i>	Le pont fut bâti <i>aux dépens</i>
<i>expence of the city.</i>	<i>de la ville.</i> He

302 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

He pretends to be in the *right, in spite of* good sense.

They dress themselves *after the French fashion.*

As to what you tell, I heard no talk about it.

She has done it *without the knowledge of* her mother.

You shall not have it *under* fifty guineas.

He has sold all his estate, *except* a small house.

We are *sheltered* here from the rain.

There has been a battle *on this side of* the Alps.

He went to *the other side of* the Pyrenees.

Nobody is *screened* from slander.

Dukes are *above* earls.

I am *below* you.

Let us go and *meet* him.

He has favoured all his family by his will, his wife *excepted.*

We have brought it about *by strength of* arms.

I will defend you, *at the peril of* my life.

He was stopped *in the middle of* the street.

He ordered his country house to be built *even with the ground.*

He lends money *at the rate of* five per cent.

As for my part, I do not care for it.

They have been pursued *as far as* the wood.

Il veut avoir raison, *en dépit* du bon sens.

Ils s'habillent *à la mode de* France.

A l'égard de ce que vous dites, je n'en ai pas entendu parler.

Elle l'a fait *à l'insu de* sa mère.

Vous ne l'aurez pas *à moins de* cinquante guinées.

Il a vendu tout son bien, *à la réserve d'une* petite maison

Nous sommes ici *à l'abri de* la pluie.

Il y a eu une bataille *en deçà* des Alpes.

Il est allé *au delà* des Pyrénées.

Personne n'est *à couvert de* la médisance.

Les ducs sont *au dessus* des comtes.

Je suis *au dessous* de vous.

Allons *au devant* de lui.

Il a favorisé toute sa famille par son testament, *à l'exclusion de* sa femme.

Nous en sommes venu *à bout à force de* bras.

Je vous défendrai, *au péril de* ma vie.

Il fut arrêté *au milieu de* la rue.

Il a fait bâtir sa maison de campagne *à rex de* chaussée.

Il prête de l'argent *à raison de* cinq pour cent.

Quant à moi, je ne m'en soucie pas.

On les a poursuivis *jusqu'au* bois. He

- He is stuffed, *even to his* throat. Il en a jusqu' à la gorge.
- I do not like to remove, *on account of my customers.* Je n'aime point de déloger, *par rapport à mes pratiques.*
- After having talked without book.* Après avoir parlé sans savoir ce qu'il disoit.
- To shew you how much I am concerned for all your interests. Pour vous montrer combien je prends part à tous vos intérêts.
- I give you leave to do whatever you please, *except going out.* Je vous permets de faire tout ce qu'il vous plaira, *borné de sortir.*
- Full liberty is granted him to spend his money, *but not to squander it away.* Il a tout pouvoir de dépenser son argent, *à la réserve de le prodiguer.*
- Far from* disapproving of your conduct, I would have done the same. Loin de désapprouver votre conduite, j'aurois fait la même chose.
- He does nothing else but prattle, *instead of learning his lesson.* Il ne fait que causer, *au lieu d'apprendre sa leçon.*
- For want of* asking it of him, you will lose your money. Faute de le lui demander, vous perdrez votre argent.
- By dint of* walking, we arrived before night. A force de marcher, nous arrivâmes avant la nuit.
- He has entered an action against him, *at the peril of losing all his estate.* Il a intenté un procès contre lui, *au péril de perdre tout son bien.*
- I will tell her my sentiment, *at the risk of displeasing her.* Je lui dirai mon sentiment, *au risque de lui déplaire.*
- I can *only* begin again. Sans à recommencer.
- He took *so much* liberty, *as to tell her that she had told a lye.* Il s'émancipa, jusqu'à lui dire qu'elle avoit menti.
- I have read it *in* Virgil. Je l'ai lu dans Virgile.
- I am sure that she is now *in* Paris. Je suis sûr qu'elle est à présent dans Paris.
- My father is abroad. Mon père n'est pas en ville.
- Are you sure that he is not *in the city*? Etes-vous sûr qu'il ne soit pas dans la ville?

I have

304 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I have left it <i>in</i> the chamber.	Je l'ai laissé <i>dans</i> la chambre.
I have shut it up <i>in</i> my trunk.	Je l'ai enfermé <i>dans</i> mon coffre.
Put that <i>in</i> my closet.	Mettez cela <i>dans</i> mon cabinet.
There is nothing <i>in</i> the bottle.	Il n'y a rien <i>dans</i> la bouteille.
Reflect well <i>within</i> yourself.	Réfléchissez bien <i>en</i> vous-même.
I see nothing <i>in</i> him which displeases me.	Je ne vois rien <i>en</i> , ou <i>dans</i> , lui qui me déplaît.
There is nothing <i>in</i> her which you can blame.	Il n'y a rien <i>en</i> , ou <i>dans</i> , elle que vous puissiez blâmer.
Is there any thing <i>in</i> them which may give occasion to your suspicions?	Y a-t-il quelque chose <i>en</i> , ou <i>dans</i> , eux qui puisse donner lieu à vos soupçons?
I could do it <i>in</i> ten days.	Je le ferois <i>en</i> dix jours.
You would spend more than a fortnight <i>in</i> doing it.	Vous ne le feriez pas <i>en</i> quinze jours.
I shall have done <i>in</i> four days.	J'aurai fait <i>dans</i> quatre jours.
I will send it you <i>in</i> a week's time.	Je vous l'enverrai <i>dans</i> huit jours.
I come <i>from</i> your house.	Je viens <i>de</i> chez vous.
I came <i>from</i> <i>bis</i> , or <i>her</i> house.	Je venois <i>de</i> chez lui, ou <i>de</i> chez elle.
I have looked for it <i>within</i> and <i>without</i> the house.	Je l'ai cherché <i>dedans</i> & <i>dehors</i> la maison.
There is Spanish leather both <i>upon</i> and <i>under</i> the chairs.	Il y a du marroquin <i>dessus</i> & <i>dessous</i> les chaises.
He drew him <i>from</i> <i>under</i> the table.	Il le tira <i>de</i> <i>dessous</i> la table.
<i>The outside</i> of his country-house is very pretty.	<i>Le dehors</i> de sa maison de campagne est fort beau.
Give me the <i>upper part</i> of the bread.	Donnez-moi le <i>dessus</i> du pain.
You will oblige me, if you give me the <i>lower part</i> of the pye.	Vous m'obligerez, si vous me donnez le <i>dessous</i> du pâté.
He does not turn his eyes <i>from</i> her.	Il ne lève pas les yeux <i>de</i> <i>dessus</i> d'elle.
The fruit falls <i>off</i> the trees.	Le fruit tombe <i>de</i> <i>dessus</i> les arbres.
I will love you <i>to</i> death.	Je vous aimerai <i>jusqu'à</i> la mort.

All men, <i>even</i> kings themselves, are liable to sicknesses.	Tous les hommes, <i>jusqu'aux</i> rois, sont sujets à des maladies.
All men despise him, <i>even</i> his relations.	Tout le monde le méprise, <i>jusqu'à</i> ses parens.
<i>Without prejudice</i> to my claim.	<i>Sauf</i> mon droit.
<i>But</i> the plaintiff is at liberty to sue.	<i>Sauf</i> au demandeur à se pourvoir.
Why do you leave that heap of dirt <i>before</i> your house?	Pourquoi laissez-vous ce tas de boue <i>devant</i> votre maison?
They are not covered <i>in the</i> presence of the king.	Ils ne sont pas couverts <i>devant</i> le roi.
You have the <i>precedency</i> of him.	Vous êtes <i>devant</i> lui.
We were happy <i>before</i> the war.	Nous étions heureux <i>avant</i> la guerre.
Virtue should be preferred <i>to</i> every thing.	La vertu doit aller <i>avant</i> tout.
It is <i>near</i> two o'clock.	Il est <i>près</i> de deux heures.
She is <i>near</i> twenty years old.	Elle a <i>près</i> de vingt ans.
He lives <i>near</i> St. Paul's.	Il demeure <i>près</i> de l'église de St. Paul.
Does he live <i>so near</i> you?	Demeure-t-il <i>si près</i> de vous?
You live <i>very near</i> one another.	Vous demeurez <i>bien près</i> l'un de l'autre.
Come <i>nearer</i> me.	Approchez-vous <i>plus près</i> de moi.
You are not <i>near enough</i> to me.	Vous n'êtes pas <i>assez près</i> de moi.
She consented to every thing, that <i>excepted</i> .	Elle consentit à tout, à cela <i>près</i> .
He has paid me all, <i>except</i> six guineas.	Il m'a tout payé, à six guinees <i>près</i> .
I have put my daughter <i>under</i> her care.	J'ai mis ma fille <i>auprès</i> d'elle.
He is in favour <i>with</i> the king.	Il est bien <i>auprès</i> du roi.
He can do what he will <i>with</i> him.	Il a tout pouvoir <i>auprès</i> de lui.
She is gone <i>to live with</i> him.	Elle est allée <i>auprès</i> de lui.
You are safe <i>with</i> him.	Vous êtes en sûreté <i>auprès</i> de lui.
He is ungrateful <i>to</i> me.	Il est ingrat <i>envers</i> moi.
I have not been ungrateful <i>to</i> you.	Je n'ai pas été ingrat <i>envers</i> vous. I intend

306 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

I intend to go to France <i>about</i> the beginning of the spring.	J'ai dessein d'aller en France <i>vers</i> le commencement du printemps.
Come <i>about</i> midnight.	Venez <i>vers</i> minuit.
She went out <i>about</i> noon.	Elle sortit <i>vers</i> midi.
How many miles is it <i>from</i> London to Windsor?	Combien de miles y a-t-il <i>de</i> Londres à Windsor?
Greenwich is five miles <i>from</i> London.	Il y a cinq milles <i>de</i> Londres à Greenwich.
We walked <i>from</i> London to Greenwich.	Nous marchâmes <i>depuis</i> Lon- dres <i>jusqu'à</i> Greenwich.
We came in a coach <i>from</i> the Tower to the Park.	Nous vinmes en carrosse <i>depuis</i> la Tour <i>jusqu'au</i> Parc.
He goes <i>from</i> town to town.	Il va <i>de</i> ville <i>en</i> ville.
They go <i>from</i> house to house.	Ils vont <i>de</i> maison <i>en</i> maison.
We spent two crowns <i>a-piece</i> .	Nous dépensâmes deux écus <i>par</i> tête.
They give him two guineas <i>a</i> month.	Ils lui donnent deux guinées <i>par</i> mois.
Every mile will cost you <i>a</i> shilling.	Il vous en coûtera un chelin <i>par</i> mille.
Sit <i>over-against</i> me.	Asséyez-vous <i>vis-à-vis</i> de moi.
I bought my ring <i>over-</i> <i>against</i> the Change.	J'ai acheté ma bague <i>vis-à-</i> <i>vis</i> , ou à l' <i>opposite</i> , de la Bourse.
He went, <i>without</i> telling me any more.	Il partit, <i>sans</i> m'en dire da- vantage.
She spoke a long while, <i>with-</i> <i>out</i> my taking notice of it.	Elle parla longtemps, <i>sans</i> <i>que</i> j'y prisse garde.
We went out, <i>without</i> her <i>perceiving</i> it.	Nous sortîmes, <i>sans</i> qu'elle s'en apprçût.
He wrote to you, <i>without</i> my <i>knowing</i> any thing of it.	Il vous écrivit, <i>sans</i> que j'en fusse la moindre chose.
He cheated us, <i>without</i> our <i>suspecting</i> any thing.	Il nous trompa, <i>sans</i> que nous soupçonnassions la moindre chose.
She used him ill, <i>without</i> his <i>complaining</i> of it.	Elle le maltraita, <i>sans</i> qu'il s'en plaignît.
As you wrote to me that . . .	Sur ce que vous m'avez écrit que . . .
As I walked in the Park.	Comme je me promenois au Parc.

On my arriving at London.	A mon arrivée à Londres.
There are many books upon the table and the chair.	Il y a beaucoup de livres sur la table & sur la chaise.
She has married him against my will and yours.	Elle l'a épousé contre ma volonté & contre la vôtre.
It was not the sentiment of her father and mother.	Ce n'étoit pas le sentiment de son père & de sa mère.
He threw some under the table and the chairs.	Il en a jetté sous la table & sous les chaises.
He came to school without books and paper.	Il est venu à l'école sans livres & sans papier.
He has succeeded in it by his opulence and riches.	Il y a réussi par son opulence & ses richesses.
He makes himself to be feared by his wealth and violence.	Il se fait craindre par son opulence & par ses violences.
Go into the dining-room.	Entrez dans la salle à manger.
Where have you put my patch-box ?	Où avez vous mis ma boîte à mouches ?
He has made her a present of a diamond-ring.	Il lui a fait présent d'une bague à diamands.
Bring the vinegar-bottle.	Apportez la bouteille à vinaigre.
Where is the powder-box ?	Où est la boîte à poudre ?
Give me my gold-fringed petticoat.	Donnez-moi ma jupe à franges d'or.
I go to Paris.	Je vais à Paris.
It is dear living in London.	Il fait cher vivre à Londres.
He has been in Amsterdam.	Il été à Amsterdam.
The wainscot is painted with oil.	Le lambris est peint à l'huile.
She works with the needle.	Elle travaille à l'aiguille.
We had a coach for six persons.	Nous avions un carrosse à six places.
Let us take a coach for four persons.	Prenons un carrosse à quatre places.
He has got a coach and four.	Il a un carrosse à quatre chevaux.
I like to live after the English fashion.	J'aime de vivre à l'Angloise.
She is dressed after the French fashion.	Elle est vêtue à la Française.
	Go

308 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Go on the right hand, afterwards you will go on the left.	Allez à droite, ensuite vous prendrez à gauche.
I ordered a fashionable suit to be made for me.	Je me suis fait faire un habit à la mode.
How! you are <i>in</i> the fashion.	Comment! vous voilà à la mode.
Let us go step by step.	Allons pas à pas.
Go two by two.	Allez deux à deux.
According to my opinion, she is not in the wrong.	À mon avis, elle n'a pas tort.
To judge of him by his mien, he is an honest man.	À juger de lui par la mine, il est honnête homme.
I was here at ten o'clock.	J'étois ici à dix heures.
He wears silk stockings.	Il porte des bas de soie.
He has a fine marble slab in his room.	Il a dans sa chambre une belle table de marbre.
Give me my black velvet petticoat.	Donnez-moi ma jupe de velours noir.
Give him a bit of bread.	Donnez-lui un morceau de pain.
Do you chuse a bit of meat?	Souhaitez-vous un morceau de viande?
A bit of cheese will be sufficient.	Un morceau de fromage suffira.
There is nobody so lucky as he.	Il n'y a personne de si heureux que lui.
There is something inexpressibly gracious in his discourses.	Il y a je ne sai quoi de gracieux dans ses discours.
Somebody will be punished.	Il y aura quelqu'un de puni.
Is there any thing finer than the sky?	Y a-t-il rien de plus beau que le firmament?
I will leave London next year.	Je partirai de Londres l'année prochaine.
I come from Paris.	Je viens de Paris.
He went away in the night.	Il partit de nuit.
We will arrive there in the day time.	Nous y arriverons de jour.
I will set out to-morrow early in the morning.	Je partirai demain de grand matin.
There were several thousand of them killed and wounded.	Il y en eut plusieurs mille de tués & de blessés.

She

She is taller <i>by</i> the whole head.	Elle est plus grande <i>de</i> toute la tête.
She is beloved <i>by</i> all men.	Elle est aimée <i>de</i> tout le monde.
He ran <i>with</i> all his might.	Il courut <i>de</i> toutes ses forces.
I love you <i>with</i> all my heart.	Je vous aime <i>de</i> tout mon cœur.
Does he behave <i>in</i> that manner?	Se conduit-il <i>de</i> cette manière?
Were I <i>instead</i> of you.	Si j'étois <i>de</i> vous.
We live <i>on</i> fish.	Nous vivons <i>de</i> poissons.
They live <i>on</i> nothing but meat.	Ils ne se nourrissent que <i>de</i> viande.
It is the greatest folly <i>in</i> the world.	C'est <i>de</i> la dernière folie.
My rascally servant told him every thing.	Mon coquin <i>de</i> valet lui a tout dit.
I will not come back <i>these</i> four months.	Je ne reviendrai <i>de</i> quatre mois.
There is no such thing.	Il n'y a rien <i>de</i> tel.
He goes better and better.	Il va <i>de</i> mieux en mieux.
She goes worse and worse.	Elle va <i>de</i> pis en pis.
I learn music <i>every</i> other day.	J'apprends la musique <i>de</i> deux jours l'un.
They meet <i>every</i> third year.	Ils s'assembleront <i>de</i> trois en trois ans.
I will be married a year <i>hence</i> .	Je ferai marié dans un an d'ici.

CHAP. X.

Observations upon the Conjunctions si and que.

1. **T**HE verb following the conditional *si* is never put in the subjunctive mood; and it is put in no other tense of the indicative but the present and the imperfect; consequently, the future in English is changed into the present in French; as, you shall be satisfied if you call to-morrow, *vous serez satisfait si vous venez demain*. The imperfect of the subjunctive mood is changed into the imperfect of the indicative; as, if you would call

call to-morrow, *si vous veniez demain*, or *si vous vouliez venir demain*; and not *si vous viendriez*, nor *si vous voudriez venir*.

2. Sometimes, instead of the compound of the imperfect of the indicative, we elegantly make use of the compound of the preterperfect of the subjunctive mood after *si*; as, if I had known it sooner, that would not have happened; *si je l'eusse su plutôt, cela ne seroit pas arrivé*, instead of *si je l'avois su*, &c.

3. When *si* signifies whether, it may be used in any tense; as, do not you know whether he would come if —, *ne savez-vous pas s'il viendrait si* —; I do not know whether he will come to-day, *je ne sais s'il viendra aujourd'hui* *. Except the compound of the preterperfect of the indicative, the present, and the compound of the present of the subjunctive mood, where it is never used.

4. From the last observation it follows, that the conjunctions whether and or are most commonly rendered into French by *si* and *ou*; as, ask him whether he has done that or no, *demandez-lui s'il a fait cela ou non*. They are sometimes rendered into French whether by *que*, and or by *ou que*, or *que* alone; as, you will not be punished whether you have done that or no, *que vous ayez fait cela, que, or ou que, vous ne l'ayez pas fait, vous ne serez pas puni*. It may likewise be rendered this way, *vous ne serez pas puni, soit que vous ayez fait cela, soit que, or ou que, vous ne l'ayez pas fait*. It is better not to repeat *soit*, at least in conversation. Take notice, that whether and or, rendered by *que*, or *soit que*, govern the subjunctive mood in French.

5. We make use of *que* instead of repeating the conjunction *si*, or some of the other conjunctions, but more particularly those of which *que* makes a part. In the first case *que* is followed by the subjunctive mood; as, if he comes, and that you speak to him; *il vient, & que vous lui parliez*. In the second case, the verb is put in the subjunctive mood, when *que* supplies the place of a conjunction which requires that mood; and in the indicative mood, if it supplies the place of a conjunction

* See the exception to the 9th observation on the use of the subjunctive mood, page 248.

which requires the indicative; so that it follows the nature of the conjunction of which it is a part *.

Examples where *que* governs the indicative; when I have told and assured you, *quand je vous ai dit, & que je vous ai assuré*; as he maintained it, and I did not believe it; *comme il le soutenoit & que je ne le croyois pas*.

Examples of the subjunctive. He is very far from reading and writing well, *il s'en faut bien qu'il lise & qu'il écrive bien*; provided he comes, and be in good health; *pourvu qu'il vienne, & qu'il soit en bonne santé*. Many more instances will be met with in the following examples.

As the three first observations have been sufficiently exemplified in the tenses and moods of the verbs, I will here exemplify only the fourth observation, and the conjunction *que* throughout it's different significations and purposes.

* This distinction is very nice, yet neglected by all grammarians; some of them give inadequate and contrary rules.

The Conjunction que exemplified for the Scholar's Practice.

I do not know <i>whether</i> he will come or not.	Je ne sais s'il viendra ou non.
Do you know <i>whether</i> he has done that or not?	Savez vous s'il a fait cela ou non?
Tell me <i>if</i> he has done it or not.	Dites-moi s'il l'a fait ou non.
I do not know <i>whether</i> it be on the right hand or the left.	Je ne sais si c'est à droite ou à gauche.
One does not know <i>whether</i> he speaks truth or not.	On ne fait s'il dit vrai ou non.
I doubt <i>whether</i> she will accept the offer they make her or not.	Je doute si elle acceptera ou non l'offre qu'on lui fait.
It matters little <i>whether</i> he goes away or stays.	Il importe peu qu'il parte ou qu'il demeure.
<i>Whether</i> he wins or loses, he is always of a cheerful temper.	Soit qu'il gagne ou qu'il perde, il est toujours d'une humeur gaie.

312 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

So that you did see him, and speak to him.

In such a manner that you have sold your goods in time, and made a great profit.

By what I see, and you tell me, he will have much ado to bring it about.

He lives niggardly as if he was never to die, and had more than a hundred years to live.

When I saw him, and told him my reasons, he approved of my behaviour.

Whilst you play, and lose your time, he learns his lesson.

Whilst I was speaking to him, and shewed him he was in the wrong, our discourse was suddenly interrupted by an unforeseen accident.

Because you would not follow my advice, and would listen only to your own whim, you do not deserve my farther concern for you.

As soon as I have dined and written a letter, I will go and speak to him.

As soon as I saw that I could not make him understand reason, and that he was too much prepossessed against me, I went out, without saying any thing.

Why do not you imitate your sister, and apply yourself to

Si bien que vous l'avez vu, & que vous lui avez parlé.

De manière que vous avez vendu vos marchandises à temps, & que vous avez fait un grand profit.

A ce que je vois, & que vous me dites, il aura bien de la peine à en venir à bout.

Il léfine, comme s'il ne devoit jamais mourir, & qu'il eût plus de cent ans à vivre.

Quand je le vis, & que je lui dis mes raisons, il approuva ma conduite.

Pendant que vous jouez, & que vous perdez votre temps, il apprend sa leçon.

Tandis que je lui parlai, & que je lui fis voir le tort qu'il avoit, un accident imprévu interrompit tout-à-coup notre discours.

Parce que vous n'avez pas voulu suivre mon avis, & que vous n'avez voulu écouter que votre caprice, vous ne méritez pas que je m'intéresse davantage pour vous.

Dès que j'aurai dîné & que j'aurai écrit une lettre, j'irai lui parler.

Aussitôt que je vis que je ne pouvois lui faire entendre raison, & qu'il étoit trop prévenu contre moi, je sortis sans dire mot.

D'où vient que vous n'imitiez pas votre sœur, & que vous
the

- the French tongue as she does ?
- Is it not *because* you are idle, and *shun* labour and pains ?
- After that* we drank tea and played at cards, we went a walking.
- Perhaps* he will come and see you to-day, and give you an account of his reasons.
- According as* you tell me, and I *have* heard, she has a great deal of wit and merit.
- Besides that* her brother does not study, and *that* he *loves* play too much, he has not so much wit as she.
- As long as* we have wealth, and spend high, we never want friends.
- In proportion as* you study, and learn the French tongue, you will find more beauties in it.
- Since* we are together, and it is very fine weather, let us go and take a little walk into the country.
- God forbid *that* I should blame your behaviour, and reproach you with it.
- Would to God that* you may be in good health, and succeed in all your enterprises.
- For all that* you know him, and he *has* cheated you,
- ne vous *appliquez* pas au François comme elle ?
- N'est-ce pas parce que vous êtes paresseux, & que vous *évitex* le travail & la peine ?
- Après que* nous eûmes pris le thé, & que nous eûmes joué aux cartes, nous allâmes à la promenade.
- Peut-être qu'il* viendra vous voir aujourd'hui, & qu'il vous *rendra* compte de ses raisons.
- Selon ce que* vous me dites, & que j'ai entendu dire, elle a beaucoup d'esprit & de mérite.
- Outre que* son frère n'étudie pas, & qu'il aime trop à jouer, il n'a pas tant d'esprit qu'elle.
- Tant qu'on a* du bien, & qu'on fait de la dépense, on ne manque jamais d'amis.
- A mesure que* vous étudierez, & que vous apprendrez le François, vous y trouverez plus de beautés.
- Puisque* nous sommes ensemble, & qu'il fait fort beau temps, allons faire un petit tour de promenade à la campagne.
- A Dieu ne plaise que* je blâme votre conduite, & que je veuille vous en faire un reproche.
- Plût à Dieu que* vous vous portiez bien, & que vous réussissiez dans toutes vos entreprises.
- Malgré que* vous le connoissiez, & qu'il vous ait
- you

- you still converse with him. *trompé, vous ne cessez de lui parler.*
- He is far from being happy and contented in the midst of his wealth.* *Il s'en faut bien qu'il soit heureux, & qu'il soit content au milieu de ses richesses.*
- Go and speak to him, lest he should be angry and reproach you.* *Allez lui parler, de crainte qu'il ne soit fâché & qu'il ne vous fasse des reproches.*
- Unless you go and see him, and speak to him, he will not be satisfied with you.* *A moins que vous n'alliez le voir, & que vous ne lui parliez, il ne sera pas content de vous.*
- I will go into the country next week, provided I am well, and it be fair.* *J'irai à la campagne la semaine prochaine, pourvu que je me porte bien, & qu'il fasse beau.*
- Not that I praise him, and approve of his arrogance.* *Non pas que je le loue, & que j'approuve son arrogance.*
- In case that he comes, and asks news of my brother, tell him that he will arrive in a week.* *Au cas qu'il vienne, & qu'il demande des nouvelles de mon frère, dites-lui qu'il arrivera dans huit jours.*
- Though he denies it, and declares that he has not seen it, I can assure you of the contrary.* *Quoiqu'il le nie, & qu'il déclare ne l'avoir pas vu, je puis vous assurer du contraire.*
- To the end that you may be contented, and have no occasion to complain of me, I will give you more than I promised you.* *Afin que vous soyez content, & que vous n'ayez pas sujet de vous plaindre de moi, je vous donnerai plus que je ne vous ai promis.*
- Though he told me of it, and his brother confirmed it, I believe nothing of it.* *Bien qu'il me l'ait dit, & que son frère me l'ait confirmé, je n'en crois rien.*
- Though he be young and rich, she does not love him.* *Encore qu'il soit jeune & qu'il ait du bien, elle ne l'aime pas.*
- Before you give your opinion, and determine, be without partiality and prepossession.* *Avant que vous ne donniez votre sentiment, & que vous ne décidiez, soyez sans partialité & sans prévention.*

P A R T IV.

Practical Irregularities of the FRENCH TONGUE
alphabetically disposed,

WITH

The Choice of WORDS and PHRASES warranted
by the most approved AUTHORS,

AND ESPECIALLY

By the DECISIONS of the FRENCH ACADEMY.

Abandonné.

THIS word, in the masculine gender, commonly signifies forsaken, given over; as, *un homme abandonné*, a man who is forsaken; *un malade abandonné*, a sick person given over by his physicians. When it is applied, in the feminine gender, to persons, it always signifies a lewd, loose woman: However, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, it may be used substantively in the masculine gender, in the same sense as in the feminine; as, *c'est un abandonné*, he is a debauched fellow. But, when it is used in this sense adjectively, it requires a governed case after it; as, *c'est un homme abandonné à toutes sortes de débauches*.

Achevé.

When this word is applied to persons, it may be taken in a good or bad sense; as, *un auteur achevé*, an author without any defect; *un fripon achevé*, a mere knave: but, when this word is applied to things, it is always taken in a good sense; as, *un ouvrage achevé*, an accomplished work; *une beauté achevée*, a perfect beauty.

Affecté.

We equally say *un langage affecté* or *affecté*; *des manières affectées* or *affectées*; *des gestes affectés* or *affectés*; to express affected languages, manners, gestures. The same may be said of *affectation* and *affecterie*, with this difference, that the latter implies a desire to please. However, there are some cases where the one is not to be used instead of the other; as, *c'est une femme affectée*, and not *affecté*; *c'est une petite affectée*, and not *affecté*, she is a girl full of affectation. We likewise say *de l'argent affecté aux pauvres*, and not *affecté*; *une terre affectée à une dette*, and not *affectée*; *une colère affectée*, and not *affectée*; money assigned to the poor, ground mortgaged, an affected anger.

Moreover, observe that *affecté* has a verb, whereas *affecté* has none.

Affectonner.

We say *affectonner une chose*, to love, to like a thing; but we do not say *affectonner une personne*, to love, to like a person, if the person be of an equal, or higher rank: the genius of the French tongue does not allow it. However, *affectonné*, in a passive signification, may be used, speaking of an inferior, with regard to his superior; as, *ce serviteur est fort affectonné à son maître*, this servant is much addicted to his master.

Boubours and Corneille observe, that *votre affectonné serviteur*, your affectionate servant, is only used with regard to persons of an inferior rank.

According to the FRENCH ACADEMY, *affectonner* is never to be used in the sense of to move, to affect; as, *les comédiens doivent affectonner leurs spectateurs*, stage-players ought to affect their spectators.

Agneau.

Ménage and another synonymous author, who made reflections upon the use of the French tongue, say, that the *g* is not to be pronounced in that word, when we speak of

of meat ; they pretend that we ought to pronounce it, after the people of Paris, *anneau*. But, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, custom, and truth, we ought to pronounce *agneau* ; and the *g* has a liquid sound, as in *campagne*.

Aider.

When the verb *aider* governs the first case, it is taken in the sense of to help one with money, counsel, &c. as, *il l'a aidé à bâtir sa maison*, he helped him to build his house, viz. with money. But, when it governs the third case, it is taken in the sense of to help a man over-loaded ; as, *il lui a aidé à porter sa charge*, he helped him to carry his burden.

Aller. Venir.

The first is said of the place where one is, with relation to the place where one is not. The second, on the contrary, is said of a place where one is not, with a relation to the place where one is ; as, supposing the person spoken of be in London, I say, *un courrier est allé de Londres à Paris en trois jours*, *Et il est venu de Paris à Londres dans le même espace de temps* ; a courier went from London to Paris in three days, and came from Paris to London in the same space of time.

However, when one is to go from one place to another, we say very well, *je partirai dans huit jours pour Paris*, *voulez-vous y venir avec moi ?* I shall set out for Paris in a week, will you go with me ? *J'irai en Espagne l'année prochaine*, *je souhaiterois que vous y vinssiez avec moi* ; I shall go to Spain next year, I wish you would go thither with me.

This verb is likewise used, speaking of the place where one dwells in ; as, meeting somebody, I say to him, *je vous prie, Monsieur, de venir dîner demain chez moi*, pray, Sir, come and dine to-morrow with me.

However, there is a distinction to be made here ; if it be another body's house, *aller* must be used ; as if, meeting somebody, I say, *Monsieur A vous prie d'aller demain dîner chez lui*. But, in this case, when the person who speaks is likewise to go at another body's house, *venir* is

318 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

used; as, *Monsieur A vous prie de venir demain avec moi dîner chez lui.*

The verb *aller* is sometimes used to give more energy to the expression; as, do not imagine, *n'allez pas vous imaginer.* It is likewise used to denote what is, or was to happen; it signifies to be going, to be ready; as, *je vais écrire*, I am going to write; *il va sortir*, he is just going out; *il alloit rendre l'ame*, he was ready to give up the ghost.

Venir, on the contrary, signifies a thing just done; as, *je viens de lui écrire*, I have just written to him; *je venois de dîner, quand vous . . .* I had just dined, when you . . .

Ne faire que de may be used instead of *venir* in the aforesaid sense; as, *je ne fais que de lui écrire*; *je ne faisois que de dîner quand vous . . .* These verbs are used in that sense, only in the present and imperfect tenses of the indicative mood.

These two tenses are sometimes construed with the verb *aller* in the infinitive mood, in the sense of to be going, to be ready; as, *je vais y aller*, I am going thither; *il alloit aller chez vous*, he was ready to go to your house; *nous allions aller à la comédie*, we were going to the play.

Venir, followed by an infinitive with *à*, signifies, as I observed elsewhere, Part III. § III, to begin, or to set about doing something; as, *quand je vins à lui parler*, when I began to speak to him. This verb may be used in all it's tenses.

Sometimes the verbs *aller* and *venir* signify nothing after the conditional *si*, and denote nothing else than a gallicism made use of for elegancy's sake; as, *votre fortune seroit faite, si, à la loterie prochaine, vous alliez avoir, or vous veniez à avoir, un billet de dix mille livres sterling,* your fortune would be made, if, at the next lottery, you had a ticket of ten thousand pounds.

Observe, that, in all the foregoing instances, the verb *aller* is never followed by a preposition before an infinitive; whereas *venir* is always followed either by *à* or *de* before the infinitive.

Again, though the verb *aller* be neuter, it seems to be, in some cases, an active one, or, at least, to have an active signification; as, *aller son chemin*, to go one's way; *aller son train*, to be the same, to continue in the same way; *aller son même pas*, to go in the same manner.

Aller

Aller joined with the particle *y*, and used impersonally, signifies to be at stake, to be concerned; as, your fortune is at stake, *il y va de votre fortune*; your life was concerned in it, *il y alloit de votre vie*. When, in this signification, we make use of the imperfect of the subjunctive mood, *y* is left out; as, though my fortune should be at stake, *quand il iroit de ma fortune*; though my life should be concerned in it, *quand il iroit de ma vie*.
FRENCH ACADEMY.

Alors. Lors.

The second is never used without being followed by *que*, unless it be preceded by these two particles *dès*, or *pour*; in this case *dès-lors* signifies from that time, and *pour lors*, then. *Lorsque* signifies when; as, *lorsque je le vis*, when I saw him. Some say *dès-lors que je le vis*, as soon as I saw him: but this expression is very bad; we say *dès que je le vis*.

Alors is never followed by *que*, it signifies then.

Ancien. Vieux. Antique.

The second is commonly used, speaking of old persons and things worn by use; as, this man is very old, *cet homme est bien vieux*; this suit of cloaths is very old, *cet habit est bien vieux*. The first has a relation to the century which one lives in; as, *Aristote est plus ancien que Cicéron*, Aristotle is more ancient than Tully. It signifies likewise an advantage acquired by time; as, *c'est une maison ancienne*, or *une famille ancienne*, it is an ancient family. But, when we speak of a building, we say, *une vieille maison*, an old house, and not *une maison ancienne*.

Though we equally say *le Vieux*, or *l'Ancien Testament*, the Old Testament; *d'anciennes*, or *de vieilles histoires*, old histories; *de vieux*, or *d'anciens manuscrits*; *de vieux*, or *d'anciens Romains*, &c. however, we do not equally say *le Jeune*, or *le Nouveau Testament*; and so for the others; though *jeune* be the contrary of *vieux*, which may be used equally with *ancien* in such cases as above.

Neither do we equally say *d'anciens*, or *de vieux livres*; *d'anciens*, or *de vieux tableaux*. We say *anciens livres*, *anciens tableaux*, of books or pictures which the authors

and painters of antiquity have made ; and *vieux livres*, *vieux tableaux*, of books and pictures used and spoiled by time, of what age soever they may be.

The third is made use of, speaking of medals, statues, and pictures, when we speak of them as monuments of antiquity. It is likewise used, speaking of some pieces of architecture done after the ancient way.

When we speak of a collection of the laws of the Visigoths, Burgundians, &c. we say *les lois antiques*. But, when we speak of other Roman or French laws, we say, *les lois anciennes*. We say likewise *coutumes anciennes*, *cérémonies anciennes*.

Année passée. Année qui vient.

L'année passée is used only with relation to the year which immediately precedes that which one lives in ; as, *je fus malade l'année passée*, I was sick last year. *L'année qui vient* is used when we speak of the year immediately following that which one lives in ; as, *j'irai à Amsterdam l'année qui vient*, I shall go to Amsterdam next year.

When we speak of a time more distant, instead of *Pannée passée*, we make use of *Pannée précédente*, and instead of *Pannée qui vient*, we make use of *Pannée suivante* ; as, *Henry IV. roi de France gagna la bataille de Coutras en 1587. L'année précédente il y eut au château de St. Brin près de Coignac une conférence, qui n'aboutit à rien*. Henry the Fourth, king of France, won the battle of Coutras in the year 1587. The foregoing year a conference was held in the castle of St. Brin, near Coniac, which was to no purpose. *Les Espagnols surprirent Amiens en 1597. Philippe Second mourut l'année suivante*, the Spaniards took Amiens by surprise in the year 1597. Philip the Second died the following year.

The same is to be said of *mois* and *semaine*.

Approcher.

When this verb signifies to have access, it governs the first person ; as, *approcher la personne du roi*, to have access to the king. But, when it implies a local motion, it governs the second case ; as, come near the fire, *approchez-vous du feu*. It sometimes signifies to be equal, to
come

come near to, in this case it is always followed, either by the article in the second case, or by the preposition *de*; as, his style comes near to that of Tully, *son stile approche de celui de Cicéron*; her beauty does not come near to that of her mother, *sa beauté n'approche pas de celle de sa mère*.

Armes. Armoiries.

We say *quelles sont vos armes*? what is your coat of arms? *blasonner des armes*, to blason a coat of arms; *les armes d'Angleterre*, the arms of England. We do not say *quelles sont vos armoiries*? &c. however, we say *un traité d'armoiries*, a treatise upon a coat of arms, and not *un traité d'armes*.

There are some cases where *armes* is not to be used instead of *armoiries*; it happens when the sense would be equivocal, *armes*, in French, signifying likewise weapons; as, *la noblesse commença à se distinguer par des noms propres & par des armoiries*, the nobility began to distinguish themselves by proper names and by arms; *faire peindre ses armoiries*, to set one's coat of arms in colours.

Au cas.

This word signifying in case is always followed by *que*; as, *au cas que vous mouriez*, in case you should die. We equally say, *en cas que vous mouriez*. If, after *cas*, a substantive follows, we make use of *en cas* followed by *de*; as, *en cas de mort*, in case of death, and not *au cas de mort*.

Autrui.

Many French people make use of *autres* instead of *autrui* in every circumstance, but they are mistaken; there are some cases where *autrui* must be used, and not *autres*; as, *il ne faut pas prendre le bien d'autrui*, and not *le bien des autres*, one must not take another's own; because *autre* has a relation to persons already spoken of; as, *il ne faut pas prendre le bien des uns pour le donner aux autres*, and not *autrui*, we ought not to take somebody's own, to give it to another.

Hence it follows, that, when there is a relation to persons already spoken of, we make use of *autre*; and, when there is no such relation, we make use of *autrui*, provided the latter be used in the second or third case, because it is never used in the first.

Moreover, take notice that *autres* is applied to persons and things, and *autrui* to persons only, and always with the indefinite article. However, the FRENCH ACADEMY say *être logé chez autrui*, to lodge at other people's houses.

Beaucoup.

This word, signifying many, is never used alone; as, we do not say, *il donnoit peu à beaucoup*, he did give little to many; we add *à beaucoup de personnes*, or *à beaucoup de gens*.

When a personal pronoun is before *beaucoup*, in such a case it may be used alone; as, *nous sommes beaucoup*, *vous êtes beaucoup*, we are many, you are many; because *beaucoup* has a relation to the foregoing pronoun. The same is to be said when the indeterminate pronoun *en* is before *beaucoup*; as, *il y en a beaucoup*, there are many. *En* has the place of *gens* or *personnes*; as in the foregoing example, *il y a beaucoup de gens*.

When *beaucoup* is taken in the sense of much, a great deal, and comes after an adjective, it must always be preceded by the particle *de*; as, *votre bouquet est plus beau de beaucoup que celui de votre frère*, your nosegay is much finer than that of your brothers. But, when *beaucoup* is before the adjective, *de* may be left out.

We say *il s'en faut beaucoup*, to express that there is a great difference between persons and things, and it signifies to be far from, to come short of something; as, he comes far short of being so handsome as you, *il n'est pas si beau que vous, il s'en faut beaucoup*. This last gallicism may begin the sentence, and then the first is preceded by *que*, and the following verb is put in the subjunctive mood; as, *il s'en faut beaucoup, qu'il soit aussi beau que vous*.

We say *il s'en faut de beaucoup*, to express a deficiency in something; as, you think that you returned me every thing, there is a great deal wanting, *vous croyez m'avoir tout payé, il s'en faut de beaucoup*. FRENCH ACADEMY.

Béni.

Béni. Bénit.

When we speak of God's blessing, we make use of *béni* for the masculine, and *bénie* for the feminine ; as, *une œuvre bénie de Dieu*, a work blessed by God ; *une famille bénie de Dieu*, a family blessed by God. But, when we speak of a benediction given by men, we say *bénit* for the masculine, and *bénite* for the feminine ; as, *de l'eau bénite*, holy water ; *du pain bénit*, holy bread ; *un cierge bénit*, a holy candle, &c.

Many pronounce *beni* and *benit* according to the second sound ; it ought to be pronounced according to the third sound. See the sounds at the beginning of this Grammar.

Causér.

This word, when nothing is added to it, is taken in a bad sense ; as, *ne lui dites rien, car il cause*, do not say any thing to him, for he is a tattler. But, when we add to it *ensemble* or *avec*, it is taken in a good sense ; as, *je cause souvent avec elle*, I often talk with her ; *nous causons tous les jours ensemble*, we talk every day together.

Causeur is always taken in a bad sense ; as, *ne lui confiez rien, c'est un causeur*, do not intrust him with any thing, he is a prattler.

Ce qu'il vous plaira.

Thus we ought to write it, and not *ce qui vous plaira*, as many do ; for we do not say *je vous rendrai tous les honneurs qui vous plairont*, I will render you whatever honours you please ; it would be barbarous language ; but we say *tous les honneurs qu'il vous plaira* ; because some words are understood, viz. *que je vous rende*, that I should render you.

The same is to be said in any other case ; as, *je fais tout ce qu'il vous plaît*, I do whatever you please ; *que je fasse* is understood.

C'est à vous à . . . C'est à vous de . . .

These two words, signifying one's duty, one's turn, are not equally well used. The FRENCH ACADEMY approve of

of the first; as, it is your duty to obey him, *c'est à vous à lui obéir*; it is your turn to drink, *c'est à vous à boire*.

Champ.

This word, in the singular, signifies a piece of arable ground which is not commonly encompassed by walls. But, when it is taken in the plural, it is applied to all sorts of ground, such as meadows, woods, &c. taken together; thus we say to lead the cattle into the fields, *mener les bestiaux aux champs*. It likewise signifies every other place which is not in the city or suburbs: thus we equally say *une maison de campagne*, ou *une maison des champs*, a country-house. However, the first is most in use.

Cœur.

When this word is joined to the verb *avoir*, and preceded by the article, it signifies to have courage: thus we say of a man who is not a coward, *il a du cœur*. When it is preceded by the preposition *à*, it signifies to espouse an affair, *avoir une affaire à cœur*. When it is preceded by the preposition *sur*, it signifies to resent a thing, *avoir une chose sur le cœur*.

When we make use of the word *cœur* to express generosity or goodness, we join to that word an adjective, or some other word; as, *il a le cœur bien fait*, *il a le cœur bon*, *c'est un bon cœur*, he is a good-natured man.

Likewise, though *c'est un homme de cœur* signifies he is a courageous man, yet, when we add *tout* to the word *cœur*, it signifies a generous man; as, *il est tout cœur*, he is a very generous man.

Comme.

This word is used in different manners: it is used instead of *ainsi que*, *de même que*, *dans le temps que*, *par exemple*, *à cause que* ou *parce que*, *presque*, *en quelque sorte*; as, like, as it were, in the time that, for example, because, almost, in some manner.

Il sera puni comme les autres,
he shall be punished like others.

Cela

Cela paroît comme vieux.

this seems as if it were old.

Comme il arrivoit,

in the time that he arrived.

Les noms en . . tié sont féminins ; comme amitié, &c.

Comme il a toujours aimé le bien public, il n'a jamais voulu consentir, &c.

because he always loved the public good, he never would consent, &c.

On le trouva comme mort,

he was found almost dead.

Il est comme le ressort de toute cette intrigue,

he is in some manner the spring of all this intrigue.

It is likewise used instead of *comment*, signifying how, or in what manner, after some other phrase ; as, *il verra comme je lui parlerai*, he will see in what manner I shall speak to him. But, when how, or in what manner, begins a phrase, *comment* must be used ; as, in what manner did he succeed ? *Comment a-t-il réussi ?* and not *comme*.

Comme quoi, instead of how, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, may be used in a familiar way of speaking ; as, how have you done that ? *comme quoi avez-vous fait cela ?*

Comme quoi, instead of *why*, as in *Boyer's Dictionary*, is not used at all.

Commerce.

This word is elegantly used in a figurative sense, speaking of men ; as, *être en commerce avec quelqu'un*, to have a correspondence with one ; *c'est un homme d'un bon commerce*, he is a man of good conversation.

But, speaking of women, it is taken in a bad sense, and signifies amour, intrigue.

Confiance.

We say *prendre confiance en quelqu'un*, and we do not say, *prendre confiance en quelque chose*. However, we equally say *mettre sa confiance en quelqu'un*, and *mettre sa confiance en quelque chose*.

Prendre

326 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Prendre confiance en quelqu'un signifies to confide in one, by intrusting him with one's secrets.

Mettre sa confiance en quelqu'un, or *en quelque chose*, signifies to rely upon somebody or something.

Consoler.

We never say *consoler une douleur*, to comfort a grief, instead of *appaîser, soulager la douleur*.

I make this remark, because we meet with that fault in a well-known book*, "*Télémaque étoit abbattu par une douleur que rien ne pouvoit consoler*;" instead of which we must say, *que rien ne pouvoit appaîser*, or *soulager*, or rather *dont rien ne le pouvoit consoler*, because we say *consoler une personne*, to comfort a person.

Culture.

Though we say, in a figurative sense, *la culture des arts, des sciences, des belles-lettres, de l'esprit*, the improvement of arts, sciences, belles-lettres, mind; we do not say, *la culture de la connoissance, de l'amitié, de la bienveillance, de l'affection de quelqu'un, la culture des amis*; however, we say *cultiver la connoissance, l'amitié, la bienveillance, l'affection de quelqu'un, cultiver ses amis*, to take all necessary care to improve in knowledge, to secure the friendship or affection of somebody.

Davantage. Plus.

Plus is never used at the end in an affirmative sentence; as, give me some more, *donnez-m'en davantage*, and not *plus*. Unless it be preceded by *de*; as, I will give you something more for it, *je vous en donnerai quelque chose de plus*.

Plus or *davantage* are indifferently used at the end of a negative sentence, with this difference, that *plus* requires only *ne* before it, whereas *davantage* requires *ne* and *pas*; as, *je n'en veux pas davantage*, or *je n'en veux plus*, I will have no more of it.

Davantage is never put in the middle of a sentence before a substantive, whereas *plus* may be so; as, the Ro-

* *Télémaque*, Liv. 16.

mans have more plain dealing than the Greeks, *les Romains ont plus de bonne foi que les Grecs*, and not *d'avantage de bonne foi*.

However, *d'avantage* may sometimes be used, as well as *plus*, in the middle of a sentence before *que*; as, you are in the wrong to reproach me with being hasty, I am not more so than you, *vous avez tort de me reprocher d'être vif, je ne le suis pas davantage*, or *je ne le suis pas plus que vous*.

Except from this observation, when *d'avantage* is followed by an adjective or substantive; in this case *plus* must always be used, as in the foregoing example, adding the adjective after *plus*; as, *je ne suis pas plus emporté que vous*, and not *je ne suis pas davantage emporté*; I have not more friends than you, *je n'ai pas plus d'amis que vous*.

Délices.

This word is sometimes used in the singular number; as, *c'est un délice*, it is a pleasure; *quel délice!* what a pleasure! But it is most commonly used in the plural; as, to taste the delights of life, *goûter les délices de la vie*.

N. B. This word is masculine, when it is used in the singular; and feminine when its used in the plural.

Demain au Matin.

We indifferently say, *demain au matin*, to-morrow-morning, or *demain matin*: this last is more commonly used; but we always say, *demain au soir*, to-morrow night, and not, *demain soir*. FRENCH ACADEMY.

Durant.

This preposition is sometimes indifferently put either before or after it's case; as, *durant deux mois*, or *deux mois durant*, during two months; during his life, *sa vie durant*. But we always say *durant le jour*, *durant la nuit*.

Eminent.

We indifferently say *un péril éminent* or *imminent*, an imminent peril; but we say *une ruine*, *une disgrâce imminente*, and not *éminente*, an imminent ruin, disgrace.

Enclin.

Enclin.

This word signifies inclined. It is used in morals, and rather speaking of something bad ; as, *il est enclin au jeu*, he is inclined to gaming.

Though we say *enclin*, yet we say *incliner*, *inclination*.

Ensuivre (s')

This verb is used only in the third person singular and plural ; as, *tout ce qui s'ensuit*, all that follows from thence ; *les accidents qui s'ensuivroient*, the accidents which would ensue.

In compound tenses the preposition *en* is always put before the auxiliary ; as, *ce qui s'en est ensuivi*, what ensued.

Evitable.

Some French authors have made use of that word, but it is very seldom used. However, we say, *inévitabile*, unavoidable.

We have in the French tongue several compounded words which are used, though their simple are not ; as, *inexorable*, inexorable ; *implacable*, implacable ; *irréconciliable*, irreconciliable ; *insatiable*, insatiable ; *indubitable*, unquestionable ; *ineffable*, ineffable ; *immanquable*, infallible, &c.

Excepté.

When this word comes before a noun, it is a preposition, consequently indeclinable ; as, *excepté ceux-là*, except those ; *excepté ma sœur*, except my sister. But, when it comes after the noun, it is a participle past, consequently declinable ; as, *ma sœur exceptée*, my sister excepted.

Fable.

When this word is used to signify the fabulous history of the gods and semi-gods, it has no plural ; as, *un poëte doit savoir la fable*, a poet ought to know the history of the gods and semi-gods ; *la fable est fort amusante*, mythology is very entertaining.

But,

But, if we say, in the plural, *les fables sont agréables & utiles*, the fables are pleasant and useful, we understand the fables of *Æsop*, *Phædrus*, *la Fontaine*, *Gay*, and other authors.

The word *fable* is sometimes used in a figurative sense; as, *le pauvre homme sert de fable & de risée à tout le monde*, the poor simpleton makes himself a common talk and a laughing-stock.

Fleurir.

This verb may be taken in a proper or figurative sense: in the first, it signifies to blossom; in the second, it signifies to flourish, to be in repute.

When it is used in it's proper sense it has no irregularity at all; but, when it is used in it's figurative sense, it has an irregularity in all the persons of the imperfect tense, and in the participle of the present; as, *une armée florissante*, a flourishing army; *Horace florissoit sous César*, Horace flourished in the time of Cæsar.

In the present tense we say *florissent*; as, *les arts & les sciences fleurissent dans notre siècle*, arts and sciences flourish now-a-days.

Fruit.

This word is never said of wine. Wine is not fruit, but the grape is fruit.

I make this observation, because *Chambaud* calls wine *fruit* in his Exercise-book: "Thessaly produces fine fruit, as wine," &c. He might have called bread fruit rather than wine, because we eat bread, which is applied to fruit, but we do not eat wine.

When *fruit* signifies a new-born child, or a child in his mother's womb; likewise, when it signifies dessert, last course; or profit, utility, advantage; it has no plural; as, a woman is obliged to take care of her child, *une femme est obligée d'avoir soin de son fruit*; bring the dessert, *apportez le fruit*; I got a great deal of pains, and little profit, *j'ai eu beaucoup de peine, & peu de fruit*.

It likewise signifies rent, revenue; in this sense it has no singular; as, the revenues of his benefice have been seized upon, *on a saisi les fruits de son bénéfice*.

Fumée.

Fumée.

This word, signifying smoke, has no plural; as, *la fumée des charbons de terre est malsaine*, the smoke of sea-coals is unwholesome. But, signifying fumes, vapours rising from the entrails to the brain, it has no singular; as, the vapours of wine fly up into his head, *les fumées du vin lui montent à la tête*, and not *la fumée du vin*, as some Frenchmen are wont to say. When it signifies the vapours rising from the earth, water, &c. it has a singular and plural. FRENCH ACADEMY.

Gagner.

Though we say *gagner une bataille*, to get victory in a battle, yet we do not say *gagner un combat*, to express the same thing. We may say *être victorieux dans un combat*.

Garde.

This word, joined with the verb *avoir* and *ne* before it, sometimes signifies not to have in mind, or the power of doing something, to be far from it; as, I am far from upbraiding you with that fault, *je n'ai garde de vous reprocher cette faute*; how can he walk, he has but one leg? *il n'a garde de marcher, il n'a qu'une jambe*.

N'avoir garde is likewise used in comparifons; as, he is not so learned as you, *il n'a garde d'être si savant que vous*. In this sense, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, it is used only in very familiar discourse.

Gens.

There is scarce another word to be met with liable to so many irregularities. See page 175, where notice is taken of some of them.

Gens is never said, as in English, of a determinate number of people, unless it be attended with an adjective; as, two honest people, *deux honnêtes gens*. However, we say, a thousand people believe it, *mille gens le croient*. In this case *mille* is taken for an indeterminate number, viz. a great many.

Gens

Gens sometimes signifies one's retinue; in this case it may be used with a determinate number; as, I see but four of my servants, where are the others? *je ne vois que quatre de mes gens, où sont les autres?*

Gens sometimes signifies people who are of the same party or club; in this sense it is likewise used with a determinate number; as, four of our club are come, *quatre de nos gens sont arrivés.*

Gens, in the sense of nation, is only used in this phrase; as, the law of nations, *le droit des gens.* It is still used in the same sense, in the singular number, in some pieces of poetry, such as fables; as, *la gent aquatique*, to express fishes, and whatever lives in water. *La Fontaine.*

Gigot.

According to the FRENCH ACADEMY we more commonly say *un gigot*, a leg of mutton, than *éclanche*; and we never say *un gigot de mouton*, as in *Boyer's Vocabulary.*

Glorifier.

We say very well *se glorifier de quelque chose*, to boast of something; but we do not say *se glorifier de quelqu'un.*

Neither do we say *glorifier quelqu'un*, to glorify somebody; however, we say *glorifier Dieu*, to glorify God.

Grâce.

When this word is alone with the verb *faire* and an article, it signifies favour, kindness; as, do me the favour, *faites-moi la grâce.*

When it is without an article, it signifies to forgive, to remit; as, the king has forgiven him, *le roi lui a fait grâce*; you owe me a hundred guineas, but I remit you the half; *vous me devez cent guinées, mais je vous fais grâce de la moitié.*

When *grâce* is used in the singular, with *de* before it, it signifies pray, or be so kind as; as, pray, tell me; *de grâce, dites-moi.*

Grâce, used in the singular, with the adjective *bonne*, signifies gracefulness; as, he salutes with gracefulness, *il salue de bonne grâce*; she has a good grace, *elle a bonne grâce.*

When,

When, in the same number, it is preceded by the adjective *mauvaise*, it signifies quite the contrary; as, admire his awkwardness, *admirez sa mauvaise grâce*. Sometimes, in this last sense, it only signifies what is contrary to decency, to reason; as, there is no reason to complain of me, *vous avez mauvaise grâce de vous plaindre de moi*.

When *grâces* is used in the plural, it signifies the graces, (three goddesses, who, according to the poets, were the companions of *Venus*;) 2dly, the beauties of a language; as, *les grâces de la langue Française*.

If, in the same number, the word *bonnes* is added to it, it signifies benevolence; as, he has got the benevolence of his master, *il a les bonnes grâces de son maître*.

F. Bouhours observes here, that, though we say *gagner les bonnes grâces de quelqu'un*, to get one's benevolence, yet we do not say, to express the contrary, either *gagner*, or *encourir les mauvaises grâces de quelqu'un*; custom, says he, allows the one, and not the other: in such a case we say *perdre les bonnes grâces de quelqu'un*, to lose one's benevolence.

Etre en grâces auprès du prince, ou de quelque personne puissante, signifies to be in favour with the king, or some powerful person.

Etre dans les bonnes grâces d'une dame signifies to be beloved by a lady.

J'ai été, je suis allé.

We make use of the first expression to signify, that we are, or were no more in the place we are speaking of; as, Madam went to the play to-day, *Madame a été à la comédie aujourd'hui*; but, when somebody is, or was still in the place we are speaking of, then we make use of the compound of *aller*; as, Madam is gone to the play, *Madame est allée à la comédie*.

Moreover, if some word denoting a motion be added to it, we make use of the compound of *aller*, though the person is no more in the place we are speaking of; as, he went to Paris in two days, *il est allé à Paris en deux jours*. We likewise say, in conversation, *j'aurais été*, or *je serois allé vous voir*, I would have gone to see you; *je suis*, or *j'allai hier à l'opéra*, I went yesterday to the opera.

FRENCH ACADEMY.

Il en agit mal.

This expression, which is used by many Frenchmen, is good for nothing. We do not put *en* with the verb *agir*. We say *en user bien ou mal avec quelqu'un*, to use one well or ill ; or *agir bien ou mal avec quelqu'un*, without *en* ; as, he uses me very well, *il en use fort bien avec moi*, or *il agit fort bien avec moi*.

Indécis.

This word, according to F. Bouhours, is only applied to things, and not to persons ; but, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, it is applied both to persons and things ; as, my brother is still undetermined, *mon frère est encore indécis* ; his law-suit is undecided, *son procès est indécis*.

Livres. Francs.

There are many irregularities in the use of these two words which signify the same thing.

We never say *franc* after *un*, whether it be alone or joined to another number ; as, *vingt-~~et~~-un francs*, we say *vingt-~~et~~-une livres*.

Neither do we say *deux francs*, *trois francs*, *cinq francs*, or *une livre*, *deux livres*, *trois livres*, *cinq livres* ; instead of them we say *vingt sous*, *quarante sous*, *cent sous* ; and, instead of *trois livres* we say *un écu*.

When the word *sou* is added to the foregoing words, we may make use of *livres* ; as, *une livre ~~et~~ un sou*, *deux livres ~~et~~ quatre sous*. But we must always say *trois livres ~~et~~ six sous*, *cinq livres ~~et~~ huit sous*.

However, we say *quatre francs*, *six francs*, *sept francs*, *huit francs*, &c.

We likewise say *il me doit cent francs*, he owes me a hundred livres. But, when the sum exceeds a hundred, we may indifferently use *francs* or *livres* ; as, *il me doit deux cents livres*.

We say, he has a pension of twenty thousand, of a hundred thousand livres ; *il a une pension de vingt mille, de cent mille livres de rente*. We say, on the contrary, his country-

334 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

country-house cost him twenty thousand livres, *sa maison de campagne lui coute vingt mille francs.*

Generally, when, after the mentioned sum, follow in French *rente, pension, or dette*, we make use of *livres*, and not of *francs*.

Main.

This word has many curious significations.

Donner la main à signifies to help one, or to give the right hand.

Donner les mains à une chose, to consent to a thing.

Avoir la main rompue à quelque chose, to be used or inured to any thing. However, this last expression is only used, when we speak of something done with the hand, such as writing, &c.

Tendre la main, to beg alms, also to lend an helping hand, to assist one; as, lend him your helping hand, *tendez-lui la main*. However, *donner or prêter la main à quelqu'un* is less equivocal.

Venir aux mains avec l'ennemi, to fight with the enemy.

Faire main basse sur l'ennemi, to put all to the sword.

Mettre la main sur quelqu'un, (le battre) to lay hands upon one, to beat him.

Tenir la main haute, to keep a strict hand over one, to treat him severely.

Prendre en main la cause de quelqu'un, to take one's part.

Prendre à toutes mains, to catch every way.

Donner la main à un cheval, to give a horse the bridle.

Donner de main en main, to hand about.

Mettre la main à la plume, to begin to write.

Mettre la main au chapeau, à l'épée; to put the hand to one's hat, in order to salute somebody; to put the hand to one's sword.

Mettre le chapeau à la main, to put off one's hat.

Mettre l'épée à la main, to draw a sword, also to fight with a sword.

Etre en main pour faire une chose, to be in a convenient situation, to make use of one's hand easily.

Lever la main, to take one's oath before a judge, to lay one's hand upon the Bible, to lift up one's hand.

Avoir les armes bien à la main, to be skilful in bodily exercises with the arms.

Faire

Faire crédit de la main à la bourse, to trust no farther than one can see.

Un coup de main signifies a bold action; in this sense it is joined to the verb *faire*. When it is joined to the verb *donner*, it signifies to put one's hand to something in order to help one, and is applied only to things; as, *donnez-y un coup de main*.

Un homme de main signifies a man who is fit for a bold and hazardous enterprise.

Des coups de main, handy blows.

A pleines mains, largely, plentifully.

Sous main, underhand, secretly.

Combat de main à main, a close fight.

Sous la main, under one's nose.

Cela est fait à la main, that is done with concert.

Maison.

Speaking of people of quality, or of gentlemen of an ancient and noble extraction, we say *maison*; as, he is of Montmorency's extraction, *il est de la maison de Montmorenci*. But, speaking of citizens and people of business, we make use of the word *famille*.

Sometimes we make use of the word *famille*, instead of *maison*, when some following word heightens it; as, the royal family, *la famille royale*.

Take notice, that, when we say *la famille royale*, we mean, by this expression, the king, the queen, their children, and grand-children. But, when we say *la maison royale*, we commonly mean the other princes and princesses of the blood.

La maison du roi signifies the king's household, servants, or troops.

Take notice again, that, though we say *la maison royale*, or *la maison du roi*, yet we never say *la famille du roi*.

Famille is used instead of *maison*, even speaking of ancient nobility, when we mention it with relation to medals; as, the consular medals are distinguished by the Roman families, *les médailles consulaires se distinguent par les familles Romaines*. It is for this reason, perhaps, that we say *la famille des Scipions*, *la famille des Césars*, &c. and not, *la maison des Scipions*, even when we do not speak of medals.

The

336 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

The word *famille* is likewise used, when we speak of one's nearest relations; as, he has fallen out with his relations, *il s'est brouillé avec sa famille*.

Maison and *famille* are sometimes used promiscuously, speaking of one's servants and household; as, she is a woman who takes care of her household, *c'est une femme qui a soin de sa maison* or *famille*. However, the first seems to be more extended, and have a nearer relation to the household goods.

We always say, *établir sa maison*, and *faire une bonne maison*, and not *famille*, to grow rich.

Métier.

This word is low in it's proper, and elegant in it's figurative sense. According to *Balzac*, painters are offended at this word, for we do not say *le métier d'un peintre*, the profession of a painter.

However, generals of the army boast of that calling; as, the profession of arms, the profession of war, *le métier des armes*, *le métier de la guerre*.

We likewise say, speaking of works, there are only people of that calling, who may be judges of it, *il n'y a que les gens du métier, qui en soient bons juges*.

In this sense, it must be used with the definite article, because *gens de métier* signifies quite another thing, *viz.* handicraft-men.

Mont.

This word is never used alone, except when we speak of the mountains which separate France from Italy; for we say *les Alpes*, or *les monts* only, after some prepositions, but very seldom; as, on this side the Alps, *en deçà des monts*.

In other circumstances we say *le mont Olimpe*, *le mont Liban*, *le mont Étna*, *le mont St. Godard*; but we say *la montagne du calvaire*.

Mort.

When somebody was killed in a battle, we never say *il est mort*, but *il a été tué*.

If

If he was not killed on the spot, we do not say *il a été tué*, but *il est mort*.

Though we do not say, of somebody who was killed on the spot, *il est mort*, yet we say *on l'a trouvé parmi les morts*, he was found among the killed.

Noms de Nations & de Langues.

There is, perhaps, nothing where variety of custom is more visible, than in the nouns of some nations and languages.

Arabe, Arabesque. The first is applied to men and women; as, *un Arabe, une femme Arabe*. The second is never applied to persons, but to the Arabian characters. Speaking of the language, we say *l'Arabe*, or *la langue Arabique*. We say *une figure Arabesque*, an Arabian figure.

Barbaris. We have no noun to express a man of Barbary, for *un Barbare* is always taken figuratively, and signifies a barbarous man. *Barbe* signifies a Barbarian horde. So we are obliged to say, speaking of people of Barbary, *les peuples de la Barbarie*.

Chaldéen, Chaldaïque. The first is said of the persons and their language; the second of their language only.

Dorien, Dorique; Ionien, Ionique. The first is applied only to persons, as, *les Dorienis, les Ioniens; une Dorienne, une Ionienne*. The second is applied to the language. Speaking of architecture, we say *ordre Dorique, ordre Ionique*.

Hébreu, Hébraïque. We say, speaking of the people, *un Hébreu, les Hébreux*. This word is not used in the feminine gender; thus we must say *la femme d'un Hébreu, la fille d'un Hébreu, les femmes & les filles des Hébreux*. Speaking of the language, we say *l'Hébreu*, or *la langue Hébraïque*. Speaking of manuscripts, we say only *des manuscrits Hébreux*; but, speaking of Hebrew characters, we say *des caractères Hébraïques*.

Juis, Judaïque. We say *un Juif, une Juive*, speaking of the modern Jews. We say *vivre à la Juive*, to live like Jews, with relation to their manners; and *vivre à la Judaïque*, with relation to their ceremonies.

338 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Moor, Moresque. We say *un Moor*, a Moor; *une Moresque*, a she Moor, and not *une Moor*; though we say *une femme Moor*. We say *le Moor*, speaking of the language. *Moresque* signifies a Moorish dance, also a Morisco-work in painting.

Perse, Persian, Persien, Persique. We commonly say *les Perses*, speaking of the ancient people of Persia; and *Persans*, speaking of the modern ones.

In the singular, we always say *un Persian*, and not *un Perse*. Printed cloth of Persia is called *de la Perse*, and not *Persienne*. The latter is applied to lattice windows.

However, when we speak of Persian stuff, we may say *une étoffe de Perse*, as we say *une étoffe de la Chine*. We say *la langue Persienne*, or *le Persien*, speaking of the ancient language; but we say *la langue Persane*, or *le Persian*, speaking of the modern language.

We always say, *à la Persienne*, to signify after the Persian way.

Persique is said of the gulph which separates Persia from Arabia; as, *le golphe Persique*. It likewise signifies an order in architecture.

Speaking of the ancient kings *Cyrus, Darius, &c.* we call them indifferently *roi de Perse*, or *roi des Perses*; but, now a-days, we say only *le roi de Perse*.

Syrien, Syriaque. The first is used speaking of the people, *un Syrien, une Syrienne*; the second, speaking of the language, *le Syriaque*, or *la langue Syriaque*.

Teuton, Teutonique, Tudesque. The first is said of the people and of the language; the second of the language, and when we speak of the order; as, *l'ordre Teutonique*, the Teutonic order. *Tudesque* is only used, speaking of the language of the ancient Germans.

These are the irregular nouns of nations and languages. The others are equally applied to the people and to their language; as, *les Ethiopiens, l'Ethiopien*; *les Moscovites, le Moscovite*; *les Grecs, le Grec*; *les Latins, le Latin*, &c.

Des Nombres cardinaux.

What belongs to the manner of counting them has been said already, see page 36. However, there are many other remarks to be made concerning these numbers.

It

It is to be observed that *vingt*, when it is multiplied by another preceding number, whether followed by a substantive or not, takes an *s* after the *t*; as, *quatre-vingts*, eighty; *quatre-vingts guinées*, eighty guineas; but the *s* is omitted, when it is followed by another cardinal number; as, *quatre-vingt-trois*, eighty-three.

To know in what cases the other numbers are either declinable or indeclinable, see page 38.

Instead of *septante*, seventy; *octante*, eighty; and *nonante*, ninety; we always say *soixante & dix*, *quatre-vingts*, *quatre-vingt-dix*. Except, when we speak of the interpreters of the Bible, we say *les septante*, though they were seventy-two. But, when we add *interprètes de la Bible*, we say *les soixante & douze interprètes de la Bible*.

Welikewise say *les septante semaines de Daniel*, the seventy weeks of the prophet Daniel. We may say *six-vingts*, one hundred and twenty; and sometimes *sept-vingts*, one hundred and forty; *huit-vingts*, one hundred and sixty; but we never say *deux-vingts*, forty; *trois-vingts*, sixty; *cinq-vingts*, a hundred; *dix-vingts*, two hundred. After *six-vingts* we say *cent vingt & un*, *cent vingt-deux*, &c.

After *mille* we say *onze cents*, *douze cents* ... to *deux mille*. Except, when we speak of the year of our Lord, we write *mil*, and not *mille*; after *mil* we say *l'an onze cent*, one thousand one hundred; *l'an mil deux cent*, one thousand two hundred; *l'an mil trois cents*, one thousand three hundred, &c. However, we say *douze cents hommes*, twelve hundred men; *treize cents hommes*, thirteen hundred men, &c.

When we speak of the place endowed at Paris by *Louis IX*, king of France, for three hundred blind, or when we speak of the blind themselves, we say *les quinze-vingts*, and not *les trois cents*.

Sometimes we make use of *couple* and *paires* instead of *deux*, but not indifferently: *couple* and *paires* are said of things of the same kind which may be separated; as, a couple of partridges, a couple of chickens, *une couple*, or *une paire de perdrix*, *une couple*, or *une pair de poulets*. *Couple* is never said of things which are considered as inseparable; as, a pair of gloves, a pair of ruffles, a pair of stockings, &c. *une pair de gans*, *une paire de manchettes*, *une pair de bas*, &c. and not *une couple de gans*, &c. *Couple* is like-

wife said of persons united together by love or marriage ; in this sense it is always of the masculine gender ; as, *beau couple, couple fidèle.*

We make use of the word *quarteron*, when we are speaking of things which are reckoned *per cent*. It signifies the fourth part of a hundred ; as, a quarter of a hundred pins, *un quarteron d'épingles*. This word is likewise said of things which are weighed ; it then signifies the fourth part of a pound ; as, a quarter of a pound of butter, *un quarteron de beurre*.

We make use of the word *quintal* to express a hundred weight ; it is only used when we are speaking of some merchandises which are weighed.

Millier is said of a thousand weight ; as, a thousand weight of iron, brass, &c. *un millier de fer, de cuivre, &c.*

When we speak of time, we say *huit jours*, or *une semaine*, eight days, or a week ; *quinze jours*, or *deux semaines*, fifteen days, or two weeks. However, we always say *trois semaines*, three weeks ; *un mois*, a month ; *cinq, six, sept semaines*, five, six, seven weeks ; *deux mois*, two months ; *neuf semaines*, two months and a week ; *deux mois & demi*, ten weeks ; *trois mois*, three months, and not *un quart d'an* ; *quatre, cinq, six mois*, four, five, six months, and so on to *un an*. Then we commonly reckon by months ; as, *treize mois, quatorze, quinze mois, &c.* to *deux ans* ; though we may say, this child is one year and one month, or eighteen months old, *cet enfant a un an & un mois, ou un an & demi*, in these two cases only.

We never say *il est douze heures*, it is twelve o'clock, but *il est midi, il est minuit*.

Des Nombres collectifs.

Numbers, which grammarians call collective, are *huitaine, neuvaine, dixaine, douzaine, quinzaine, vingtaine, trentaine, quarantaine, cinquante, soixantaine, centaine*.

Huitaine signifies eight days ; it is used in law ; *à la huitaine*, eight days hence.

Neuvaine signifies a nine days devotion ; it is now scarcely used in poetry, as it was formerly, to signify the nine mules.

Dixaine and *douzaine* signify a collection of ten and twelve ; as, *une dixaine ou une douzaine de pommes*, ten or twelve

twelve apples. *Douzaine* signifies a dozen, and *demi-douzaine*, half a dozen; but we never say *demi-buitaine*, *demi-dixaine*, to signify four or five.

Quinzaine, *vingtaine*, *trentaine*, &c. a collection of fifteen, twenty, thirty, &c.

Quarantaine is likewise said of the forty days which persons, coming from a place where the plague is, are obliged to spend, before they get into the town where they intend go.

There are some other collective numbers; as, *tercet*, *quatrain*, *sixain*, *buitain*, *dixain*, *quinzain*, *trentain*.

The five first are only used, speaking of some pieces of poetry. The first signifies a triplet, the second a stanza of four verses, the third a stanza of six verses, &c.

Quinzain and *trentain* are used at tennis. *Quinzain* is said when both players have fifteen, and *trentain* when they have thirty. In this sense they are indeclinable; as, they have both fifteen, *ils sont quinzain*.

Des Nombre ordinaux.

Ordinal numbers are *premier*, *second*, *troisième*, *quatrième*, *cinquième*, *sixième*, &c.

Though we do not say *unième* alone, it is, however, used after other numbers instead of *premier*; as, we do not say *vingt & premier*, twenty-first; *trente & premier*, &c. but we say *vingt & unième*, *trente & unième*.

Neither do we say *vingt & second*, *trente & second*; but we say *vingt-deuxième*, *trente-deuxième*.

Speaking of a sovereign, we make use of cardinal numbers; as, *Guillaume trois*, *George trois*, *Louis quinze*, and not *Guillaume troisième*, &c. as in *Boyer's Grammar*. However, for first and second, we make use of ordinal numbers; as, *George premier*, *Frederic second*. Speaking of the emperor *Charles*, we say *Charles-Quint*.

We commonly say *livre trois*, *chapitre quatre*, *article cinq*, *verset huit*, *nombre dix*, *paragraphe cinq*, *page soixante*; however, speaking regularly, we make use of the ordinal numbers in such cases; as, *livre troisième*, *chapitre quatrième*, &c.

When two uncertain numbers follow one another, the first is a cardinal, the second an ordinal number; as, this is in the third or fourth chapter, *cela est dans le*

trois ou quatrième chapitre; he is the seventh or the eighth earl in the kingdom, *il est le sept ou le huitième comte du royaume*. Except *premier* & *second*, which are always to be used in such cases.

When *quatrième, cinquième, sixième, &c.* are preceded by the indefinite article *un*, they signify the fourth, fifth, sixth, &c. part of a thing; but, when they are preceded by the definite article *la*, we join the word *partie* to the noun of number; as, *la quatrième, cinquième, sixième partie*.

When we ask for the day of the month we commonly say *le quantième avons-nous du mois?* or, *quel jour avons-nous du mois?* We likewise say *le quantième êtes-vous de votre classe?* what place have you got in your school? When we speak of the day of the month, we indifferently make use of the ordinal or cardinal numbers; as, it is the fourth of the month, *c'est le quatre, or quatrième, du mois*.

Des Noms propres.

It would be too tedious, and to no purpose, to relate all the proper names which suffer an alteration in French.

Vaugelas, and particularly *Ménage*, have made a complete list of them. They who are desirous to know such irregularities may consult these two authors. I will lay down here some general rules concerning this matter.

1st. Proper names of kingdoms, empires, provinces, &c. commonly take the French appellation; thus, England is called *l'Angleterre*; Wales, *la province de Galles*; Ireland, *l'Irlande*; Scotland, *l'Ecosse*.

2dly. Proper names of cities and towns have commonly no variation, though sometimes pronounced in a different manner; as, Bristol, &c. Except a few of the most renowned places; as, London, *Londres*.

Neither are foreign proper names of men ever subject to any alteration over the whole world: thus, Master White, in English, is *Monsieur White* in French; Master Black is *Monsieur Black*, &c. and not *Monsieur le Blanc*, *Monsieur le Noir*, &c. as *Chambraud* has translated them in his Exercise-book. What odd absurdities would not ensue from a contrary practice?

These observations are only upon ancient Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and Gothic proper names that occur in history, because the foregoing never change.

3dly. Such foreign names as are much celebrated are commonly adapted to the genius of the French language; as, *Homère, Pindare, Virgile, Horace, &c.*

4thly. A composed noun does not commonly change it's termination; as, *Petronius Præscus; Marcus Varro, &c.* But, if one or other of these two nouns is much celebrated, it commonly follows the genius of the French tongue; as, *Julius Cæsar, Marc Antoine, Quinte Curce, &c.* If the noun be composed of three, it never changes it's termination; as, *Marcus Tullius Cicero; Cajus Julius Cæsar, &c.*

Nuage, Nuée, Nue.

These words, taken in a proper sense, signify the very same thing; but, when they are taken in a figurative sense, they are not used promiscuously; for we say to extol somebody to the skies, *élever quelqu'un jusqu'aux nues*, and not *nuages*; and we say, truth dissipates the clouds of errors, *la vérité dissipe les nuages de l'erreur*, and not *nues*; the clouds which darken the understanding, *les nuages qui obscurcissent l'entendement*; a cloud of dust, *un nuage de poussière*.

We say, figuratively, he has a mist before his eyes, *il a un nuage devant les yeux*, and not *nue*.

To wear out one's patience, to put him in a passion, *faire sauter quelqu'un aux nues*, and not *nuages*.

To be extremely surprised and astonished, *tomber des nues*, and not *nuage*.

We say, of somebody who is out of countenance, not knowing to whom he is to address himself in a company, *il semble tomber des nues*, and not *nuage*; and, of a man who is not known, or owned by any body, *il est tombé des nues*.

We likewise say, in a bad sense, of a man who, in his writings or discourse, soars in such a manner as to lose himself, and make others lose the main subject of his writings or subject, *il se perd dans les nues*, and not *nuages*.

We say, in a figurative sense, *une nuée se forme, la nuée crève*, and not *nuage*, nor *nue*, to express that an enterprize, a plot, a conspiracy, a punishment, or a war, &c. is ready and near breaking out.

We likewise make use of the word *nuée* to express a multitude of persons, birds, or animals, that are supposed

344. *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

to be in flocks ; as, there came a cloud of barbarians who laid waste all the country, *il vint une nuée de barbares qui désolèrent tout le pays* ; a multitude of witnesses, *une nuée de témoins*, and not *un nuage* nor *nue*.

Generally speaking, we make use of the word *nuage*, when we speak of what dims the sight, and hinders it from seeing objects distinctly. It is likewise used to express the doubts, the uncertainties, and ignorance of the mind.

Orthographe.

Though we say *l'orthographe*, the spelling, and not *orthographie* ; yet we say *orthographe*, to spell, and not *orthographe*. *Orthographie* is used in architecture and fortification.

Original.

This word used adjectively is said of something new, not done after a model ; as, an original picture, *un tableau original* ; that is not imitated, it is original, *cela n'est pas imité, cela est original*.

We likewise say *pensée originale*, a new thought, and which is not taken from any author.

When this word is used substantively, it is said of things which are the first in their kind, and are not copied after others ; such are master-pieces of art, ancient manuscripts, or letters written or signed by those who are the authors of them ; as, this picture is an original one, *ce tableau est un original* ; *l'original Hébreu*, *l'original d'une lettre*.

We likewise say, speaking, with mockery, of a ninny and ridiculous fellow, *c'est un original*.

This word is likewise used, in a good sense, speaking seriously ; as, it is after so great an original that Plato is become a philosopher, *c'est sur un si grand original, que Platon est devenu philosophe* ; Socrates is an original of wisdom, *Socrate est un original de sagesse*. In this sense it is always attended either by an adjective expressing the meaning of it, or by a case governed after it.

This word is likewise used, speaking of languages, of texts, or of writings ; as, *les langues originales*, *les textes originaux*, *les pièces originales*.

Original is sometimes applied to a person whose picture has been drawn; so, in seeing a picture, you may say, I like better the person than the copy, *j'aime mieux l'original que la copie*. We likewise say, I have that news at the first hand, *je sais cette nouvelle d'original*.

Part, Partie.

These two words, signifying a part, a share, a portion of a whole, have several odd constructions, and are not to be used indifferently the one for the other. We say *une partie d'un livre, une partie du corps humain*, a part of a book, a part of the human body; *une part d'enfant dans la succession*, a child's portion in the succession.

As these words are used several ways in a proper sense, it will not be amiss to set the most part down without the English annexed to them, as these words are easily understood when a learner comes so far as to learn this part.

We say *on a fait trois parts de tout le bien de la succession. Quand il y a tant d'héritiers, les parts sont petites. Voilà votre part, & voici la mienne, &c. Céder sa part. Prendre sa part. Il a eu tant pour sa part & portion. Donnez-moi ma part. Prendre sa part. Le plus fort fait la part au plus foible. Il en a eu tant à sa part, tant pour sa part. Entrer en part avec quelqu'un, être de part avec lui. S'il y a du profit, j'en aurai ma part, &c. and not partie.*

We say *partie d'un corps politique. Le tout est plus grand que sa partie. Les parties subtiles, grossières, homogènes, hétérogènes, &c. L'union des parties, l'arrangement des parties. Les quatre parties du monde. Ce prince perdit une partie de son royaume. Cette grammaire a quatre parties. Une partie de l'armée étoit encore campée, l'autre étoit en marche. Il n'avoit qu'une partie de ses troupes. Il avoit tant d'argent, mais il en a donné une partie. Il a vendu une partie de ses livres. Il a employé une partie de sa vie à cela, &c. and not part.*

We say indifferently *la plupart, la plus grande part, la plus grande partie*, to express the greatest number, the most part.

Besides the foregoing irregularities *part* and *partie* are used, both in a proper and figurative sense, in several other expressions; most part of them are to be met with in dictionaries.

Parti.

This word, joined to the verb *prendre*, has many significations.

Prendre parti signifies to turn soldier; in this sense it is commonly followed by the word *régiment*; as, *il a pris parti dans un tel régiment*. It likewise signifies to engage one's self into one's service; but then we express with whom; as, he has engaged himself in the service of my lord N, *il a pris parti avec monseigneur N*.

Prendre son parti signifies to resolve, to take one's last resolution; as, *j'ai pris mon parti*, I am resolved upon it. When it is used in this sense, it is followed by nothing else.

Prendre un parti likewise signifies to take a resolution, with this difference, that it requires always after it either an adjective, or a personal pronoun, to make complete sense; as, *il a pris un parti avantageux*, or *un parti qui est avantageux*, he took an advantageous resolution.

Prendre le parti signifies to take a resolution, to chuse, and is commonly followed either by a verb in the infinitive mood preceded by *de*, or by a relative pronoun; as, I chose to be silent, *j'ai pris le parti de me taire*.

When *prendre le parti* is followed by a noun in the second case, it signifies to defend, to protect; as, one ought to protect oppressed innocence, *il faut prendre le parti de l'innocence opprimée*.

Prendre le parti, followed by a noun in the second case, likewise signifies one's calling, profession, &c. thus we say *prendre le parti de l'église, le parti des armes, le parti de la robe*, to turn clergyman, officer, lawyer.

Passer.

This verb is liable to several irregularities. We say sometimes indifferently *passer* and *se passer*; as, *le temps passe*, or *le temps se passe*, time goes away; *la beauté passe*, or *la beauté se passe bien vite*, beauty fades very soon. In this sense it is conjugated in it's compound tenses by the auxiliary *être*; as, *le temps est passé*.

However, the one is sometimes better used than the other. When we speak of beauty in general, we say *la beauté*

beauté passe; but, when we speak of a handsome person whose beauty decays, we say better, *sa beauté se passe*.

We say better *des couleurs qui se passent*, than *des couleurs qui passent*, colours which fade.

When we speak of time, only to express the rapidity with which it flies away, and without mentioning in what manner we spend it, we say *le temps passe*; *les jours passent*; *les années passent*.

But, when we speak of time with relation to the use we make of it, we make use of *se passer*; as, a part of our life flies away in desiring the future, and the other part in lamenting the past; *une partie de notre vie passe à désirer l'avenir, & l'autre à regretter le passé*.

We do not say indifferently *il est passé*, and *il a passé*, he is gone by.

When *passer* has either a case governed, or relation to places or persons, we say *il a passé*, either in a proper or figurative sense; as, he passed this way, *il a passé par ici*; the troops have passed through Germany, *les troupes ont passé par l'Allemagne*.

Passer, in it's compound tenses, is conjugated by the help of the verb *avoir*, when it is used in a figurative sense, and has relation to something; as, after his second part he passed to his conclusion, *après son second point il a passé à sa conclusion*.

When *passer* has neither a case governed, nor relation, it is conjugated by the help of *être*; as, the troops have passed, *les troupes sont passées*.

These two following expressions, *a passé*, *est passé*, speaking of words or expressions used in a language, have quite a contrary signification; as, for example, *ce mot a passé*, signifies that this word did take, was received; whereas the other expression, *ce mot est passé*, signifies that this word is obsolete, and quite out of use.

Generally, the word *passer* is always conjugated in it's compound tenses with the verb *avoir*, when it is used actively.

Likewise, when it signifies to be reputed, accounted for, though, in this sense, it be not used actively; as, Cromwell was reputed the greatest politician of his age, *Cromwell a passé pour le plus grand politique de son siècle*.

Passionner.

This verb, in the sense of to humour, is scarcely used, but in music or declamation; as, this woman humours well the songs which she sings, *cette femme passionne fort bien tous les airs qu'elle chante.*

Passonné, used adjectively, is said both of persons and of things which have relation to persons; as, *un homme passionné*; *des sentimens passionnés*; *des expressions passionnées*; *un air passionné.*

When this word is said of things, it never has a case governed after it; as, *des sentimens passionnés*, &c. But, if it is said of persons, sometimes it has a case, sometimes not: when it has no case, it is commonly taken in a bad sense; as, *un homme passionné*, a man prepossessed with passion: when it has a case after it, it signifies fond of a thing, and then it has a good or bad sense according to it's case; as, *un homme passionné pour la volupté, pour la gloire, pour l'honneur*, &c. a man fond of voluptuousness, of glory, of honour.

Passonné does not govern it's following case, which is always a substantive in the second case; thus, we do not say he is greedy of glory, of spectacles, &c. *il est passionné de la gloire, des spectacles.* However, when it's case comes before it, which is always, in this case, a pronoun, it governs commonly the second case; as, this is the fruit of those spectacles of which you are so fond, *voilà le fruit de ces spectacles dont vous êtes si passionnés*; he loves nothing but glory, and is so fond of it, that he thinks on nothing else, *il n'aime que la gloire, & il en est si passionné, qui ne pense à autre chose.*

Personnage.

This word is only applied to men, and not to women; as, the greatest men of antiquity, *les plus grands personnages de l'antiquité*; he is one of the most illustrious men of this age, *c'est un des plus illustres personnages de ce siècle.*

We say, in a familiar discourse, laughing at somebody, *c'est un sot personnage, c'est un ridicule personnage*, he is a silly fellow, a ridiculous man.

When

When *personnage* is preceded by the definite article without some modifying word before or after it, it is commonly taken in a bad sense; as, I know the fellow, *je connois le personnage*.

Peinture, Portrait, Tableau.

These three words, when they are taken figuratively, have the same sense, and signify a description, a picture of some person or thing; but, when they are taken in a proper sense, they signify different things.

The first is said, 1st, of what is painted upon a wall, wainscot, &c. 2dly, of the art of painting; 3dly, of the colour in general which is made use of in painting.

The second is said of a picture which is drawn to represent any thing after life.

The third is said of any picture upon wood, cloth, brass, &c, presenting an history, landscape, building, hunting, storm, shipwreck, &c. even what is drawn out of fancy, or after a statue, bust, medal, &c. is called *tableau*, and not *portrait*; the last signifies always a picture drawn after the life.

Tableau is not always equally said of *portrait*, as *Chambaud* pretends: Who did ever call a miniature, or some small picture drawn after the life, *un tableau*? This last word implies something large.

Persuader.

When this verb signifies to convince, it commonly governs the first case of the person, and the second case of the thing; as, I have convinced him of this truth, *je l'ai persuadé de cette vérité*; he convinced me of the sincerity of his intentions, *il m'a persuadé de la sincérité de ses intentions*.

But, when this verb signifies to advise, it governs the third case of the person, and is always followed by a verb in the infinitive mood, preceded by the preposition *de*; as, I will advise him to go thither, *je lui persuaderai d'y aller*; I have put him upon study, or I have induced him to study, *je lui ai persuadé d'étudier*.

Perturbateur.

Perturbateur.

This word is not joined with all sorts of substantives. We say *un perturbateur du repos public, de l'état, de l'église*; a disturber of public repose, of the state, of the church; but we do not say *un perturbateur du peuple*, a disturber of the people.

Likewise we say *troubler le repos public, l'ordre, l'état, l'église, un royaume*, to disturb public repose, order, the state, the church, a kingdom; but we do not say *troubler le peuple, un état, une province*, to disturb the people, a state, a province; though we say *exciter des troubles parmi le peuple*, to disturb the people, to excite disturbances among them; *exciter des troubles dans un état, dans une province, &c.*

According to the FRENCH ACADEMY *perturbateur* is scarcely used but in this phrase, *perturbateur du repos public*.

Piquant.

This word is used in a good and bad sense, but quite different; as, *il m'a dit quelque chose de fort piquant*, he told me something very choking, satirical; *c'est une beauté piquante, elle a l'air piquant*, she is a lively beauty, she has a lively air. We say, in the same sense, there is something lively in whatever he writes, *il y a quelque chose de piquant dans tout ce qu'il écrit*.

Piquer (se).

This verb signifies, 1st, to be offended, to be angry at; as, he is offended at the least thing, *il se pique de la moindre chose*.

2dly, It signifies to pretend to, to set up for; as, a truly learned man knows every thing, and pretends to nothing, *un homme véritablement savant sait tout, & ne se pique de rien*; he pretends to write and speak well, *il se pique de bien écrire & de bien parler*.

We say, of a man who made, on some occasion, his generosity appear in emulation of another, *il s'est piqué d'honneur*. This verb, in the three foregoing cases, is always followed by the preposition *de*. *Plaisant.*

Plaisant.

This word used adjectively, and, being put before the substantive, is taken in a good or bad sense, according to the tone of the voice; as, *c'est un fort plaisant homme*, he is a very agreeable man; *vraiment, c'est un plaisant homme*, truly, he is an impertinent, a ridiculous fellow.

When it is in the superlative degree, it is commonly taken in a good sense; as, he is the most pleasant man in the world, *c'est l'homme le plus plaisant du monde*.

When *plaisant* comes after it's substantive, it is always taken in a good sense; as, *c'est un homme plaisant*.

When this word is used substantively, it is commonly taken in a bad sense; as, *il veut faire le plaisant*, he affects to be pleasant.

Politeffe.

This word is used in a figurative sense only; for we say the politeness of the court, *la politesse de la cour*; and we do not say *la politesse des perles, la politesse du marbre*, though we say *du marbre poli*, polished marble.

Hence it appears that *Boyer* is in the wrong in his Dictionary, where he writes *politeffe*, politeness, neatness.

What we have said of the word *politeffe* may be applied to many other substantives which are only used in a figurative sense, though the adjective from which they are derived be used both in a proper and figurative sense; such are, among others, *tendresse, droiture*. Though we say *du pain tendre* new bread, and *colonne droite*, a straight column; yet we do not say *la tendresse du pain, la droiture d'une colonne*.

Potier.

Though we say *un potier d'étain*, a pewterer; yet we do not say *un potier de terre*, a potter, as many French people are wont to say. We say *un potier* only.

The same is to be said of *tailleur*; though we say *un tailleur de pierres*, a stone-cutter; yet we do not say *un tailleur d' habits*, a tailor. We say *un tailleur* only.

Précis.

Précis.

When this word is used adjectively, it signifies precise, fixed; as, a fixed time, *temps précis*; a fixed day, *jours précis*; a fixed hour, *heure précise*.

We say, of a man who is concise and exact in his discourses, *il est fort précis dans ses discours*; what you say there is very plain, *ce que vous dites là est fort précis*.

But, when it is used substantively, it signifies the substance, the summary, of what is the main, the chief, the most important thing in an affair, science, book, &c. as, there is the whole substance of this book, *voilà tout le précis de ce livre*.

Propre.

When this word signifies fit, good, apt, it is followed either by the preposition *à*, or *pour*; as, a man fit to war, *un homme propre à la guerre*, or *pour la guerre*; an herb fit to heal wounds, *une herbe propre à guérir des playes*, or *pour guérir des playes*.

However, when it is followed by an active verb having a passive signification, it is always followed by *à*; as, a truth fit to be preached, *une vérité propre à prêcher*; fruit good to be pickled, *du fruit propre à confire*, or *à être confit*.

When *propre* is taken substantively, it signifies a particular quality which distinguishes a thing from all others; as, the property of birds is to fly, *le propre des oiseaux c'est de voler*.

Raillerie.

When this word is used with the verb *entendre*, and without an article; as, *entendre raillerie*; it signifies to give a good interpretation to a raillery, not to be offended at any thing.

When it is used with the same verb *entendre*, and with the definite article; as, *entendre la raillerie*; it signifies to be acquainted with the art of jeering; as, *il entend la raillerie*.

We sometimes say *raillerie à part*, seriously, in earnest.
Recherche.

Recherche.

This word is not equally applied to all things; for we do not say *faire la recherche d'une chose perdue, d'une chose égarée*, to inquire after a thing which is lost or strayed; though we say *faire la recherche de la vie de quelqu'un*, to make an inquiry after the life and actions of somebody; *faire la recherche d'une fille*, to express the pursuit one makes to marry a girl, to court her. In this sense we likewise say, *rechercher une fille en mariage*, or only *la rechercher*.

We do not say, in a proper sense, the seeking after the treasures which the sea incloses in it's depth, *la recherche des trésors que la mer renferme dans ses abîmes*. However, we say, in a figurative sense, *la recherche des biens de la terre & des trésors*, the pursuit after wealth and treasures.

We likewise say *les recherches de l'antiquité*, the inquiries after antiquity; *il faut toujours travailler à la recherche de la vérité*, we must always be busy about the inquiry after truth.

It likewise signifies a thing curiously inquired after; as, this book is full of curious inquiries, *ce livre est plein de recherches curieuses*.

Though we do not say, of a thing lost or strayed, *faire la recherche*; yet we may make use of *rechercher*, to seek again, to look for a second time; as, you did not seek well every-where, you must seek again, *vous n'avez pas bien cherché par tout, il faut rechercher*.

Réglé. Régulier.

These two words have many odd constructions. They are both said of persons and things, but with different significations.

We say a man regular in his study and conduct, *un homme réglé dans ses études, & dans sa conduite*.

We likewise say *des mœurs réglées*, good manners; *une vie réglée*, a pure and innocent life; *une horloge bien réglée*, a clock that goes very right; *un repas réglé*, a repast not too expensive; *des heures réglées*, stated hours; &c.

We say *une femme très-pieuse & très-régulière*; *sa conduite a toujours été fort régulière*, to express that a woman is very pious and regular in her conduct. We do not say, in this sense,

354 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

sense, *c'est une femme réglée* ; this word has quite a different meaning ; however we say *c'est un homme réglé*, he is a sober man.

We say *régulier* of things which are done in an uniform and regular manner, particularly of those which are done according to the rules of art. Thus we say *une procédure régulière*, a regular proceeding ; *une beauté régulière*, a regular beauty ; *un mouvement régulier*, a regular and uniform motion ; *verbes réguliers* ; *bâtiment régulier*, *les mouvements réguliers des corps célestes*, &c.

Dérégulé is the contrary of *régulé* ; it is applied, 1st, to matters of morality ; as, *un homme déréglé*, a disordered man ; *des mœurs déréglées*, *une vie déréglée*, disorderly manners, or life : 2dly, to things which are not according to the ordinary course of nature and art ; thus we say *un temps déréglé*, *avoir le pouls déréglé*, *une horloge déréglée*, *une montre déréglée*.

Irrégulier is the contrary of *régulier*. It is scarcely applied to persons, but in ecclesiastical matters. It signifies an irregular man, one who, by reason of some misdemeanor, some natural defect*, or some ecclesiastical law, cannot be admitted into orders, or officiate, if he be in orders.

However, *irrégulier* is frequently used, speaking of things ; as, *une procédure irrégulière*, *un bâtiment irrégulier*, *un discours irrégulier*, *des manières irrégulières*, *fortification irrégulière*, *poème irrégulier*, &c.

According to the FRENCH ACADEMY we may likewise say *un esprit irrégulier*, a wit out of order.

Rencontre.

This word, according to the FRENCH ACADEMY, is always feminine, in whatever sense it may be taken.

* I add *some natural defect*, because we read, in *Boyer's Dictionary*, that "an irregular man is one who, by reason of some misdemeanor, cannot be admitted into orders, &c." he did not remember that there are two sorts of irregularities ; the one grounded on some misdemeanor, the other on some natural defect, as blindness &c. which is no misdemeanor. Both causes which render a man irregular are called, in the canon law, *irregularitas ex delicto*, and *irregularitas ex defectu*.

Hence

Hence it follows that *Bayer's* Dictionary wants to be corrected. See the word *rencontre*, where he makes it masculine, and gives this example, *dans ce rencontre d'affaires*, in this juncture of affairs, read *dans cette rencontre*.

Rendre.

Rendre justice à quelqu'un signifies to do one justice, to give him his due. *Rendre la justice* signifies to exercise or to administer justice.

This verb is never followed by a participle passive; as, these are the means to make you known, *c'est le moyen de vous rendre connu*: we must say *de vous faire connoître*.

Some French authors have put a participle after this verb; as, for example, one of them says *la vertu rend chéri de Dieu*, virtue makes you beloved by God.

Such expressions are very vicious. The verb *rendre*, in that sense, is only to be joined with pure adjectives, as, *bon, aimable, illustre, ridicule, odieux, célèbre*, &c. or substantives.

Neither do we say, with a French author, *rendre la guérison*, to heal one; because people had no healing, before they were sick; and we make use, in this sense, of the verb *rendre*, only speaking of things which were lost, and of which we were deprived.

Hence it follows that we may say *rendre la santé*, to restore one to his health; *rendre la vie*, to restore one to his life; because we enjoy health, and life before we are deprived of both. We say *rendre la vue, les forces, la liberté, la parole, l'appétit*.

Rêver, songer.

These two verbs signify to dream. The FRENCH ACADEMY say, in the same sense, *faire un songe, faire des songes*; but not *faire un rêve, faire des rêves*.

These two verbs are sometimes used actively in this case; they both govern the first case of the noun; as, *j'ai songé, or rêvé telle chose; qu'avez-vous songé, or rêvé cette nuit*.

When they are used in a neuter sense, they are either followed by the conjunction *que* or the preposition *de*; as, *j'ai rêvé, or j'ai songé que je voyois, &c. rêver de combats,*

de naufrages, &c. songer d'eau bourbeuse, de fêtes, de chasse, &c. The FRENCH ACADEMY say that the latter is used in a familiar style, and write *cet homme ne songe que chasse, que combats, que bals, que fêtes, que réjouissances.*

Songer sometimes signifies to think, to mind; in this sense, it is followed either by the conjunction *que*, or it governs a third case; as, mind your business, *songez à vos affaires*; you do not think on it, *vous n'y songez pas*; he thinks on the means to succeed, *il songe aux moyens de réussir*; think that your honour is at stake, *songez qu'il y va de votre honneur.*

Rêver sometimes signifies to think on a thing, to consider it with deep attention; as, that business is of great consequence, you must think on it, *cette affaire-là est de grande conséquence, il y faut rêver*; I thought on this affair a long time, *j'ai rêvé long-temps à cette affaire*; in this last example we likewise say *sur cette affaire.*

Richesse.

This word, used, in the singular, signifies sometimes opulence, riches; as, commerce makes all the riches of that country, *le commerce fait toute la richesse de ce pays-là.* Sometimes it signifies, in poetry, the exactness and justness of the rhymes; as, the exactness of rhyme contributes a great deal to the beauty of poetry, *la richesse de la rime contribue beaucoup à la beauté de la poésie.*

Sometimes it signifies the copiousness of a language; as, the copiousness of the English language, *la richesse de la langue Angloise.*

Richesses, in the plural, and in a proper sense, always signifies great riches.

Satisfaire.

This verb governs sometimes the first case, and sometimes the third. There are some cases where it governs the first case, and not the third; as, all the wealth of the world is not able to satisfy the human heart, *tous les biens du monde ne sont pas capables de satisfaire le cœur humain.*

We likewise say *satisfaire ses passions, sa colère, son ambition, sa vanité, sa curiosité, &c.* and not *satisfaire à ses passions, &c.* as in *Chambaud's Grammar*, to satisfy, to content one's passions, anger, ambition, &c.

There

There are some other cases where it governs the third and not the first case; as, *satisfaire à son devoir*, to discharge one's duty; *satisfaire à une obligation*, to acquit an obligation; *satisfaire aux personnes qu'on a offensées*, to make reparation to persons we have offended.

However, we say, in the first case, *satisfaire les personnes à qui on doit*, to pay people to whom we owe.

The general rule to know, when *satisfaire* governs a first or a third case, is, when it is used in the sense of to pay or content, it governs the first case; and, when it is used in the sense of to make reparation, or discharge a duty, it governs the third case.

Supplier.

Though this word be more respectful and submissive than *prier*, yet we do not say *supplier Dieu*, to beseech God; we say *prier Dieu*. However, speaking to God, we say, very well, *j'ai te supplie, ô mon Dieu! nous te supplions, ô Dieu de miséricorde!*

Such is the oddness of custom for the use of this word, that we do not dare to make use of the word *prier*, speaking to a king, or to persons of a much higher station than we; though we make use of it, speaking to God; for we do not say *prier le roi*, we say *supplier le roi*.

Tel.

Some are wont to say *j'aime tous les bons livres, tels qu'ils soient*; I like all good books, whatever they may be. Such an expression is wrong: we ought to say *quels qu'ils soient*. *Tels qui soient* signifies such as they are. Moreover, it governs the indicative, and not the subjunctive mood; consequently, it must be *tels qu'ils sont*.

Tête.

This expression, *avoir de la tête*, signifies two things quite different: speaking of a man, it is taken in a good sense, and signifies a man of sense and judgment; but, speaking of a woman, it signifies obstinate.

However, *être femme de tête* is taken in a good sense, and signifies to have sense and judgment.

Tenir

358 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

Tenir la tête à quelqu'un signifies to hold one's head; and *faire*, or *tenir tête à quelqu'un* signifies to withstand somebody, to oppose him, not to yield to him in something.

Vaillant. Valant.

These two words are subject to the caprice of custom. There are some cases where we make use of the first, and others where we make use of the second; as, for example, we say, *il a cent mille écus vaillant*, he is worth a hundred thousand crowns; *il a en meubles vaillant dix mille écus*, his personal estate is worth ten thousand crowns. And we say *je lui ai donné dix tableaux valant deux guinées la pièce*, and not *vaillant*, I have given him ten pictures worth two guineas apiece.

When it signifies what a man is worth, either in his real or personal estate, we make use of *vaillant*; but, when it implies what a thing is worth, we make use of *valant*. This reflexion may easily be applied to the foregoing examples.

Veiller.

Veiller une personne, to watch a person, has two different significations: it signifies to spend the night with a sick person to take care of him: it likewise signifies to watch, to observe one, to have a watchful eye upon him.

In this sense we likewise say *veiller sur une personne, sur les actions, sur la conduite de quelqu'un*.

Veiller governs sometimes the third case; it then signifies to take care, and is properly applied only to things; as, *je veillerai à vos affaires*, I will take care of your affairs.

Venger.

When this verb is applied to persons, it signifies to avenge or vindicate; as, *venger une personne*; but, when it is applied to things, it signifies to be revenged of something; as, *venger une injure*. However, in this sense, we, with more propriety, make use of the reflexive verb, *se venger d'une injure*.

Venir à bout.

When this verb is applied to things; as, *venir à bout d'une chose*, it signifies to bring a thing about, to succeed; as, *il est venu à bout de son dessein*. When

When it is applied to persons, it signifies sometimes to reclaim one; as, this child cannot be reclaimed, *on ne sauroit venir à bout de cet enfant.*

Sometimes it signifies to overcome one's enemies, to strike them home; as, *il viendra à bout de tous ses ennemis.*

Vent.

Though we say, with the article, *vent du nord*, north-wind; *vent du sud*, south-wind; yet we say, with the preposition *de* only *vent d'est*, east-wind; *vent d'ouest*, west-wind.

Ville.

We say, in familiar discourse, of somebody, *il est à la ville*, to express that he is not in the country; and *il est en ville*, that he is not at home, when we are speaking.

Vin.

We say *vin de Bourgogne*, *de Champagne*, *d'Espagne*, *de Portugal*, *de Piémont*, *de Moselle*, &c. and we say *vin du Nevre*, *vin du Rhin*, and not *vin de Rhin*.

Vouloir.

This word, which commonly signifies to be willing, to have a mind to, has several other significations: it signifies first, to command; as, the king commands you to obey, *le roi veut que vous obéissiez.*

Secondly, to desire, to wish; as, they will give you whatever you desire, *on vous donnera tout ce que vous voudrez.*

Thirdly, to consent, to agree; as, yes, I consent to it, *oui, je le veux bien*; if you agree to it, he will agree likewise, *si vous le voulez, il le voudra aussi.*

Fourthly, a necessity; as this affair must be conducted with prudence, *cette affaire veut être conduite avec prudence*; this picture must be seen in it's proper light, *ce tableau veut être vu dans son jour.*

When the word *bien*, preceded by the article, is added to it, it signifies to have an affection for somebody, to wish him well; as, *il vous veut du bien*. When the word *mal* is added to it, it signifies the contrary; as, *il vous veut du mal.*

360 *A Grammar of the French Tongue.*

We say *en vouloir à quelqu'un*, to express a desire of hurting somebody ; as, I know that he aims to hurt you, *je sais qu'il vous en veut*.

We say *à qui en voulez-vous ?* Whom do you ask, whom do you look for ? *À qui en veut-il ?* What ails him ? What does he complain of ?

Que veut dire cet homme signifies what means this man ? What does he ask for ? And, to shew a mere surprise, we sometimes say *que veut dire cela ?* What means that ? In the same manner, we say, of words or things which we do not understand, *que veut dire ce mot ? Que veut dire ce procédé ?*

N. B. To shew our desire or wish, we say, in the subjunctive mood, *jé voudrois*, I wish, instead of *je veux*.

Vue.

This word, besides it's various significations, which are to be met with in dictionaries, has several others. *Perdre une chose de vue* signifies to cease to see a thing ; as, *le vaisseau s'éloigna en peu de temps, Et nous le perdîmes de vue*. We likewise say, of an affair, *on l'a perdu de vue*, to express that we do not know what is become of it.

Avoir vue sur quelqu'un signifies, in a figurative sense, to have a right to observe somebody, in order to rule and conduct him ; and *avoir la vue sur quelqu'un* signifies to have a watchful eye upon somebody, to watch his conduct. We say *avoir des vues pour quelqu'un*, to have a design to procure somebody an advantage ; *avoir des vues sur quelqu'un*, to have a design to employ him to do something ; and *avoir des vues sur quelque chose*, to have a design to obtain a thing.

There are some other practical irregularities ; the most part of them have been taken notice of in the third part of this Grammar.

F I N I S.